

The Michael Jackson Allegations

A PDF version of the website

<https://themichaeljacksonallegations.com/>

Table of Contents

Foreword	3
 The 1993 Allegations	4
Key players.....	5
The Timeline	6
Michael Jackson’s first accuser – meet the Chandler family!.....	20
Evan Chandler’s “Suspensions”	26
Taped phone conversations between Evan Chandler and David Schwartz.....	36
How Did The Allegations of the Chandlers Emerge?	79
The Use of Sodium Amytal?	84
The Chandlers’ Monetary Demands	87
The Chandler Allegations.....	95
The Prosecution’s Hunt For Other Victims.....	104
The Prosecution’s Witnesses	107
Did Jordan Chandler’s description of Michael Jackson’s penis match the photographs taken of the star’s genitalia by the police?	118
The Settlement.....	129
Evan Chandler’s 1996 lawsuit against Michael Jackson.....	137
Ray Chandler’s Subpoena in 2004	143
Jason Francia	149
Victor Gutierrez and his role in the allegations against Michael Jackson.....	157
The Media’s Role In The Allegations Against Michael Jackson	168
 The 2005 Allegations	177
Key players.....	178
The Timeline	179
An introduction of the Arvizo family and how their relationship with Michael Jackson started	183
Martin Bashir’s documentary, “Living with Michael Jackson”	191
The fallout resulting from the Bashir documentary and damage control by Jackson’s PR team	194
The crucial period: February 7-March 12, 2003	195
The Conspiracy Charge	199
The Changing Content of the Allegations and Contradictions.....	207
General credibility problems with the Arvizo family	230
Lawyers being hired and the formation of the allegations	252
 Frequently Asked Questions (FAQ).....	260
Has child pornography ever been found in Michael Jackson’s possession?	261
Is it true that the FBI had evidence of Michael Jackson paying “hush money” to dozens of young boys?.....	304
What about Jackson’s sharing his bedroom with unrelated children?	321
Grooming or a Generous Heart?	327
Did Michael Jackson get off due to “celebrity justice”?	346
“How does it feel when you're alone and you're cold inside?”	349

Foreword

This document, or e-Book, if you like, evolved from the content of the website <https://themichaeljacksonallegations.com>. The aim and mission of the document is to give a full representation of the 1993 and 2005 child sexual abuse allegations against Michael Jackson. I felt it was much needed because there is still a lot of misinformation circulating about these cases and people often make judgements about them based on out of context cherry-picked half truths, incomplete information or even complete lies.

Accordingly, the document consists of three main sections. [The 1993 Allegations](#) section, [The 2005 Allegations](#) section and a [Frequently Asked Questions](#) section that deals with questions that are not specifically in the realm of either the 1993 or the 2005 allegations but generally are related to the molestation allegations against Michael Jackson. (A separate PDF document about the posthumous [Wade Robson allegations can be downloaded here](#).)

If you truly want to understand these allegations you will have to invest a bit of time in reading. There is no real understanding of these cases in five minutes from media soundbites, out-of-context bits of information, inflammatory tabloid articles or Internet gossip, no matter how tempting it may be to jump to conclusions based on such.

This document was created with the purpose of commentary, news reporting, education and research. It is not sold commercially, I do not have any income from it, I do not make any profit of it. My first language is not English, so please be lenient about grammatical or stylistic errors. Hopefully that will not spoil the content.

September 1, 2018

The 1993 Allegations

Key players

Michael Jackson – The accused.

Jordan Chandler – The accuser.

Evan Chandler – The accuser's father.

June Chandler – The accuser's mother.

David Schwartz – June Chandler's second husband. The accuser's step-father.

Ray Chandler – Evan Chandler's younger brother. He published a book about the allegations in 2004, entitled *All That Glitters: The Crime and the Cover-Up*. Since the Chandlers never appeared in Court to testify about their allegations I use this book in this paper to represent the Chandlers' story.

Barry K. Rothman – Evan Chandler's first attorney during the case.

Larry Feldman – The civil attorney the Chandlers hired after Rothman stepped back from the case. (In fact, before hiring Feldman they shortly hired Gloria Allred, but they fired her again only after a couple of days.)

Thomas Sneddon – Santa Barbara District Attorney.

Gil Garcetti – Los Angeles District Attorney.

Bertram Fields – Michael Jackson's first attorney during the case.

Anthony Pellicano – A private investigator working for Bertram Fields. In 2002 in a case completely unrelated to Jackson Pellicano was jailed for illegal wiretapping and the possession of illegal weapons. This does not affect our arguments here with regards to the child molestation allegations against Michael Jackson, because most of the things I say about Pellicano or the events he was involved in are either taken from the Chandlers' own accounts or are supported by evidence.

Howard Weitzman - Attorney for Michael Jackson.

Johnnie Cochran - Attorney for Michael Jackson.

Victor Gutierrez – Freelance journalist.

Michael Freeman – Attorney for June Chandler.

The Timeline

On August 17, 1993 the Los Angeles police department opened an investigation against Michael Jackson based on an allegation that he had sexually molested a 13-year-old boy called Jordan Chandler. In this section of the paper I will discuss the Chandler case in-depth. I will first present a timeline which hopefully will make it easier to follow the events as they unfolded and to put them into a context.

While you go along with the timeline you will find links to longer articles. These articles make up the chapters of our paper. You may opt to read the timeline first then go to the articles, like when you read a book, or you can click on the links in the timeline which will take you right to the relevant article, like on a website. These articles explain the events listed in the timeline in-depth and they are essential for understanding the Chandler allegations against Michael Jackson. In the timeline one article may be cited several times if it is deemed relevant to several events. The sources are listed at the end of each article.

May 1992 – Michael Jackson meets his later accuser **Jordan Chandler** and his family at a car rental agency owned by the boy's stepfather **David Schwartz**, after the singer's car breaks down on Wilshire Boulevard, Los Angeles. Schwartz offers Jackson a deal: he would rent him a car for free if Jackson promises to call Jordan who was a big fan of the star. Jackson accepts the deal and calls Jordan a couple of days later. He and the boy's family become friends.

For details about this encounter and an introduction to the Chandler family see: [**Michael Jackson's first accuser – meet the Chandler family!**](#)

May 1992-January 1993 – Jackson keeps a telephone contact with Jordan and the boy's mother **June Chandler**. According to the Chandlers' recollections, Jackson called them about 8-10 times during this period, so approximately once a month. According to June Chandler, she was present throughout all of the phone calls.

February 1993 – Jordan Chandler, his mother and his younger sister visit Neverland for the first time.

March 1993 – June and Jordan Chandler again visit the ranch in March. According to June, on several occasions Jordan asked her if he could sleep in Michael Jackson's bedroom, because all the other kids were there. She did not allow him, but Jordan did play up in Jackson's room until 2:00 am before returning to his guest room.

March 28-April 1993 – Jackson invites June, Jordan and Jordan's sister to Las Vegas where they stay at the Mirage Hotel. From then on the family frequently visits Neverland, Jackson's Century City condo and goes with him on trips in and outside of the USA. The Chandlers claim Jordan and Jackson began sharing a bedroom at this Las Vegas trip, although they do not claim any abuse right away.

April 2-7, 1993 - The Chandlers spend 5 days at Neverland.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

April 1993 - May 1993 – According to June Chandler’s 2005 testimony, during this period Jackson stayed over at her house a number of times and slept in her son’s room.

May 9, 1993 – Jackson, June, Jordan and Jordan’s sister go to Monaco where Jackson is awarded at the World Music Awards on May 12, 1993. The family attends the ceremony with Jackson.

May 13, 1993 – Jackson and the Chandlers fly to Paris where they spend three days at Eurodisney.

May 16, 1993 – Jackson and the Chandlers fly back to Los Angeles.

May 20, 1993 – Michael Jackson first meets Jordan’s biological father ***Evan Chandler*** at June Chandler’s house.

May 21, 1993 – Jackson invites Evan Chandler to his Century City (Los Angeles) condo.

May 22-23, 1993 – Evan Chandler invites Jackson to spend the weekend in his house with Jordan and Evan’s side of the family.

May 25, 1993 – The National Enquirer publishes a story about the Chandlers and Jackson entitled “*Michael Jackson’s Secret Family*”. The story was sold by someone from the Chandler side. Evan’s brother, ***Ray Chandler*** claims in his book, *All That Glitter* (published in 2004), that the sister of June’s closest friend sold the story to the tabloid.

May 28-30, 1993 – Jackson spends Memorial Day Weekend at Evan Chandler’s house with Evan’s side of the family and Jordan. In Ray Chandler’s book it is claimed that by this time Evan started to have “suspicions” that Jackson sexually molested Jordan.

For details about how these “suspicions” emerged, and also details about some of the above mentioned events, please read the chapter **[Evan Chandler’s “Suspicions”](#)**!

June 9, 1993 – According to Ray Chandler’s book, Evan Chandler shares his concern with June that Jordan might be gay. June says she would not care if that was the case, which Evan interprets in a peculiar way: “*In his mind, June was admitting their son might be gay and having sex with Michael, and that it was no big deal.*” [All That Glitters; page 55]

June 13, 1993 – According to Ray Chandler’s book, Evan reveals his alleged concerns about the relationship between his son and Jackson to a lawyer ***Barry K. Rothman***, who was a patient of his (Evan was a dentist). According to the book, in exchange of his dental treatment Rothman offers to help him “to end the relationship” by either filing a restraining order against Jackson or a custody lawsuit against June. It has to be noted that in 1992 Rothman represented a client in a custody battle who accused her estranged companion of molesting their child, which the man denied. When Rothman was fired by the woman he went on to represent the man’s company without notifying his former client. For this Rothman was disciplined by the state’s bar.

In a taped phone conversation between Evan and David Schwartz on July 8, 1993, the reasons given as to why Evan hired Rothman and how he hired him are different: “*this attorney I found – I mean, I interviewed several, and I picked the nastiest son of a bitch I*

The Michael Jackson Allegations

could find, and all he wants to do is get this out in the public as fast as he can, as big as he can and humiliate as many people as he can”, says Evan on the tape which will be discussed in detail later in this paper.

June 20, 1993 – Jordan Chandler, despite demands from Evan, refuses to call his father on Father’s Day. [Details in the chapter entitled **Evan Chandler’s “Suspensions”**]

July 7, 1993 – Because his son has repeatedly refuses to return his phone calls Evan Chandler leaves a threatening message on June Chandler’s answering machine. [Details in the chapter entitled **Evan Chandler’s “Suspensions”**].

July 8, 1993 – Jordan’s stepfather David Schwartz tapes three telephone conversations he had with Evan Chandler in which Chandler threatens to “destroy” Jackson with the help of a plot he carefully prepared and with people who are only waiting for his phone call to set everything in motion if the star refuses to communicate with him and refuses to give him what he wants.

For details see the chapter entitled **Taped phone conversations between Evan Chandler and David Schwartz**].

July 9, 1993 – Dave Schwartz and June Chandler plays the tape that Schwartz made of his phone conversations with Evan Chandler to Anthony Pellicano, a private investigator working for Jackson’s lawyer Bertram Fields. Pellicano meets with Jordan in Jackson’s Century City condo the same day. Without Jackson being present he asks the boy very specific questions about whether he has ever been molested or inappropriately touched by the entertainer. The boy’s answer to each and every question is that nothing inappropriate has ever been done to him by Jackson. According to Pellicano, Jordan also said his father only wanted money.

July 11, 1993 – Jordan is sent to his father for a one-week visitation but at the end of the week Evan Chandler refuses to return the boy to his mother.

July 12, 1993 – Evan Chandler has his ex-wife June sign a document prepared by his lawyer Barry Rothman that prevents her from taking Jordan out of Los Angeles County and letting Jordan meet Michael Jackson. In the document June also agrees to remit the money (\$68,804) that Evan owed her in back child support. June later said she signed the document under duress since Evan threatened that he would never let her see Jordan again if she would not sign it.

July 14, 1993 – Evan Chandler and his lawyer Barry Rothman contact Dr. Mathis Abrams a Beverly Hills psychiatrist and present him with a hypothetical situation about child molestation. In reply, without having met either the child or the accused, just based on Evan’s words, Abrams sent Rothman a two-page letter in which he stated that *“reasonable suspicion would exist that sexual abuse may have occurred”*. Evan later used this letter as a “negotiation” tool with his ex-wife June and with Michael Jackson. Details in the chapter entitled **How Did The Allegations of the Chandlers Emerge?**

July 16, 1993 – According to Ray Chandler’s version of the events, Jordan “confesses” to his father about his alleged sexual molestation – just one day before Evan was scheduled to

The Michael Jackson Allegations

return Jordan to June. The circumstances of this alleged “confession” are very problematic. For details see the chapter entitled [How Did The Allegations of the Chandlers Emerge?](#)

According to some sources, the boy was administered the controversial drug Sodium Amytal which can make the human mind suggestible. I doubt this claim for reasons detailed in the chapter entitled [The Use of Sodium Amytal?](#), but whether he was or was not administered the drug is not really pivotal to the case.

July 20, 1993 – June Chandler and David Schwartz meet Evan’s attorney Barry Rothman in latter’s office. During that meeting Dr. Mathis Abrams’ letter is shown to them and it is demanded that they sign a document that would transfer custody of Jordan from June to Evan.

July 27, 1993 – According to a book written by a legal secretary of Barry Rothman, Geraldine Hughes (*Redemption: The Truth Behind the Michael Jackson Child Molestation Allegations*), Rothman writes a letter to Evan Chandler advising him how to report child abuse without liability to the parent.

August 4, 1993 – A meeting takes place between Michael Jackson, private investigator Anthony Pellicano, Evan Chandler and Jordan Chandler in a suite at the Westwood Marquis Hotel. Later that day Evan Chandler and Barry Rothman meet Pellicano in Rothman’s office where they make a demand for \$20 million to not to turn to authorities and not to go public with allegations of child sexual abuse against the entertainer.

For details see: [The Chandlers’ Monetary Demands](#).

August 16, 1993 – June Chandler’s attorney Michael Freeman calls Barry Rothman and informs him that they would appear in Court the next day to obtain an Ex Parte order demanding the immediate return of Jordan to his mother. The Court then orders Evan Chandler to return the boy to his mother and also that the document that June signed on July 12 be overturned. In the motion that Evan Chandler files against the order he does not mention any suspicion of sexual abuse by Michael Jackson.

August 17, 1993 – This is the deadline that the Court set for Evan to return Jordan to June. At this point Jordan has been with his father for more than a month – Evan should have returned the boy to his mother on July 16. (Details about what happened during this month are in the chapter about [The Chandlers’ Monetary Demands](#).) As an answer to the Court order and frustrated by Jackson’s refusal to pay him off, Evan takes Jordan to Dr. Mathis Abrams where the boy makes his detailed allegations against Jackson for the first time. This triggers a criminal investigation against the entertainer. As a result of the allegations Evan does not have to return Jordan to his ex-wife despite the Court’s order a day before.

August 19, 1993 – June Chandler’s attorney Michael Freeman meets with Barry Rothman in latter’s office. June has a change of heart and now sides with Evan. “*Mother stated that if Jordie had said it, it must be true*”, the Department of Children’s Services report of August 19, 1993 stated, although, according to Ray Chandler’s book, she previously said she felt that Evan Chandler had brainwashed their son into making allegations against Jackson.

August 19, 1993 – Contrary to later reports which suggested Jackson had intentionally left on his tour in order to escape any possible arrest warrant in the US, Jackson in fact requests on

The Michael Jackson Allegations

this date to pull out or postpone the second leg of his Dangerous World Tour, likely understanding the seriousness of the allegations against him.

August 21, 22 & 30, 1993 – In the absence of Michael Jackson, who was on tour out of the USA at the time, search warrants are carried out on his premises – Neverland, a Century City condo and a hotel room at the Mirage Hotel, Las Vegas where he used to stay with the Chandlers. On August 27, 1993 the Los Angeles Times wrote: *“Videotapes seized from homes belonging to Michael Jackson do not incriminate the entertainer, and the lack of physical evidence of alleged sexual molestation has left investigators ‘scrambling’ to get statements from other potential victims, a high-ranking police source said Thursday. ‘There’s no medical evidence, no taped evidence,’ the source said. ‘The search warrant didn’t result in anything that would support a criminal filing.’* (Jim Newton and Sonia Nazario – Police Say Seized Tapes Do Not Incriminate Jackson: Investigation: Officials continue to interview children in connection with molestation allegations; Los Angeles Times, August 27, 1993.)

August 23, 1993 – First reports appear about the allegations in the media.

August 24, 1993 – Evan Chandler, June Chandler, David Schwartz, Michael Freeman met with Barry Rothman for three hours in latter’s office. Rothman’s legal secretary, Geraldine Hughes claims in her book entitled *Redemption* that she overheard Evan Chandler say *“I almost had a twenty million dollar deal”*.

August 25, 1993 – Someone illegally leaks a copy of the abuse report to tabloid TV show *Hard Copy*.

August 25, 26 & 30, 1993 – Jackson has to cancel two shows in Bangkok because of dehydration and a show in Singapore after collapsing backstage.

August 26-27, 1993 – Evan and Jordan Chandler spend all day and night in Rothman’s office hiding from the media. Rothman’s secretary, Geraldine Hughes claims in her book that she overheard Evan Chandler say to Rothman: *“It’s my ass that’s on the line and in danger of going to prison.”*

late August 1993 – Barry Rothman quits representing the Chandlers after Jackson files extortion charges against him and Evan Chandler. According to Geraldine Hughes’ book: *“Dr. Chandler and Mr. Rothman continued to put their heads together as they very carefully planned their next moves. Dr. Chandler continued to call our office at least four to five times per day (on a light day) to speak with Mr. Rothman, and he continued to give Dr. Chandler advice concerning his every move.”*

August 30, 1993 – Parts of the secretly taped phone conversations between Evan Chandler and David Schwartz (for details see the chapter entitled ***Taped phone conversations between Evan Chandler and David Schwartz***) were released to the media by Pellicano. Two days later a secretly taped phone conversation between Barry Rothman and Pellicano was released by the latter as well.

August 30, 1993 – The Chandlers hire attorney Gloria Allred.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

September 2, 1993 – Allred gives a press conference where she states the accuser is willing to testify in a Court. In reaction to that a couple of days later the Chandlers fire Allred and replace her with a civil attorney Larry Feldman. According to Ray Chandler's book, this was because the Chandler family wanted to steer the case toward *"a highly profitable settlement"* rather than a Grand Jury indictment and a criminal trial.

September 8, 1993 – Evan Chandler, June Chandler, David Schwartz and their lawyers discuss the prospects of a *"highly profitable settlement"* in Larry Feldman's office. Evan and David Schwartz have an argument about the settlement money that they have not even received yet. According to Ray Chandler's book, Schwartz demanded four million dollars while the Chandlers did not want him to be included in Jordan's complaint. (Earlier Schwartz also asked Michael Jackson to give him a four million dollars loan, which the star refused.) During the argument Evan Chandler punched Schwartz. According to Mary A. Fischer's article *"Was Michael Jackson Framed?"* (GQ, October 1994), during the argument Schwartz said *"this was all about extortion, anyway, at which point Evan stood up, walked over and started hitting Dave"*. Ray Chandler's book admits that *"in the heat of this verbal battle [Evan] sprang from his seat and slapped Dave in the face. Several of the lawyers stepped between the two men and separated them"*.

September, 1993 – Evan Chandler files a lawsuit against June Chandler and David Schwartz for invasion of privacy, violation of Penal Code section 632, intentional infliction of emotional distress and conspiracy. In the lawsuit Chandler complains about David Schwartz recording their telephone conversations and giving them to a third party (Anthony Pellicano) and that some of the recordings found their way to the news media. In a cross-complaint David Schwartz sues Evan Chandler likewise for invasion of privacy, violation of Penal Code 632, and intentional infliction of emotional distress.

September 14, 1993 – Larry Feldman, on behalf of the Chandlers, files a \$30 million civil lawsuit against Michael Jackson accusing him of sexual battery, battery, seduction, willful misconduct, intentional infliction of emotional distress, fraud and negligence.

September 21, 1993 – The National Enquirer runs a story about Michael Jackson having been seen kissing and cuddling a boy in a disturbing way in a limousine on the way to Disneyland. The paper cites an unnamed "observer" for source. This same story, with some of the *exact same* expressions can be found in Ray Chandler's 2004 book. Ray Chandler there reveals that the supposed witness of this scene was June Chandler. From June's 2005 testimony we know that the boy was Brett Barnes (who always stated that Jackson never did anything inappropriate to him). In Court June did not describe this scene as a disturbing scene at all – both the Enquirer and Ray Chandler's book seemed to have juiced up the story [details in the chapter entitled [Evan Chandler's "Suspensions"](#)]. This suggests that the Chandlers were in contact with some of the tabloid media and fed them with stories while the investigation was ongoing.

October 6, 1993 – Jordan is taken to a psychiatrist, Dr. Richard Gardner who conducts an interview with him. The interview was leaked to the public in February, 2003. This is the most detailed account we have of Jordan's allegations.

For details see the chapter about [The Chandler Allegations](#).

The Michael Jackson Allegations

October 21, 1993 – Jackson, who is still on tour at this point, cancels a show in Chile, then he cancels several more dates of his Dangerous World Tour due to serious health problems.

October 28, 1993 – Jackson’s attorney Bert Fields writes a letter to LAPD complaining about their tactics of trying to manipulate children into saying incriminating things about Jackson. Police interviewed 40-60 children (according to some sources, up to 100) who had ever spent time with Jackson or at his Neverland Ranch. No one corroborated the accuser’s story. All of the children said nothing inappropriate or suspicious had ever been done to them by Jackson.

For details see our the chapter about [The Prosecution’s Hunt For Other Victims](#).

November 4, 1993 - Having interviewed dozens of children, of whom none corroborated Jordan Chandler’s allegations, they get to Jason Francia, the 13-year-old son of a former maid of Jackson Blanca Francia, who is aggressively pressured by investigators into making allegations against the star. Although initially Jason Francia does not remember any such thing, after a high pressure interrogation and leading questions by the police, he finally comes up with a story about Jackson allegedly improperly touching him during tickling. Jason Francia would be interviewed again in March 1994.

For details about Jason Francia’s allegations see the chapter about him entitled [Jason Francia](#).

November 8, 1993 – A fourth search warrant carried out – this time at the Hayvenhurst (Encino, California) home of the Jackson Family. Nothing incriminating is found.

November 11, 1993 – Jackson’s last performance on his ongoing world tour in Mexico. The remaining dates of the tour are cancelled because Jackson developed a dependency on painkillers. He seeks treatment in Europe (probably London) with the help of Elizabeth Taylor and Elton John.

November 15, 1993 – Jackson’s attorney Bert Fields holds a press conference confirming that Jackson is undergoing treatment for a painkiller dependency. He said Jackson was *“barely able to function on an intellectual level”*. He would not disclose his whereabouts. Fields added that Jackson *“has no intention of avoiding coming to the US”*. The media cast doubt on the dependency claim and make suggestions that Jackson is running and hiding from the law, even though he is not charged with anything, nor is an arrest warrant issued against him at this point (nor at any time later in this case, for that matter).

November 16, 1993 – The Chandler’s lawyer, Larry Feldman files a so called *Motion for Trial Preference* which is a special request to have the civil trial heard within 120 days after the motion is granted. This request is usually given to children under the age of 14. In other words the accuser’s side was working hard on getting the civil trial ahead of the criminal proceedings.

November 22, 1993 - Dr. Beachamp Colclough, the doctor who treats Jackson for his painkiller dependency, releases a statement confirming the treatment and refutes media rumours about Jackson “hiding out” and also rumours about cosmetic surgery and that he was suicidal: *“no other medical, surgical or psychological condition exists”*, he said.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

November 22, 1993 – Five former bodyguards of the Jackson family (Leroy Thomas, Morris Williams, Donald Starks, Fred Hammond, Aaron White), sometimes dubbed in the media as “The Hayvenhurst 5”, file a civil lawsuit against Michael Jackson claiming they were fired because they “knew too much” about Michael Jackson’s relationship with young boys. The bodyguards, who asked for \$10 million in their lawsuit, did not work for Michael Jackson, but for his family in Hayvenhurst. The bodyguards appeared on the tabloid TV show *Hard Copy* with their story. Later documents revealed negotiations for \$100,000 between the show and the bodyguards. The bodyguards never reported to authorities that they saw any inappropriate behavior by Jackson towards children. In fact, in depositions given to the police they admitted they never saw anything inappropriate. The bodyguards’ lawsuit was thrown out of court in July, 1995.

For more details about ex-employees making allegations against Jackson see these chapters :

[**Ralph Chacon, Kassim Abdool and Adrian McManus**](#)

[**Phillip and Stella LeMarque**](#)

[**Bob Jones and Stacy Brown**](#)

These people then were used by the Prosecution as witnesses against Jackson during his 2005 trial.

For more details about the media’s role in the allegations against Michael Jackson see the chapter entitled [**The Media’s Role In The Allegations Against Michael Jackson**](#).

November 23, 1993 – A friction in Jackson’s team of attorneys shows when Bert Fields tells reporters that a criminal indictment against Jackson seemed imminent. The information turned out to be false. Jackson’s other attorney Howard Weitzman told reporters that Fields just “misspoke himself”. Fields zeal to announce that an indictment seemed imminent had to do with the fact that Jackson’s team was fighting against the Chandlers efforts to bring the civil proceedings ahead of the criminal proceedings.

On the same day Judge David M. Rothman denied a request by Jackson’s attorneys in which they attempted to postpone the civil lawsuit to allow the criminal proceedings to be held ahead of the civil proceedings. Civil trial court date was set for March 21, 1994.

About the significance of this see the chapter entitled [**The Settlement**](#).

November 26, 1993 – Police raids the offices of Jackson’s dermatologist, Dr. Arnold Klein and plastic surgeon, Dr. Steve Hoefflin confiscating medical records of the star.

December 3, 1993 – A letter signed by Jackson is sent to Bert Fields ousting him as chief attorney for the civil case.

December 10, 1993 – Michael Jackson returns to the United States.

December 13, 1993 – Bert Fields officially resigns and leaves the case completely. After Fields’ resignation Jackson is represented by Howard Weitzman and Johnnie Cochran – the latter newly joined the star’s defense team. Private investigator Anthony Pellicano also leaves

The Michael Jackson Allegations

and publically states upon his resignation that he is convinced of Jackson's innocence and his leaving the case is no indication of otherwise.

December 15, 1993 – Blanca Francia, who worked for Jackson as a maid between 1986 and 1991 appears on the tabloid TV show *Hard Copy* claiming that she witnessed improprieties toward young boys by Jackson during her employment. Before the Chandler allegations she never mentioned these alleged improprieties to anyone, nor did she report them to authorities. At Jackson's 2005 trial Francia admitted that she had been paid \$20,000 by Hard Copy for the interview, which was her then yearly salary. On the same day when her interview with Hard Copy aired Blanca Francia was deposed for the Chandler civil case. A day before, on December 14, Francia also spoke to the *Los Angeles Times*. During her testimony at Jackson's 2005 trial she admitted that she also contemplated selling her story to the *National Enquirer*. This did not come to be, apparently because the police put her under wraps after her *Hard Copy* interview.

December 20, 1993 – Michael Jackson is strip searched. His genitalia and body is photographed and videotaped by authorities to compare them with the description that the accuser gave of Jackson's private parts. Based on the body search no arrest warrant was issued.

For details see the chapter entitled **[Did Jordan Chandler's description of Michael Jackson's penis match the photographs taken of the star's genitalia by the police?](#)**

December 22, 1993 – Jackson releases a video statement, talking about the strip search and maintaining his innocence.

December 28, 1993 – Marcel Avram, owner of the Munich based Mama Concerts company files a lawsuit against Jackson seeking \$20 million after the cancellation of Jackson's tour.

December 28, 1993 – Jordan Chandler gives a declaration about his allegations. This declaration, together with Dr. Richard Gardner's interview with Jordan on October 6, was leaked to the public in February, 2003 by an unknown source, apparently to further antagonize the public against Jackson in the wake of Martin Bashir's *Living with Michael Jackson* documentary. Jordan's detailed allegations will be discussed in the chapter entitled **[The Chandler Allegations](#)**.

December 30, 1993 – The Chandlers' attorney Larry Feldman files a motion to compel Jackson to answer a list of questions for the civil suit. The over a hundred questions asks for information about each person under the age of 18 that Jackson has entertained since January 1, 1983.

December 30, 1993 – Judge David M. Rothman denies Jackson's motion for a gag order. According to Ray Chandler's book, the Chandlers were opposed to a gag order because if it had been issued they could not have talked to the media and influenced public opinion.

ca. January 4-5, 1994 – Larry Feldman files a motion in which he gives Jackson a multiple choice request: Jackson may provide copies of the police photographs made of his body during the strip search on December 20, submit to a second search or the court may bar the photographs from the civil trial as evidence.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

January 10, 1994 – Larry Feldman asks the Court for access to Jackson’s financial records. *“He is a millionaire hundreds of times over whose assets are tied up in intangibles. Plaintiff will need the three months remaining before the trial date to be able to track down these assets and come up with an approximation of their worth”*, he wrote in his motion. As a part of his motion Feldman also filed Jordan’s December 28 declaration. According to Jackson’s lawyer, Howard Weitzman this was a PR move by Feldman because it contained nothing new compared to the allegations that had already been detailed in August, so it only served as a counter punch in reaction to Jackson’s December 22 video statement in which the star maintained his innocence.

January 11, 1994 – Jordan Chandler turns 14 years old.

January 11, 1994 – Blanca Francia’s second deposition.

January 14, 1994 – Judge David M. Rothman postpones Jackson’s deposition scheduled for January 18 and two hearings on Feldman’s motions. The hearings were rescheduled for January 25 and Jackson was ordered to give his deposition between January 25 and February 1.

January 24, 1994 – The prosecutor’s office announces that they decline to file charges against Evan Chandler and Barry Rothman for extortion as Jackson’s attorneys retracted the complaint, preparing for the settlement that would be signed the next day. As a part of the settlement agreement Jackson had to agree to withdraw the extortion charges, but those charges had never been seriously investigated by the prosecutors anyway. They were never given the same attention and effort by the authorities as the child molestation allegations against Jackson. They never subpoenaed any witnesses, no search warrants were issued, and not much at all was done with the extortion charges.

January 25, 1994 – An out of court settlement is reached in the civil case between Jackson and the Chandlers. The settlement was illegally leaked to Court TV’s Diane Dimond in 2003 and from that document we know the amount paid into a trust for Jordan Chandler was \$15,331,250. The criminal investigation, however, was ongoing. Both sides stated, and it is also stated in the settlement itself, that the settlement is in no way an admission of guilt by Michael Jackson. Los Angeles District Attorney Gil Garcetti maintained that the settlement did not affect the criminal investigation. The settlement also did not prevent Jordan Chandler from testifying in any criminal case.

For details see the chapter about [The Settlement](#).

January, 1994 – Within days of the settlement Jordan’s uncle, Ray Chandler began shopping a book about the allegations. Publishers turned him down fearing legal complications since the settlement states that none of the parties are allowed to talk to the media about the allegations. Book publisher Judith Regan: *“I asked him how he proposed to do this given the fact that the Chandlers had actually signed a confidentiality agreement and taken \$20mln. And he said that Jordan’s father had given him all the information he needed for the book and he believed he was outside the bounds of the Confidentiality agreement because he would be the author. At the time I had the impression that the Chandlers were brazen opportunists and I found the entire proposal by the uncle to be distasteful. They enter a Confidentiality agreement and before the ink is even dry they are shopping a deal that violates this agreement?”* (Judith Regan in SIRIUS XM Radio, July 15, 2009)

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Eventually Ray Chandler published his book in 2004 at the height of the media frenzy caused by the Arvizo allegations (details about that case in the [The 2005 Allegations](#) section of our paper). For details about Ray Chandler's actions in the media and also his refusal to testify at Jackson's 2005 trial see the chapter entitled [Ray Chandler's Subpoena in 2004](#).

ca. January 31, 1994 – About one week after the settlement was announced Los Angeles District Attorney, Gil Garcetti announces that he would sponsor legislation that would change the California law that allowed the Chandlers to push the civil trial ahead of the criminal trial. The law was then indeed changed. Santa Barbara District Attorney, Thomas Sneddon said in a 2003 interview that this was a direct result of what happened in the Chandler case.

March 17, 1994 – Michael Jackson's mother Katherine Jackson is subpoenaed to testify before the Grand Jury in Los Angeles. Michael Jackson's attorney, Howard Weitzman: *"In all the years of my experience, I've never before seen the mother of the target of an investigation called before the grand jury. It's just done in real poor taste. It borders on harassment."* Prosecutors sought information from Katherine about whether Michael Jackson changed the appearance of his genitalia, as it did not match a description provided to them by Jordan Chandler. [For details about the description see the chapter entitled [Did Jordan Chandler's description of Michael Jackson's penis match the photographs taken of the star's genitalia by the police?](#)]

March 24, 1994 – Jason Francia's second police interview.

February-April, 1994 – Santa Barbara and Los Angeles Grand Jury hearings in the Jackson investigation. Both Grand Juries disband without indicting Jackson. Despite this investigators refuse to close the case and still try to convince Jordan Chandler to testify.

April 11, 1994 – Michael Jackson requests the return of the photographs taken during his body search. The request is denied.

May 1994 – Evan Chandler closes down his Beverly Hills dental office.

July 6, 1994 – Jordan Chandler informs investigators that he is not willing to testify.

August 8, 1994 – David Schwartz sues Evan Chandler.

August 16, 1994 – David Schwartz sues Michael Jackson claiming he and his daughter were "traumatized" by the allegations. June Chandler and Schwartz divorce in 1994.

September 21, 1994 – Santa Barbara District Attorney Thomas Sneddon and Los Angeles District Attorney Gil Garcetti make an official statement regarding the status of the Michael Jackson investigation. They inform the public that Jordan Chandler is unwilling to testify therefore they are unable to file charges. Gil Garcetti admits that the 18-month investigation did not lead to anything incriminating against Jackson. He also states: *"Michael Jackson is presumed to be innocent as any citizen in this room is if they are not convicted with a crime. We are not charging Michael Jackson with a crime"*.

Tom Sneddon, however, claims that there are two more alleged victims, but they are just unwilling to testify. Later however it becomes clear that one of his two other alleged victims

The Michael Jackson Allegations

is Jason Francia who was pressured by the prosecution into making allegations against the singer. He eventually testified at Jackson's 2005 trial and was not found credible (see details about him and his allegations and how they emerged in the chapter entitled [Jason Francia](#)). The other alleged victim claimed by Sneddon to boost his number was Brett Barnes – the problem is that Barnes himself has always denied being a victim. Indeed, Sneddon admits at this press conference that the other alleged victim “*had made a “general denial” of wrongdoing by Mr. Jackson*” (New York Times on September 22, 1994). Sneddon later at Jackson's 2005 trial would also use this tactic of calling people “victims” who themselves denied being victims. Sneddon also states that despite the prosecution's inability to charge Jackson with any crime the investigation would remain open.

July 4, 1995 – First media reports about Jordan Chandler being in the process of legally emancipating himself from both of his biological parents.

November 12, 1995 – Jordan Chandler's emancipation from his parents becomes final. He goes on to live with Evan's second wife (who by this time had divorced Evan) and his two younger siblings from that second marriage of Evan. [A little more about the Chandlers' family relations the chapter entitled [Michael Jackson's first accuser – meet the Chandler family!](#)]

May 7, 1996 – Evan Chandler files a civil lawsuit against Michael Jackson, Jackson's first wife Lisa Marie Presley, ABC Capitol Cities Broadcasting and others for allegedly breaching the Confidentiality Agreement of the 1994 settlement when Jackson maintained his innocence in an interview on the ABC television channel. Evan Chandler this time demands more than \$60 million from Jackson and a record deal so that he could release a musical album about the alleged sexual molestation of his son. The lawsuit gets thrown out of Court in 2000.

For details see the chapter about [Evan Chandler's 1996 lawsuit against Michael Jackson](#).

October 15, 1996 – Verdict in a lawsuit that Michael Jackson filed against journalists Victor Gutierrez and Diane Dimond. In January of 1995 Gutierrez claimed that an alleged 27-minutes video tape captured by one of Jackson's security cameras showed the star sexually molesting one of his nephews, Jeremy Jackson. No such tape ever existed and the boy and his mother firmly denied the story. Dimond repeated Gutierrez's allegations in a radio show and on TV, despite not having any evidence for the tape's existence outside of Gutierrez's words and despite a statement by Jackson's lawyer that there was no such tape. The Court ordered Gutierrez to pay Jackson \$2.7 million in damages. He never paid and instead fled the country and filed for bankruptcy. Dimond escaped unscathed because no malice could be proven on her part.

Victor Gutierrez was a lot more deeply involved in the allegations against Michael Jackson than this. He seems to have been a catalyst who had been in contact with many of the main players of the case, as well as journalists who used him as a “source”. For details about him and his disturbing agenda please read the chapter entitled [Victor Gutierrez and his role in the allegations against Michael Jackson](#).

February 15, 2001 – The New York Daily News quotes Tom Sneddon saying the child abuse case against Michael Jackson had never been closed and that it can be re-opened at any

The Michael Jackson Allegations

time (Sneddon has made a few similar remarks to other publications in the '90s). Sneddon is also quoted saying that the statute of limitations for Jordan Chandler to testify has not run out because Jackson was living out of the country for so much time.

February 3 & 6, 2003 – Martin Bashir's *Living with Michael Jackson* documentary airs in the UK (February 3) and then in the USA (February 6). On February 6 someone leaks Jordan Chandler's 1993 declaration (see December 28, 1993) to the media to further antagonize the public against Jackson.

March 3, 2003 – Ray Chandler gives an interview to the *National Enquirer* praising the paper's "accuracy" in their reporting of the 1993 case. There are reasons to believe that some of the tabloid's stories at the time were fed by the Chandlers (see September 21, 1993, May 25, 1993).

June 16, 2004 – [The Settlement](#) agreement between the Chandlers and Michael Jackson is illegally leaked to journalist Diane Dimond. It is not known who leaked the confidential settlement to Dimond, however, Ray Chandler's book, *All That Glitters*, describes Dimond as Evan Chandler's "closest ally".

September 12, 2004 – At the height of the media frenzy about the Arvizo allegations and the upcoming trial, Ray Chandler self-publishes the book he had been shopping since the 1994 settlement (*Raymond Chandler – All That Glitters: The Crime and the Cover-Up*).

September 19, 2004 – Jackson's defense tries to subpoena Ray Chandler who was making his rounds in the media, promoting his book. In interviews Chandler claims to have documents which "prove" Jackson's guilt. Jackson's defense team challenges him to come and show his documents in Court, under oath in order to be cross-examined. Ray Chandler refuses to go to Court with his claims and he successfully fights off the subpoena citing the Shield Law that protects him as a journalist.

For details see the chapter [Ray Chandler's Subpoena in 2004](#).

September 28, 2004 – Prosecutors for the Arvizo trial visit the 24-year-old Jordan Chandler in New York to ask him to testify against Jackson in the upcoming trial. According to Jackson's FBI files those were released after the singer's death, Jordan refused and advised the prosecutors that "*he would legally fight any attempt*" to make him testify against Jackson. Later Jackson's lawyer Thomas Mesereau revealed that he had witnesses for the trial who said that Jordan privately admitted to them that Jackson had never molested him. Had Jordan come to testify Mesereau would have presented those witnesses.

April 11, 2005 – June Chandler appears in court at Jackson's trial as one of the prosecution's witnesses. She admits she has not spoken to Jordan for 11 years. She testifies about her son and Michael Jackson spending time together in 1993 but she does not claim to have witnessed molestation. She is the only member of the Chandler family who ever testified in a Court and subjected herself to cross-examination.

June 13, 2005 – Michael Jackson is acquitted on all counts at his trial.

August 5, 2005 – Jordan Chandler obtains a temporary restraining order against his father, claiming that while they were living in the same household Evan "*struck him on the head*

The Michael Jackson Allegations

from behind with a twelve and one-half pound weight and then sprayed his eyes with mace or pepper spray and tried to choke him. The judge also found that the weight could cause serious bodily injury or death.”

For details about the Chandlers’ family relations see the chapter [**Michael Jackson’s first accuser – meet the Chandler family!**](#)

June 25, 2009 – Michael Jackson passes away.

June 26, 2009 – A false story is circulated on the Internet about Jordan Chandler publicly recanting his allegations. Jordan has never publicly recanted his allegations.

November 5, 2009 – Only four months after Michael Jackson’s death, Evan Chandler committed suicide by shooting himself in the head in his New Jersey home. He did not leave a suicide note. Reportedly, he died as a lonely man, stricken with serious and painful diseases. In his Will Evan ordered that none of his family members be advised of his death until well after his funeral. He also stated that he did not wish to leave anything to any of his three children: *“For reasons best known between us, I purposefully make no provision in this, my Last Will and Testament, for any of my children or their issue.”*

Michael Jackson's first accuser – meet the Chandler family!



Michael Jackson with Jordan Chandler and his little sister in Monaco in May, 1993 (the kids' mother, June Chandler was also ther – see next photoe)

Michael Jackson met his first accuser, Jordan Chandler in May, 1992 after the star's car broke down while he was driving on Wilshire Boulevard, Los Angeles and went to a nearby car-rental agency that was owned by the boy's step-father, David Schwartz. Schwartz called his wife, June Chandler (sometimes mentioned as June Schwartz or June Chandler Schwartz) to tell her of the illustrious client and to ask to bring her 12-year-old son, Jordan who was a big fan of the star. David Schwartz offered Jackson a deal: he would rent him a car for free if Jackson would agree to take Jordan's phone number and call him. Jackson accepted the deal, kept his promise and called the boy a couple of days later. An employee of Schwartz, *Mel Green* recalled:

"It was almost like [the boy's mother] was forcing [the boy] on him," Green recalls. "I think Michael thought he owed the boy something, and that's when it all started." [1]

According to the Chandlers, before this meeting they had a couple of chance encounters with Jackson in the 80s. Allegedly, after Jackson's hair caught fire while shooting a Pepsi commercial in 1984, Jordan and his mother sent him a "get well" letter for which Jackson called to thank them and he also invited them to an audition with a chance for Jordan to appear in an advertisement with Jackson. Eventually Jordan was not selected for the ad and did not meet Jackson at the set as the Chandlers expected. They also claim to have had a short encounter with Jackson in a restaurant in 1985. [2; page 12]



Jordan's mother June Chandler in Monaco in May, 1993



Jordan's father Evan Chandler

Jordan Chandler was born on January 11, 1980. His biological parents divorced in 1985 and he lived with his mother and her second husband, David Schwartz. From this marriage he had a half-sister. His father, Evan Chandler also had a second family, a wife and another son and a daughter from that marriage.

Evan Chandler had a dental practice in Beverly Hills, but he was also an aspiring screenwriter.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

In 1992 Evan collaborated in writing a screenplay for the comedy movie *Robin Hood: Men In Tights* directed by Mel Brooks. The movie was released in July, 1993. Though officially Mel Brooks, J. David Shapiro and Evan Chandler are credited with the screenplay, who wrote what percentage of it was a matter of legal dispute among them [2; page 37]. According to June Chandler's 2005 testimony, Jordan helped his father write his part, for which Evan promised him \$5,000 but he never paid it [3]. Jordan's uncle, Ray Chandler in his 2004 book *All That Glitters* describes an argument between Evan and June Chandler where the woman called her ex-husband "*a terrible father*" for promising Jordan the money but never paying it. Evan in the book claimed that Jordan's contribution wasn't that big after all and that instead of giving the money to the boy directly he put it "*in the bank*" [2; page 55-56]. According to June's 2005 testimony, however, Evan never paid the promised money to his son [3].

This wasn't the only promise Evan failed to keep to his son. According to *Michael Freeman*, who was June Chandler's attorney while the allegations were being formulated, Evan also promised a laptop computer to his son that he never bought [1]. And June Chandler herself in August, 1993 sued Evan for \$68,000 in back child support payments though later she retracted this claim [1] [4].

In her 2005 testimony June Chandler testified that before Jackson came into their lives Evan was busy writing screenplays and did not spend much time with his son about which she complained to her ex-husband [3].

There are also several accounts of Evan Chandler having a violent temper and an abusive nature. In her 1994 article for *GQ Magazine* Mary A. Fischer quotes an unnamed family friend who claimed: "*One of the reasons June left Evan was because of his temper*" [1]. Later in the same article Fischer describes an incident that occurred in *Larry Feldman's* (the Chandlers' civil lawyer during the allegations) office in 1993. According to Fischer's sources:

"[Evan Chandler] completely lost it and beat up Dave [Schwartz]. Schwartz, having separated from June by this time, was getting pushed out of making decisions that affected his stepson, and he resented Chandler for taking the boy and not returning him.

Dave got mad and told Evan this was all about extortion, anyway, at which point Evan stood up, walked over and started hitting Dave, a second source says." [1]

The Michael Jackson Allegations



Jordan's step-father David Schwartz

Jordan's uncle, Ray Chandler, in an article he wrote in 2005 for his now defunct website (atgbook.com) attempted to downplay the incident, describing it as a *"a one punch fight"* in the heat of an argument about the settlement money that they had not even received yet, but he does concede that Evan indeed punched Schwartz [4]. He admits to this incident in his book as well:

"Until now [Evan] had consciously subdued his resentment, but in the heat of this verbal battle he sprang from his seat and slapped Dave in the face.

Several of the lawyers stepped between the two men and separated them". [2; page 170]

In her 2004 book, *Redemption*, Geraldine Hughes, a legal secretary of lawyer Barry K. Rothman who first represented the Chandlers during the 1993 allegations, speaks about a lawsuit David Schwartz filed against Evan Chandler and states:

"Mr. Schwartz asserted that on July 9, 1993, at Dr. Chandler's house in Brentwood, Dr. Chandler approached him in a menacing manner with a closed fist and threatened to strike him with his hands and feet. He stated that Dr. Chandler wrestled him to the ground and began to kick him and spat on him.

Mr. Schwartz further asserted that once again while at Mr. Feldman's office in August of 1993, there was another altercation in which Dr. Chandler punched Mr. Schwartz in his temple, causing him to lose consciousness [5; page 136]."

In a secretly taped phone conversation between Evan Chandler and David Schwartz, Evan, when talking about his then wife, "Monique" (her real name was *Nathalie Chandler*, but the pseudonym "Monique" was used in the transcript and in Ray Chandler's book), says he would kill her if he ever learned that she cheated on him without first telling him:

"She's going to go away to Cannes Film Festival next year... right? Do you know what that's like? That Film Festival's a fucking sex party. Next year, without me, okay? Now, if I didn't have a chance to talk to her about my fears, my [tape irregularity], probably shoot her, or I'd divorce her." [6]

and

"And you want to know what I told her? I told her this. I said June... 'Monique,' I said, 'if you ever want to sleep with somebody else or if you don't love me anymore, if you come to me and you tell me that [tape irregularity] out of the house and fuck his brains out, I'll love you forever, I'll support you and wish you well. But if it's the other way around, you fuck him first and then you [tape irregularity], I'll kill you, period.'" I said, "Those are

The Michael Jackson Allegations

the rules. If you want to stay with me, you gotta understand that's the only way I can survive. That's how I live." [6]

It is none other than Ray Chandler who discloses in his 2005 article that *"when asked in a 1994 deposition about Evan's violence, June said that in January of 1992 she had heard of an argument between Evan and his then wife, Monique that became physical."* [4]

Though Ray Chandler in his book denied Evan's physical attacks against Schwartz (except for the *"one punch fight"* in Feldman's office) and others, and both in the book and in his 2005 article he claimed that *"[June Chandler] knew of no reason why Evan presented a danger to Jordie"* [4], eventually Evan's violence peaked in an attack against his son in which he almost killed him.



Evan's brother, Raymond Chandler, who published the book All That Glitters in 2004

On July 6, 2005 – less than three weeks after Michael Jackson's acquittal in the Arvizo trial – Evan Chandler *"struck [Jordan] on the head from behind with a twelve and one-half pound weight and then sprayed his eyes with mace or pepper spray and tried to choke him"* [7]. A judge later *"found that the weight could have caused serious bodily injury or death"* [7]. On August 5, 2005 Jordan obtained a temporary restraining order against his father. Though the judge in this case declared he saw no proof that the defendant (Evan Chandler) displayed *"a pattern of abusive and controlling behavior"* [7], and with that dismissed Jordan's request for a final restraining order, the incidents cited above, considered together, do indeed constitute a pattern.

This was not the end of Evan and Jordan Chandler's legal disputes. On July 24, 2005 Evan Chandler filed a lawsuit against Jordan which had to do with Jordan's trust fund. The case was dismissed in 2007.

Jordan's relationship with his father seemed to be very ambivalent, while Evan's relationship with his other children was virtually non-existent after the allegations. As mentioned earlier, according to June Chandler's 2005 testimony, before Jackson appeared in their life Evan did not spend much time with Jordan. During and with the help of the 1993 allegations then he managed to get custody of the boy who by 1994 was a multi-millionaire due to the settlement with Jackson.

In 1995, however, Jordan emancipated himself from both of his biological parents and for a while he went on to live with Evan's second wife Nathalie ("Monique") and his younger brother and sister. Nathalie divorced Evan and later married a Hollywood screenwriter, who raised Evan's two younger children as his own. Evan did not show interest in his two younger children, he was only interested in maintaining a relationship with the multi-millionaire Jordan.

From court documents between Nathalie and Evan it appears that despite of the emancipation Evan retained some kind of mental or emotional control over Jordan, because in those

The Michael Jackson Allegations

documents Nathalie complained that after a while Jordan refused to talk to and meet with his younger siblings, just like their father who abandoned them.

In the lawsuit Nathalie also complained that Evan refused to work and did not provide for his minor children, nor was he available to them and was content with living off of the money of his son, Jordan. She also stated that Evan cut himself off from any other family members who disagreed with his behavior. Even his loyal brother, Ray Chandler admitted in his book, *All That Glitters* that Evan neglected his family after the allegations [2; page 248]. (More in the chapter entitled [Evan Chandler's 1996 lawsuit against Michael Jackson.](#))

This puts the portrayal of Evan as the concerned father, the only responsible adult in Jordan's life, the only person who cared about his well-being into a perspective.

Jordan himself never publicly addressed the allegations and always kept a low profile. According to Jackson's FBI files, when prosecutors asked him to testify at Jackson's 2005 trial Jordan refused and he told them that "*he would legally fight any attempt*" to make him testify against Jackson [8]. Jackson's attorney Thomas Mesereau said that he had witnesses whom he would have called if Jordan had testified. These witnesses were people who personally knew Jordan and according to Mesereau, Jordan privately confided in them that Jackson never molested him [9].



Evan, his second wife Nathalie ("Monique"), Jordan and Evan's younger son not long after the 1993 allegations – by 1995 Evan and his second wife divorced and Jordan legally emancipated himself

On November 5, 2009, four months after Michael Jackson's death, Evan Chandler committed suicide. He did not leave a suicide note. Reportedly, he died as a lonely man, stricken with serious and painful diseases. According to journalist *Diane Dimond* (whom Ray Chandler's book, *All That Glitters* describes as Evan Chandler's "*closest ally*" in the media [2; page 194]), Evan also suffered from bipolar disorder.

In his Will Evan ordered that none of his family members be advised of his death until well after his funeral. He also stated that he did not wish to leave anything to

any of his three children: "*For reasons best known between us, I purposefully make no provision in this, my Last Will and Testament, for any of my children or their issue.*" [10]

Presently Jordan is on good terms with his mother June and he is also close to his younger half-siblings and their mother Nathalie again.

Sources:

[1] Mary A. Fischer: Was Michael Jackson Framed? (GQ, October 1994)
<http://www.buttonmonkey.com/misc/maryfischer.html>

The Michael Jackson Allegations

[2] Raymond Chandler – All That Glitters: The Crime and the Cover-Up (Windsong Press Ltd, September 2004)

[3] June Chandler's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (April 11, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[4] Raymond Chandler's article on his now defunct website (Allthatglittersbook.com, Atgbook.com, Atgbook.net, January-February, 2005)
<http://web.archive.org/web/20050208010747/atgbook.net/GQFinal.html>

[5] Geraldine Hughes – Redemption: The Truth Behind the Michael Jackson Child Molestation Allegations (Hughes Publishing, January 2004)

[6] Taped phone conversation between Evan Chandler and David Schwartz (July 8, 1993)
https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/plugin-schwartz_chandler.pdf

[7] Court document about Evan Chandler attacking and almost killing his son in 2005
<http://law.justia.com/cases/new-jersey/appellate-division-unpublished/2006/a0422-05-opn.html> and
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/jordan-versus-evan-chandler-2006.pdf>

[8] Jackson's FBI files as released in 2009
<http://vault.fbi.gov/Michael%20Jackson/Michael%20Jackson%20305%20File%20Part%201%20of%201/view>
(page 4)

[9] Michael Jackson was Innocent – Tom Mesereau talks about how Jordan Chandler Lies
http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=-eSC997_HH0

[10] Last Will & Testament – Evan Robert Chandler
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/evan-last-will1.jpg>

Evan Chandler's "Suspensions"

The allegation that Michael Jackson sexually molested Jordan Chandler did not originate from the boy himself. You can read later in this paper ([How Did The Allegations of the Chandlers Emerge?](#)) how his father, Evan Chandler pressured and blackmailed him into corroborating his preconceived, fixed idea that there was something sexual going on between Jordan and the entertainer.

Upon what did Evan Chandler base his "suspensions"? According to the version of the story, as presented by his brother Ray Chandler's book, *All That Glitters*, the suspicions were based on vague feelings and odd interpretations of certain events.

In the book, Evan is distanced from being the originator of the "suspensions". It is claimed that his ex-wife, *June Chandler* and her then husband, *David Schwartz* had concerns before him, only to "forget" about them later, when they were blinded by Jackson's fame, influence and money.

According to the book, June Chandler first had concerns in February, 1993 when she and her children, Jackson and another boy traveled to Neverland in a limo and the other boy, who was about Jordan's age, allegedly sat on the entertainer's lap while he was seated in the front-seat. Ray Chandler's book claims that the entertainer caressed and kissed the boy "*on the ear and the cheek*"[1; page 16] with "*soft, lingering kisses*"[1; page 16]. Though Ray Chandler does not give the name of the boy in his book, we do know that it was *Brett Barnes* who was with them on that trip.

At Jackson's 2005 trial June Chandler was asked about this trip by the prosecution, but she did not mention "*soft, lingering kisses*" and did not describe the scene as a disturbing sight. She also described Brett Barnes as sitting next to Jackson, not on his lap [2]. It seems Ray Chandler's book has juiced up the story.

Moreover, Brett Barnes was interviewed by the police several times in 1993 as a child. In 2005, as an adult, he quit his job in Australia to travel to the US and testify at Jackson's trial in support of the singer. He categorically denied that he had ever been sexually molested or inappropriately touched by Jackson. He said he was "*very mad*" [3] at the insinuation that Jackson molested or inappropriately touched him. On the stand he called Jackson a good personal and family friend with whom he was still in touch as an adult. "*He's a member of the family. Just always had warm conversations, reminisce about old times*" [3]. Brett Barnes' mother and sister also testified at the trial in support of Jackson.

The next event Ray Chandler cites as a source of concern for June is when she and her children accompany Jackson to Las Vegas in March 1993 and stay at the Mirage Hotel. According to June Chandler's 2005 testimony, one night Jackson and Jordan went to see a *Cirque du Soleil* performance and when they came back Jackson insisted on Jordan sleeping in his bedroom. According to June Chandler, when she refused Jackson kept insisting on it "*sobbing, crying, shaking, trembling*"[2] to which June gave in and let Jordan sleep in Jackson's bedroom for the first time.

However, Jordan's own version of this story contradicts his mother's 2005 testimony. In an interview that psychiatrist, Dr. Richard Gardner conducted with Jordan on October 6, 1993

The Michael Jackson Allegations

the boy said he and Jackson watched the horror movie *The Exorcist* that night and Jackson, because Jordan was scared, offered to let Jordan sleep in his room. According to Jordan's version, it was *after* that night when he told his mother about having slept in Jackson's bedroom and that is when the alleged confrontation took place between June and Jackson – so *in the hindsight* of Jordan having spent a night in Jackson's bedroom and not before. [4]

From June Chandler's cross examination by Jackson's lawyer, Thomas Mesereau we learn that the conversation with Jackson revolved around trust issues and it appears Jackson cried because he felt June did not trust him. June also admitted that it was Jordan, who wanted to stay in Jackson's bedroom [2]. In any case, there was no claim of physical contact occurring between Jordan and Jackson on that trip.

In Ray Chandler's book it is claimed that June did not tell Evan about the alleged limo "incident" with Brett Barnes, and "*only very little*" about the alleged Las Vegas "incident" until later [1; page 18] so these alleged events could not have served as a basis for Evan's suspicions. (According to *All That Glitters*, June Chandler initially dismissed Evan's idea that Jackson molested Jordan.)

In *All That Glitters* it is admitted that Evan was jealous of Jackson, of the friendship between Jackson and his son and of the fact that the boy, instead of visiting him, preferred to spend his spare time with the entertainer. In the book it is stated that Evan hoped that once Jackson went on tour in August 1993, it would end. However, Jackson later invited June and the children to go with him.

Jackson's hanging out with the Chandler family was not unique at all and Jordan Chandler was not anyone special in his life, as opposed to some portrayals by the media or by Evan and Ray Chandler. In actuality, we learn from a book written in 2011 by a friend of Jackson's, Frank Cascio that often when Jordan and the Chandlers were around Jackson, so were other families, including the Cascios – and they too were invited to the tour.

Some extracts from Cascio's book:

"I went up and shook Jordy's hand; he seemed like a nice kid. This wasn't the first time I'd met another kid through Michael. Like my own, Jordy's family was one of many families Michael befriended, although the Cascios were the only ones he called his "second family." We Cascios were a big family ourselves, and we were more than happy to embrace Michael's friends. There was always room for more. To me, Jordy and his family seemed pleasant and unexceptional." [8]

[...]

"Seeing the look on [my mother's] face, I understood that my friend was being accused of doing something wrong to Jordy. I was beyond shocked: the idea didn't even make sense to me. I had spent plenty of time with Jordy and Michael, and when I was at Neverland, Jordy never even stayed in Michael's room with us. Not once. I had never seen anything out of line happen, and I didn't believe anything had happened, not for a single second. Furthermore,

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Michael had never acted in any way even approximating “inappropriate” toward Eddie or me. This story was utterly unbelievable; I simply couldn’t imagine Michael as a molester.” [8]

“As this disturbing news sank in, I couldn’t help remembering some of what Jordy had said about his father during the trip we had taken to Disneyland together and later at the ranch. Jordy was an open, honest kid, and I didn’t have the sense that he was hiding anything. The night we’d gone to Toys “R” Us, he told me that his father, a dentist and aspiring screenwriter named Evan, was extremely jealous of Michael. He volunteered the information that his father thought it was weird that Michael was so close to Jordy and the rest of the family, and that the relationship had become a problem for the Chandler family. Thinking back on it, I remembered how Jordy had said that Evan had a terrible temper, that when he was upset he’d scream and bang things around the house. In retrospect, it’s not hard to see that Michael was a father figure for Jordy, that Jordy’s mother was attached to Michael, and that this most likely made for a problematic family dynamic. But at the time I wasn’t thinking in these larger terms. All I knew was that I was certain that Michael was being falsely accused—whether it was because of Jordy or his father didn’t matter.” [8]

Cascio further describes that his family and the Chandlers, including Jordan’s mother, were often together on various trips to Disneyland and other places. This is important to point out, because sometimes some of the tabloid media – and Evan Chandler himself – attempted to portray Jordan as someone very special in Michael Jackson’s life (with the obvious undertone), but that portrayal is false.

It also has to be noted that it is well documented that Jackson was very generous with almost everyone – boys, girls, kids, adults. Again, this needs to be pointed out because his generosity was then turned against him by his accusers and the prosecution, portrayed as some sort of “grooming of young boys”. In reality, Jackson gave and bought gifts for anyone who asked or did not even ask [see examples in the chapter called **Grooming or a Generous Heart?**].

In Ray Chandler’s book, *All That Glitters* it is claimed that Evan Chandler first met Michael Jackson in person on May 20, 1993 in June’s house. Evan, it is said, was surprised by the huge amount of gifts he saw in Jordan’s room, all bought for the boy by the entertainer. The book alleges that the thing that “disturbed” him were the toys, which he deemed were “inappropriate” for Jordan’s age. They were plastic army men and other toys which, according to Evan, were fit for younger children.

“Jeez, Jord,” Evan said, “Cody [pseudonym for Jordan’s little brother] doesn’t even play with this stuff anymore. What are you doing with it?” [1; page 25]

As the story goes, this was the moment when Evan’s life long trust in his ex-wife crumbled and he started to doubt her motives concerning their son:

The Michael Jackson Allegations

“What I saw in Jordie’s room disturbed me not only because it was so inappropriate for his age and personality, but also because I instinctively knew that June had to know it was inappropriate, and was therefore condoning it. It was the first time I had ever doubted her motives concerning our son.” [1; page 27]

How toys for younger children are a sign of ulterior motives by either June or Jackson is never explained.

On May 21 Jackson invited Evan and the children to his Century City condo. According to *All That Glitters*, only one day after Evan was personally introduced to Jackson, he asked, out of the blue: “*Are you fucking my son up the ass?*” (sic!) [1; page 30] Jackson allegedly “*giggled like a schoolgirl*” and said he never used that word [1; page 30]. Keep in mind that this is just Ray Chandler’s account and it does not mean this is really what happened (in actuality, there are many stories, interpretations and claims in that book which are demonstrably false), but this book is the only detailed source for what the Chandlers’ allegations exactly are, so I use it as a source for their claims. So this is what Ray Chandler claims in his book and even his own version of the story leaves one puzzled as to what prompted Evan to ask such a question in such a rude manner only a day after he first met Jackson? What kind of preconceived ideas did he already hold?

According to *All That Glitters*, Jackson spent the May 22-23 weekend in Evan’s house where, allegedly, Jackson told Evan that he did not like June and he wanted to live with Jordan and Evan in the latter’s house. According to Ray Chandler, Evan told Jackson they would need to add one more room to the house and Jackson told him to do it and offered to pay for it. However, allegedly Evan’s wife “Monique” wasn’t happy about the idea and this never materialized. At least that is Ray Chandler’s version of the events.

Mary A. Fischer’s 1994 article for *GQ Magazine* actually reports the scene happening the other way around. According to Fischer, it was Chandler who made the suggestion that Jackson should move in with them and either pay for an addition to the house or build Evan a new house:

“According to sources, Chandler even suggested that Jackson build an addition onto the house so the singer could stay there. After calling the zoning department and discovering it couldn’t be done, Chandler made another suggestion—that Jackson just build him a new home.” [5]

This version is confirmed by June Chandler’s testimony at Jackson’s 2005 trial where she was asked about whether *Evan wanted* Jackson to finance a wing on his house and she answered “yes”:

Q. And do you recall anything about your ex-husband wanting Michael Jackson to finance a wing on his house?

A. Yes.

Q. And to your knowledge, Michael Jackson never did that, right?

A. No.[2]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

As another example of how Ray Chandler's version of events differs from others', consider a story that appeared in two books: in *All That Glitters* and in actress Carrie Fisher's 2011 autobiography entitled *Shockaholic*. In the latter Fisher discloses that Evan Chandler was her dentist before the 1993 allegations. In *All That Glitters*, it is claimed that Evan was so worried about the relationship between Jackson and his son that he asked Fisher's opinion about it and she in turn, asked other people's opinions. However, according to *Shockaholic*, we get a totally different picture about Evan Chandler's motives and behavior compared to the portrayal of the concerned father that we read in *All That Glitters*.

Fisher writes that Evan proudly bragged about the friendship between Jackson and his son, while making odd remarks:

"But remember that dentist who sued Michael for molesting his kid? Yes, that was my dentist. Evan Chandler, D.D.S. Dentist to the Stars. And this same Dr. Chandler — long before the lawsuit was brought (though not necessarily before it was contemplated) — needed someone to brag to about his son's burgeoning friendship with Michael Jackson. (This was years before Michael had children of his own.) And so my "dentist" would go on and on about how much his son liked Michael Jackson and, more important, how much Michael Jackson liked his son. And the most disturbing thing I remember him saying was, "You know, my son is very good looking." Now I ask you—what father talks about his child that way? Well, maybe some do but (a) I don't know them, and (b) they probably aren't raising an eyebrow and looking suggestive when they say it. Over the years I've heard many proud fathers tell me, "My son is great," or "My kid is adorable," but this was the only time I'd ever heard this particular boast: "My son [unlike most average male offspring] is VERY [unsettling smile, raised eyebrows, maybe even a lewd wink] good-looking [pause for you to reflect and/or puke]." It was grotesque! This man was letting me know that he had this valuable thing that he assumed Michael Jackson wanted, and it happened to be his son. But it wasn't who his son was, it was what he was: "good-looking." [6]

A couple of months later, Fisher writes, Evan Chandler announced to her that he was going to sue Jackson for sleeping in the same bed as his son. Fisher shares some thoughts about his accusation:

"Now, I know for a fact that when this first started happening, the good doctor saw no problem with this odd bunking! Excuse me, he had been creepy enough to have allowed all this to happen, and now he's suddenly shocked—shocked!—virtually consumed with moral indignation! "Can you believe it? I think Michael may have even put his hand on my child's privates." Well, what was this man thinking in the first place? Why did he encourage him to sleep in the same bed as Michael Jackson to begin with?

He did it because he knew, somewhere, he would eventually be able to say, "Oh, my God! I suddenly realize that this thing between Michael and my son is weird. I'm horrified. My son may have been damaged! And the only thing that can repair this damage is many millions of dollars! Then he'll be okay! And we're not going to buy anything for ourselves with that money! It's all

The Michael Jackson Allegations

going toward our son being okay!!!” This was around the time that I knew I had to find another dentist. No drug can hide the fact that one’s skin is crawling.

The thing is, though, I never thought that Michael’s whole thing with kids was sexual. Never. Granted, it was miles from appropriate, but just because it wasn’t normal doesn’t mean that it had to be perverse. Those aren’t the only two choices for what can happen between an adult and an unrelated child spending time together. Even if that adult has had too much plastic surgery and what would appear to be tattooed makeup on his face. And yes, he had an amusement park, a zoo, a movie theater, popcorn, candy, and an elephant. But to draw a line under all that and add it up to the assumption that he fiendishly rubbed his hands together as he assembled this giant super spiderweb to lure and trap kids into it is just bad math.

[...]

But wait! Check this out! Let’s say your “really good-looking son” started hanging out with this odd-looking famous multi-multimillionaire that could maybe be persuaded to give you twenty-two million dollars if you threatened to tell everyone in the world that he touched your son’s underage, maybe-not-even-fully-grown-yet member. Well, I don’t know what you’d do? But when my dentist was presented with a choice between integrity and twenty-two million dollars, you’ll never guess what he did! That’s right—he went for the cash! But hey, he was only human-ish, right? But really, who could blame him? I mean, besides you and me and anyone else alive who cares about ruining their kid’s life, who else could blame Dr. Chandler for what he did? (I’ll wait while you think.)” [6]

Apparently, despite having no evidence, Evan Chandler assumed that the relationship between his son and Jackson was or would turn sexual and he hoped to tie the entertainer to himself through that. In this context it becomes clear why he would suggest that Jackson move in with them. According to *All That Glitters*, Evan assumed his son and Jackson were “lovers”. If you are wondering why and how someone could have such twisted ideas about the nature of supposed child molestation, you will have to read the later chapter entitled **[Victor Gutierrez and his role in the allegations against Michael Jackson](#)**.

On Memorial Day Weekend, beginning on May 28, Jackson spent one more weekend in Evan’s house. According to *All That Glitters*:

“Michael and Jordie had been off in their own little world all day, as if Evan didn’t exist.” [1; page 45]

and

“Monique reiterated her opinion that Michael was taking up too much of Jordie’s life. But this time she offered an additional observation. “Jordie doesn’t even know you’re in the room, Evan. Can’t you see what’s going on? They’re in love!” The minute the L word left Monique’s mouth, Evan believed she was right. “It

The Michael Jackson Allegations

should have been a dead giveaway,” Evan recalled weeks later, when Jordie came walking in the house that night wearing tight black pants, white socks, black loafers and a black fedora, and Michael came walking in right behind him wearing the same riling. Or when they ran off into the living room together after dinner and closed the door behind them, leaving me to work alone on the history paper. Or that Michael never once called Jordie by name, referring to him instead by affectionate nicknames like ‘Applehead’ and ‘Doo Doo Head.’”

“Do you think it’s physical?” Evan asked his wife. “I don’t know?” Monique answered. “It could just be infatuation. But whatever it is, it’s not good for Jordie.” [1; page 45]

How playing together, enjoying each other’s company, silly nicknames, and Jordan dressing the same way as his favorite pop star who also happened to be his friend, is a sign of sexual abuse or a sexual relationship is never explained. As for the nicknames, Jackson was well known to have called many of his friends and family members those exact same names, including his nephews, nieces, cousins and later his children.

(For example, a friend of Jackson’s, *Dr. William Van Valin* mentioned this nickname in his 2012 book entitled *Private Conversations in Neverland with Michael Jackson*:

“Michael tried to get Paris [Jackson] to say hi, but all she did was bury her head in his pajama bottoms. This made Michael laugh a little and he said, “Paris, you applehead.” Eventually after hearing this word used a number of different times over the next few months I figured out that ‘Applehead’ was actually a term of endearment that Michael used for anyone who was being silly.” [7])

According to *All That Glitters*, the next morning Evan asked his son whether the relationship between him and the star was sexual – apparently just as bluntly as he supposedly asked Jackson before:

“I’ll be there in a minute,” Evan said, and as Jordie turned to leave, he added, “Hey, Jordie, are you and Michael doin’ it?”

“That’s disgusting!” Jordie reacted. “I’m not into that.”

“Just kidding.”

Evan explained it this way. “It was crude, but I was so anxious, I decided on the spur of the moment to say it because I figured it would elicit an unplanned response.” Jordie’s repulsion brought Evan great relief.” [1; page 46]

Despite his “relief” Evan apparently did not give up. According to *All That Glitters*, Jackson complained about a strong headache that morning. (This is not mentioned in the Chandler book, but we know from the 2013 AEG trial that Jackson had a scalp surgery a couple of weeks before because of the long lasting effects of his injuries from his 1984 Pepsi commercial accident when his hair caught fire.) Evan gave him Aspirin and Tylenol but they did not work. He called his anesthesiologist, *Mark Torbiner* for advice who came over and brought some Toradol with him, which is a non-narcotic equivalent to Demerol. At least that

The Michael Jackson Allegations

is what they claimed to have administered to Jackson. According to their story, Evan injected 30 mg of it into Jackson's gluteus, but Jackson was still in pain, so Evan administered another 30 mg.

It is worth noting that in her book Carrie Fisher described both Evan Chandler and his anesthesiologist as two of those Hollywood doctors who abused medications:

"But getting back to the special medical access I mentioned earlier, I had this dentist at the time, a Dr. Evan Chandler, who was a very strange character. He was what would be referred to as the Dentist to the Stars! And as one of the people who would have unnecessary dental work just for the morphine, this man was one of those people who could arrange such a welcome service. He referred his patients to a mobile anesthesiologist who would come into the office to put you out for the dental work. And as if that wasn't glorious enough, this anesthesiologist could also be easily and financially persuaded to come to your house to administer the morphine for your subsequent luxury pain relief. And I would extend my arms, veins akimbo, and say to this man—"Send me away, but don't send me all the way." [6]

Whatever Evan and Torbiner administered to Jackson and with whatever intention, after that, it is claimed that the star showed drunk-like symptoms: *"he was acting weird, babbling incoherently and slurring his speech"* [1; page 47]. According to Ray Chandler's book, after a while the entertainer began to sober up, and was in a somewhat coherent but still uninhibited condition. It is then said that Evan decided to take advantage of the situation to ask him questions about his sexuality, whether he was gay. Jackson answered he was not. According to the book, Jackson did not feel well and remained in bed all day – and despite of the claim that Evan was suspicious of Jackson molesting Jordan he put the drugged-up entertainer to sleep in his two sons' bedroom.

Ray Chandler describes Evan checking on the star three times that night. The third time, it is claimed, Jordan sneaked into Jackson's bed (not the other way around) and they were sleeping in a "spooning" position *"with Michael's arm wrapped tightly around the boy, his hand resting on the boy's crotch on the outside of the covers"* [1; page 48]. It is stated they were both fully clothed, but according to Ray Chandler, this scene reinforced Evan's "suspicions".

We cannot know how much, if anything of this is true. This is Ray Chandler's account of Evan Chandler's story and we only have his words and they may well be only half-truths, twisted "truth", exaggerated "truth" or a total fabrication. According to the story in Ray Chandler's book, upon observing this scene, that allegedly deeply troubled Evan, he did not do anything. He did not wake up Jackson and Jordan to question them about it, nor did he question them about it the next morning. Apparently he just walked out of the room and kept the story to himself.

Whatever Evan saw or did not see in reality, it seems he could not convince even himself, because right after the description of this scene we read in *All That Glitters*:

"Even if there was no sex, Jordie's personality had been seriously altered. As he morphed day by day into a pint-sized clone of Michael, he withdrew further and further from his family and friends." [1; page 49]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

On June 9 at the preschool graduation of Evan's other son, "Cody" Evan asked Jordan what he would do if he asked him not to go on tour with Jackson, to which the boy answered: *"I'd go anyway"* [1; page 53]. When Jordan asked him to give him a good reason why he shouldn't go, this conversation is quoted:

"What if I said you could be dead in five years if you went on tour?"

Jordie looked puzzled. "Well, of course, I don't want to die. But why would I?"

"Because you guys lied to me!" Evan erupted. "And you know how much I hate liars. You're not going on the tour. Now let's go, I'm taking you home."

[...]

"Thank God he didn't ask me what they had lied about," Evan later recalled. "I don't know what I would have said, other than Michael had lied about his dentist." [1; page 53-54]*

(* In *All That Glitters* it is claimed Evan assumed Jackson lied to him when he claimed he was not a patient of a certain dentist who had AIDS.)

Like in the above extract, throughout the book Evan keeps accusing others of lying, while in almost the same breath he admits to lies he had been telling Jordan and other people.

The book alleges that on Father's Day (June 20) Jordan refused to call his father and when Evan called him he refused to talk to him: *"He doesn't want to talk to you," [June Chandler] said, "And I'm not getting involved."* [1; page 59] When days later the boy still refused to talk to him on the phone he threatened his ex-wife and son: *"Let me tell you something, June. He better call me, and it better be soon, or you're all going to be sorry. You know me. I've had enough!"* [1; page 59]

According to *All That Glitters*, Evan left this threatening message on June's answering machine on July 7:

"It's Wednesday, July 7. June, make sure you play this message for Michael and Jordie. I'm going to repeat that. June, make sure you play this message for Michael and Jordie. All three of you are responsible for what is going on. No one is a neutral party. Since Jordie has repeatedly refused to return my phone calls, this will be my last voluntary attempt to communicate. I will be at your house at San Lorenzo this Friday. July 9. at 8:30 in the morning. Take my word for it, there is nothing else any of you has to do that is more important than being at this meeting." [1; page 62]

According to Ray Chandler's book, Evan attributed Jordan's refusal to talk to him to Jackson's influence on the boy – as if Evan's mania, threats, temper tantrums and weird sexual suggestions and questions would not be enough to alienate a child.

On July 8, 1993 David Schwartz, June Chandler's then husband, recorded three telephone conversations he had with Evan Chandler which will be discussed in the next chapter.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Sources:

[1] Raymond Chandler – All That Glitters: The Crime and the Cover-Up (Windsong Press Ltd, September 2004)

[2] June Chandler's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (April 11, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[3] Brett Barnes' testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (May 5, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[4] Dr. Richard Gardner's interview with Jordan Chandler as leaked in February 2003
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/j-chandler-gardner-interview.pdf>

[5] Mary A. Fischer: Was Michael Jackson Framed? (GQ, October 1994)
<http://www.buttonmonkey.com/misc/maryfischer.html>

[6] Carrie Fisher – Shockaholic (Simon & Schuster, November 2011)

[7] William Van Valin II – Private Conversations in Neverland with Michael Jackson (p. 9) (CreateSpace Independent Publishing Platform, December 20, 2012)

[8] Frank Cascio – My Friend Michael: An Ordinary Friendship with an Extraordinary Man (HarperCollins, Kindle Edition, November 15, 2011)

Taped phone conversations between Evan Chandler and David Schwartz

The context and the origin of the tapes

In this chapter I present extracts from three telephone conversations that took place between Jordan Chandler's father Evan Chandler and the boy's stepfather *David Schwartz* on July 8, 1993. The conversations were taped by Schwartz who handed the tape over to Michael Jackson's private investigator Anthony Pellicano a day later. A few months later the tape was submitted to a Court in a civil lawsuit between Schwartz and Evan Chandler. The full transcript of the conversations can be read [here](#).

(Note: Besides the three conversations between Evan Chandler and David Schwartz there were other conversations on the tape, which are included in the transcript as well. The conversations which have relevance to us can be found on page 4-39, page 136-160 and page 160-243. Some names, such as the name of Evan Chandler's second wife or the name of his son from his second marriage were changed in the transcript in order to protect their privacy.)

It has to be emphasized that these conversations took place **before** Jordan allegedly "confessed" to his father about the alleged abuse [for details about how Jordan allegedly "confessed" see the later chapter entitled [How Did The Allegations of the Chandlers Emerge?](#)] and they took place while Jordan himself denied any wrongdoing by Jackson. This is very important to keep in mind throughout reading the conversation.

Perhaps it is also worth noting that journalist Diane Dimond (whom Ray Chandler's book, *All That Glitters* describes as Evan Chandler's "closest ally" in the media [1; page 194]) reported after Evan's death in 2009 that Evan suffered from bipolar disorder.

In the conversation Evan Chandler does not explicitly accuse Jackson of molestation, in fact he indicates that he has been advised by his lawyer to be careful with what he says and what he reveals to other people about his "plan", but he does insinuate an "intimate relationship" between the singer and his son – again, this before his son allegedly confessed to him.

Below I am going to examine and address extracts from this conversation, and also put them into the context of the Chandlers', especially Evan Chandler's, other actions.

The conversations

Part 1

MR. CHANDLER: Let me put it to you this way: I have a set routine of words that I'm going to go in there that have been rehearsed and I'm going to say.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: Okay? Because I don't want to say anything that could be used against me.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *So I know exactly what I can say. That's why I'm bringing the tape recorder.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *I have some things on paper to show a few people –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— and that's it. My whole part is going to take two or three minutes, and I'm going to turn around [tape irregularity], and that's it. **There's not going to be anything said, other than what I've been told to say -***

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— and I'm going to turn around and leave, and they're going to have a decision to make.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *And based on that decision, I'll decide whether or not we're going to talk again or whether it's going to go further.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *I have to make a phone call. As soon as I leave the house, I get on the telephone.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *I make a phone call.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *Say "Go" or I say, "Don't go yet," and that's –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— the way it's gonna to be. **I've been told what to do, and I have to do it. I'm not — I happen to know what's going to be going on, see? They don't have to say anything to me. [Tape irregularity] "you have refused to listen to me. Now you're going to have to listen to me. This is my position. Give it a thought."***

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: ***"Think it over." I'm not saying anything bad about anybody, okay? I've got it all on paper.***

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *I'm going to hand out the paper so that I don't inadvertently [tape irregularity], handing out the paper, "Michael, here's your paper. June, here's your paper."*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *"Compare papers. Read this whole thing. This is my feelings about it. Do you want to talk further? We'll talk again."*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *"If you don't" [tape irregularity] — but, see, all I'm trying to do now, they have forced me to go [tape irregularity] on paper and give it to them to read —*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— because [tape irregularity]. I mean, isn't that pitiful? Now, why would they want to cut me out, to go this far, spend this much money, spend so much time in my life crying, being away from my practice, not paying [tape irregularity] everybody else? Why would they want to put me through that? And I made it very clear to June that she was putting me through that because I didn't want any misunderstandings. I've done everything I could to appeal to her. (Inaudible) is cold and heart- — absolutely cold and heartless. That's all —*

In the above extract Evan talks about the meeting he demanded to have with Jordan, Jordan's mother June and Michael Jackson on July 9, that was mentioned at the end of the previous chapter.

The meeting that Evan wanted on July 9 did not take place, but later, on August 4, another meeting did with Evan, Jordan, Michael Jackson and Jackson's private investigator Anthony Pellicano present. The details of that meeting will be discussed in the chapter entitled **The Chanders' Monetary Demands**.

The choreography of that August 4 meeting went very similarly to what Evan planned for the July 9 meeting: instead of talking in his own words he relied on paper to avoid saying *"anything that could be used against me"*. As you will see later in this chapter Evan was advised by a lawyer how to carry out his moves, already before his son allegedly "confessed" to him about the alleged abuse.

MR. CHANDLER: *[...] By the way, they're going on tour on August 15th. They're going to be gone. They're going to be out of the country —*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— for four months.*

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Is that bad?*

MR. CHANDLER: *Well, I'm not going to be able to communicate with them about this when they're gone, am I?*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *I mean, but you think that –*

MR. CHANDLER: *By the way, they're not going.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *They don't know that yet, but they are not going.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *So, I mean, especially if they don't show up tomorrow, they're definitely not going. They'll be lucky if Michael even –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Let me ask you — let me ask you this –*

MR. CHANDLER: *— tour (inaudible) get canceled.*

Jackson was scheduled to begin the 1993 leg of his *Dangerous World Tour* in August. He invited June, Jordan and Jordan's sister to join him on the tour, like he did other families as well, and like he often did with many people over the years. This did not sit well with Evan and, according to Ray Chandler's book, he tried to talk both his son and his ex-wife out of it but they wanted to go nevertheless. Evan here declares "*they don't know that yet, but they are not going*" and even indicates that Jackson might be forced to cancel his tour. This is **before** Jordan allegedly "confessed" to Evan about the alleged abuse.

MR. CHANDLER: *I've already told you I have — I'm not allowed to say anything more –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— than I've already prepared. It's on paper.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Is it your –*

MR. CHANDLER: *I'm not going in to –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Is it because of your attorney?*

MR. CHANDLER: *What?*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Because of your attorney?*

MR. CHANDLER: *Yeah.*

The Michael Jackson Allegations

This again supports that Evan was coached by a lawyer about what to do and how to do it. This lawyer, as we know by now, was Barry K. Rothman. Evan had more to tell about his lawyer in the conversation:

MR. CHANDLER: He's willing to meet with them. Right now he'd like to kill them all. I picked the nastiest mother-fucker I could find.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: The only reason that I'm meeting with them tomorrow is, the real fact of the matter is –

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — because of Monique. [A pseudonym used for Evan's then-wife in the transcript.]

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: Monique begged me to do it.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: She said, "You're out of control" –

[...]

MR. CHANDLER: — (simultaneous, inaudible) I'm only going there because of Monique, because, to tell you the truth, Dave, it would be a lot easier for me and a lot more satisfying –

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — to see everybody get destroyed –

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — like they've destroyed me, but it would be a lot easier. And Monique just kept telling me, "You don't want to really do this," and she finally [tape irregularity] for the sake of everything that we've all had in the past –

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — to give it one more try, and that's the only reason, because this attorney I found — I mean, I interviewed several, and I picked the nastiest son of a bitch –

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. CHANDLER: — *I could find, and all he wants to do is get this out in the public as fast as he can, as big as he can –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: — *and humiliate as many people as he can, and he's got a bad [tape irregularity] –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Do you think that's good?*

MR. CHANDLER: — *(simultaneous, inaudible) he's costing me a lot of money.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Do you think that's good?*

MR. CHANDLER: *I think that's great. I think it's terrific. The best. Because when somebody — when somebody tells you that they don't want to talk to you –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: — *you have to talk to them –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: — *you have to get their attention. It's a matter of life and death. That's how I'm taking it. I have to talk to them.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *This is life and death for my son. I have to get their attention. If I don't get it, if I haven't gotten it on the phone and I don't get it tomorrow –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: — *this guy will certainly get it. That's the next step. And you want to know something? I even have somebody after him if he doesn't [tape irregularity]. But I don't want [tape malfunctioned]. I'm not kidding. I mean what I told you before.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *It's true. I mean, it could be a massacre if I don't get what I want. But I do believe this person will get what he wants.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *So he would just really love [tape irregularity] nothing better than to have this go forward. He is nasty, he is mean –*

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: – he is very smart [tape irregularity], and he's hungry for the publicity [tape irregularity] better for him.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: And that's where it'll go –

MR. SCHWARTZ: You don't think everyone loses?

MR. CHANDLER: (Simultaneous, inaudible) totally humiliate him in every way –

MR. SCHWARTZ: That — everyone doesn't lose in that?

MR. CHANDLER: That's not the issue. See, the issue is that if I have to go that far –

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — I can't stop and think "Who wins and who loses?"

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: All I can think about is I only have one goal, and the goal is to get their attention –

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — so that [tape irregularity] concerns are, and as long as they don't want to talk to me, I can't tell them what my concerns are, so I have to go step by step, each time escalating the attention-getting mechanism, and that's all I regard him as, as an attention-getting mechanism. Unfortunately, after that, it's totally out of [tape irregularity]. It'll take on so much momentum of its own that it's going to be out of all our control. It's going to be monumentally huge, and I'm not going to have any way to stop it. No one else is either at that point. **I mean, once I make that phone call, this guy's just going to destroy everybody in site in any devious, nasty, cruel way that he can do it. And I've given him full authority to do that.** To go beyond tomorrow, that would mean I have done every possible thing in my individual power to tell them to sit down and talk to me; and if they still [tape irregularity], I got to escalate the attention-getting mechanism. He's the next one. I can't go to somebody nice [tape irregularity]. It doesn't work with them. I already found that out. Get some niceness and just go fuck yourself.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: Basically, **what they have to know, ultimately, is that their lives are over, if they don't sit down.** One way or the other, it'll either go to

The Michael Jackson Allegations

the next step or the [tape irregularity]. I'm not stopping until I get their attention. Do I [tape irregularity] the only goal is right now I have to do what I think is best for Jordy –

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— and I think what's going on now is bad for Jordy, and therefore any alternative is better. If I'm wrong, they should sit down, and they should tell me why I'm wrong.*

Even though Jordan Chandler himself at this point was adamant that Jackson never did anything inappropriate to him, here Evan Chandler rants about having picked a lawyer who was “*the nastiest son of a bitch*”, who wanted to “*destroy everybody in sight in any devious, nasty, cruel way that he can do it*”, who wanted to “*humiliate as many people as he can*” and who was “*hungry for the publicity*”. This latter remark, by the way, goes against the Chandlers’ claim that they refused to testify against Jackson in a criminal court because they were wary of the publicity that would have been unavoidable in a high profile case such as this. In fact, Evan Chandler deliberately picked a lawyer who was “*hungry for the publicity*”. [More about this claim by the Chandlers in later chapters.]

But was not Evan Chandler just a desperate father who wanted to communicate a legitimate concern to his ex-wife and Jackson, but was not heard, so he had to resort to desperate measures?

According to Ray Chandler’s book *All That Glitters*, at this point Evan had already communicated his “concerns” to Jackson, his ex-wife June and his son Jordan as he had the fixed, preconceived idea that the relationship between his son and Jackson was sexual, however, his son rejected this idea, as well as Jackson. As for what Evan based those concerns on, it was discussed in the previous chapter entitled **Evan Chandler’s “Suspensions”**. In that chapter you can see that there are many circumstances which make the self-portrayal of Evan as a concerned father dubious at best.

To put Evan’s alleged concerns further into a perspective please also read the chapters entitled: **Michael Jackson’s first accuser – meet the Chandler family!**, **The Chandlers’ Monetary Demands** and **Evan Chandler’s 1996 lawsuit against Michael Jackson**.

Additionally having concerns alone would not explain elaborate plans to destroy and humiliate people (and notice the plural – apparently Evan does not only talk about Jackson) in “*any devious, nasty, cruel way*” while the son himself denies any wrongdoing by Jackson.

Rather than a concern for his son, it seems to be more about Evan’s hurt ego as reflected on when he says: “*I’m only going there because of Monique, because, to tell you the truth, Dave, it would be a lot easier for me and a lot more satisfying to see everybody get destroyed like they’ve destroyed me, but it would be a lot easier.*”

Later in the conversation you will see that Evan does not resent only Jackson, but also June and even Jordan for what they have – in Evan’s mind at least – done **to him**.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Part 2

MR. CHANDLER: *That's silly. No. Michael has to be there. Michael has to be there. He's the main one. He's the one I want.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *I mean, do you think he's a bad guy?*

MR. CHANDLER: *Michael?*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *He's an evil guy. He's worse than bad.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah. And why do you believe that?*

MR. CHANDLER: *Huh?*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Why do you believe that?*

MR. CHANDLER: ***I have the evidence to prove it.***

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *You'll believe it, too, when you hear –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Wait. Let me ask you something. I mean, you trust me, right?*

MR. CHANDLER: ***Let me put it to you this way, Dave. Nobody in this world was allowed to come between this family of June, me and Jordy. That was the hard [tape irregularity] be the opposite. That's evil. That's one reason why he's evil. I spoke to him about it, Dave. I even told him that [tape irregularity] the family.***

MR. SCHWARTZ: *When did you talk to him?*

MR. CHANDLER: *About that?*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *Months ago. When I first met him I told him that.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *That's the law. That's the first thing he knew. Nobody's allowed to do that. Now there's no family anymore.*

Evan accuses Michael Jackson of coming between “*this family of June, me and Jordy*”. However, according to June Chandler’s 2005 testimony at Michael Jackson’s trial, Evan neglected his son before Jackson came into their life, and Evan neglected his other two

The Michael Jackson Allegations

children after the allegations, who were raised by another man. You can read more about Evan's relationship with his family in the chapter entitled **Michael Jackson's first accuser – meet the Chandler family!** I will address Evan's claim of having evidence later in this article.

*MR. CHANDLER: I don't know where it'll go, but I'm saying is that when people – when you — when people cut off communication totally, you only have two choices: To forget about them, or you get frustrated by their action. I can't forget about them. I love them. That's it. I don't like them. I still love Jordy, but I do not like them because I do not like the people that they've become, but I do love them, and because I love them I don't want to see them [tape irregularity]. That's why I was willing to talk. I have nothing to gain by talking. **If I go through with this, I win big time. There's no way that I lose. I've checked that out inside out.***

MR. SCHWARTZ: But when you say “winning,” what are you talking about, “winning”?

MR. CHANDLER: I will get everything I want, and they will be totally — they will be destroyed forever. They will be destroyed. June is gonna lose Jordy. She will have no right to ever see him again.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: That's a fact, Dave. That's what —

MR. SCHWARTZ: Does that help —

MR. CHANDLER: — Michael the career will be over.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Does that help Jordy?

MR. CHANDLER: Michael's career will be over.

MR. SCHWARTZ: And does that help Jordy?

MR. CHANDLER: It's irrelevant to me.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah, but I mean the bottom line is —

MR. CHANDLER: The bottom line to me is, yes, June is harming him, and Michael is harming him. I can prove that, and I will prove that

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — and if they force me to go to court about it, I will [tape irregularity], and I will be granted custody. She will have no rights whatsoever.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Again, let me remind you that the conversation takes place **before** Jordan's alleged confession, and while the boy was adamant that Jackson never molested him. Yet Evan talks about "winning big time" and states that there was "no way that I lose. I've checked that out inside out", that "they will be destroyed forever", that "June is gonna lose Jordy", and that "Michael's career will be over".

Although Evan claims here and later in the conversation that he "can prove that", in actuality the Chandlers never had any factual evidence against Jackson. In their book Evan himself claims in the chapter entitled "August 4" that he was wary of going to the police because it would have been just Jordan's word against Jackson's word [1; page 109]. However, at this point Evan does not even have Jordan's word to support him.

MR. CHANDLER: *This is –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *— detrimental to him?*

MR. CHANDLER: *Extremely harmful to him.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *Everybody agrees with that. I mean, they — it's their opinions that have convinced me to not stay away. You know, I'm not confrontational. I've got an [tape irregularity] inclination to do what you do, say, "Okay. Go fuck yourself. Go do what you want to do, and, you know, call me some day. I'll see you then. I got a [tape irregularity]," but I've been so convinced by professional opinions that I have been negligent in not stepping in sooner that now it's made me insane. Now I actually feel [tape irregularity] –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Oh, I do, and I –*

MR. CHANDLER: *— [tape irregularity] more important than the money, if the kid's more important than you are, and they're more important than I am –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *And they are.*

[...]

MR. CHANDLER: *I never did before, but when her getting her last word is now going to be harmful to Jordy, yes, I am going to step in, and, again, I'm not telling you this is my — my opinion was formed by –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— but this is my perception of [tape irregularity] professional opinions to make sure I wasn't going off the deep end here.*

[...]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. CHANDLER: *What do I do? I mean, in the opinion of these experts, I would be a negligent father if I did not do what I am now doing.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *In fact, in their opinion I have been negligent not to put a stop to [tape irregularity] opinion. I happen to agree with them now. I didn't agree with them at first. Michael [tape irregularity] nice [tape irregularity] –*

Evan claims that other people convinced him that the relationship between Jackson and Jordan was “*extremely harmful*”. Who were these alleged “professionals” and “experts”? If we are going by the Chandlers’ own story in *All That Glitters* at this point they had not contacted any psychologist, psychiatrist or therapist (the first therapist they contacted was Dr. Mathis Abrams on July 14). They do mention that Evan asked people like actress Carrie Fisher and through her a friend of hers who was a security expert, and Jackson’s long-time dermatologist Arnold Klein, but these people are not experts and professionals, at least not in the field of child abuse, nor did they ever talk to Jordan. According to *All That Glitters*, Klein told them that they had nothing to worry about and Fisher’s account in her 2011 autobiography *Shockaholic* about how this story occurred is significantly different to the Chandlers’ account that we can read in *All That Glitters*. Fisher’s portrayal of Evan is anything but a “concerned father”, on the contrary, as you have seen in the previous chapter.

Alternatively Evan could mean his lawyer Barry Rothman by an “expert”, but again, Rothman was not a child abuse expert and child abuse allegations were not even his main field, other than once previously having represented a woman who during a child support and custody battle accused her ex-husband of sexually molesting their child [2]. Additionally, as you have seen from this conversation earlier, Rothman was “*hungry for the publicity*” and he would have loved “*nothing better than to have this go forward*”, so he had his own vested interest in convincing Evan about going forward with what promised to be an extremely high profile case.

MR. SCHWARTZ: *So why do you think he’s not nice?*

MR. CHANDLER: *Why? Because he broke up the family, that’s why.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *And he was put on notice from the first sentence out of my mouth was, “Michael, I think you’re really a great guy. You’re welcome into the family, as long as you are who you seem to be, but don’t take anything [tape irregularity].” I mean, that to me was the worst thing anybody could do to me.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *And you think he did it?*

MR. CHANDLER: *Well, Dave, if he wasn’t in the picture, everything would be as it was. I’m not –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *But that’s sort of –*

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. CHANDLER: — saying that he did it premeditatively, and I'm not saying he did it on his own.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: I'm saying that he might have — it might have just evolved that way, and it might have evolved that [tape irregularity] desire, so **I'm blaming all three of them**, but when I come to that [tape irregularity], it really makes me hate June because the family was inviolate, [tape irregularity] felt about it. There was nothing I had. I mean, you came in this family and made it better. It was great. Someone else comes along and breaks it up. You know how [tape irregularity]. Okay. So do I [tape irregularity] coming into the family who's going to do good things for the family.

MR. SCHWARTZ: But, I mean —

MR. CHANDLER: Michael divided and conquered, Dave.

MR. SCHWARTZ: He what?

MR. CHANDLER: He divided and conquered.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Well —

MR. CHANDLER: He did, Dave. He did.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Oh —

[...]

MR. CHANDLER: The bottom line is — the bottom line is he took Jordy out of the family with June's help.

[...]

MR. CHANDLER: — problem with that, then that problem has ultimately ended up bringing the family to this point. But you're not solely to blame for it. It doesn't mean that June was still — I didn't do anything that — they didn't have the right to take my kid away from me, to break up the family.

Evan's main problem seems to be that Jackson allegedly "broke up the family" and it seems to be about Evan's hurt ego and jealousy of Jackson: "I mean, that to me was the worst thing anybody could do **to me**." He blames "all three of them" — Jackson, June and Jordan.

Part 3

MR. CHANDLER: Let me put it to you this way, okay? You put all of — you put the three of them on the stand (simultaneous, inaudible) —

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. CHANDLER: — any questions, and they will all be asked questions, and they will all have psychological examinations —

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — (simultaneous, inaudible) given lie detector tests.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: I'm going to tell you what. There is no excuse in law for June having done what she does. Despite the fact that you might say it's your fault —

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — whatever you say is going to [tape irregularity] capable of making her own decisions —

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — and she made those decisions to the harm of her son, despite the fact that, yeah, maybe she's insecure, maybe she's macho on the surface, and maybe you fucked her over. Maybe you did. Maybe you didn't.

Evan was fantasizing about putting all three of them on the stand, Jordan included — this **before** Jordan's alleged "confession" and while the boy was adamant that Jackson had never molested him.

MR. CHANDLER: And I know what you're saying, and it breaks my heart, but I truly believe my son is being harmed greatly and that his life — he could be fucked up for the rest of his life [tape irregularity].

MR. SCHWARTZ: You gotta tell me why you think he's being screwed up.

MR. CHANDLER: I have the evidence.

MR. SCHWARTZ: I know, but what — I don't know what evidence. I don't know what you're talking about.

MR. CHANDLER: Well, you'll see.

MR. SCHWARTZ: But why can't you tell me? I swear —

MR. CHANDLER: You show up in court and you'll see it on the big fucking screen —

MR. SCHWARTZ: But what —

MR. CHANDLER: — and then you'll know what I'm talking about.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *And you'll hear in on tape recordings.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *You'll hear it all. You'll see it all, just like I have.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *It cost me thousands, tens of thousands of dollars –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— to get the information I got, and I — you know I don't have that kind of money –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— and I spent it, and I'm willing to spend more, and I'm willing –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— to go down financially to –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Do you think that's going to help Jordy?*

MR. CHANDLER: *Dave, Jordy's – I believe that Jordy's already irreparably harmed.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *That's my true belief.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *I mean, do you think that he's fucking him?*

MR. CHANDLER: *I don't know. I have no idea.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *But harmed in — in just been spoiled?*

MR. CHANDLER: *No.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Just tell me –*

MR. CHANDLER: *You know, you gotta forgive me for one thing, but I have been told by my lawyer that if I say one thing to anybody –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah. Okay.*

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. CHANDLER: — *don't bother calling him again. He said this case is so open [tape irregularity] "You open your mouth and you blow it," he said, "just don't come back to me."*

Here Evan talks about having physical evidence against Jackson that can be shown on a big screen and tape recordings. No such evidence was ever produced during the Chandler investigation.

Like it will be discussed in the chapter entitled **How Did The Allegations of the Chandlers Emerge?**, in Ray Chandler's book *All That Glitters* it is claimed that, in order to get a "confession" out of Jordan, Evan lied to him about having bugged his room, but the bluff did not work on the boy. Whether Evan really lied to Jordan about it or he did indeed bug Jordan's bedroom only what he taped did not produce evidence against Jackson (or maybe even produced exculpatory evidence) I cannot decide, but the fact is that there has never been any kind of physical or taped evidence that Evan could use against Jackson. In actuality, like mentioned before, in his brother's book *All That Glitters* Evan himself says in the chapter entitled "August 4" that he was wary of going to the police because it would have been just Jordan's word against Jackson's word [1; page 109], so Evan's claims in this conversation about having evidence are nothing but a bluff. Evan also claims the evidence and information cost him "*thousands, ten thousands of dollars*", but considering the above mentioned facts this seems to be another bluff.

In this part Schwartz directly and quite bluntly asks him whether Evan suspects sexual molestation to which Evan says he has no idea and then proceeds to saying he was told by his lawyer not to say anything to anyone to not "*blow it*".

MR. CHANDLER: *And let me tell you this, by the way: What harm would it be to you, what harm would it be to your relationship to June, if Michael wasn't around anymore? You say that you [tape irregularity] your fault. You say that you made her insecure.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Wait.*

MR. CHANDLER: *So if he wasn't around anymore –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah?*

MR. CHANDLER: — *what do you think she's going to do? She's going to come back to you. She doesn't need you anymore. She doesn't even want you around anymore. She's told me and she's told you — I'm sure she's told you that if [tape irregularity] Michael she'll get rid of you. She's told me that. She means it.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Well –*

MR. CHANDLER: *She means –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *The only thing I told you before is I told her I didn't want him buying her things in Europe. I gave her some money. And then when he*

The Michael Jackson Allegations

did buy her things and she told me, I got pissed off at her. And that's it, and that's really the whole thing. That's all we ever talked about.

MR. CHANDLER: *How do you feel about her going off on tour with him? You told me when you were there the other day that everybody's been calling you saying "Your wife's been [tape irregularity]" –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *It does [tape irregularity] –*

MR. CHANDLER: *And let me tell you something, by the way. That's the best thing that could happen to him, is that people think he's interested in June.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *The fact is, he has no interest in her whatsoever. The fact is he doesn't even care about her. He doesn't even like her. He's [tape irregularity] –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *You don't think he likes her?*

MR. CHANDLER: *I know he doesn't. He told me he doesn't. He can't stand her. He told me that when –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Huh! He can't stand her?*

MR. CHANDLER: *No. He told me that when he was in my house.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *Yeah. At that point he liked us better than — Jordy too. Jordy's the same as Michael. It was a simple divide and conquer. They felt us both out.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *They saw who was going to let them do what they wanted to do, and then they made their choice.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *And until I had a talk with Jordy one day at [tape irregularity] –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— they were gonna come live with me. They were gonna pack up, leave June's house, and come here.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. CHANDLER: *That's what they were going to do, because they were getting more resistance from her than they were getting from me. You cannot tell this stuff — you cannot — I'm confiding in you, okay, Dave?*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Okay.*

Evan tries to play on Schwartz's jealousy of Jackson in order to convince him to join forces with him against the singer. Then he proceeds to claim that Jackson cannot stand June and that *"Jordy's the same as Michael. It was a simple divide and conquer. They felt us both out"*.

Of course, just because Evan claims this it does not mean it is true – just like his claim of having evidence was not true -, but it shows that in Evan's mind Jackson and Jordan were some kind of unit who acted together against him and June, and who only cared about which one of them would *"let them do what they wanted to do"*. Evan also claims they *"were gonna come live with me"* because *"they were getting more resistance from [June] than they were getting from me"*. Evan's claim of Jackson and Jordan getting more resistance from June than from him is contradictory with Evan's claims elsewhere where he represents June as the enabler of Jackson and himself as the saviour of his son.

MR. CHANDLER: *Okay. What I'm telling you is that Jordy and Michael are users.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *They had — they were gonna — they had their own relationship.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *They want to carry it out the way they want to carry it out. They don't want anybody getting in the way [tape irregularity] — least resistance, and that's the way they're going. They simply divided and conquered, and June went along with it. And she was wrong because she did it to the detriment of Jordy.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *Jordy is not old enough to make these kind of [tape irregularity] that he's making.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *But is that a huge life decision?*

MR. CHANDLER: *Oh, you bet it is.*

Here it becomes clear that Evan talks about the supposed relationship between Jordan and Jackson as a consensual one. He calls both of them *"users"* who *"don't want anybody getting in the way"*. Also he talks about this supposed *"relationship"* as a fact, when Jordan himself at this point denied any wrongdoing by Jackson and he only started to make allegations against the singer after his father took control over him.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

About how and why an educated adult would consider supposed child molestation a consensual romance you can read more in a later chapter entitled **Victor Gutierrez and his role in the allegations against Michael Jackson**. In that chapter the possible connection between Gutierrez and Evan Chandler will also be discussed.

While just a couple of sentences ago Evan said that Jackson and Jordan got more resistance from June than from him, here June is again the enabler who “*went along with it*”.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Do you think Jordy hates you?

MR. CHANDLER: If he doesn't, he's gonna hate me tomorrow.

MR. SCHWARTZ: But why do you –

MR. CHANDLER: (Simultaneous, inaudible) to –

MR. SCHWARTZ: Do you want that?

MR. CHANDLER: It doesn't matter what I want.

MR. SCHWARTZ: But why would you want him to hate you, and why would you want to put him through that –

MR. CHANDLER: Because all I care about is what happens to him in the long run.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Well, the long run, is that going to be healthy in the long run?

MR. CHANDLER: According to the experts?

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: Absolutely. According to the experts, if it goes on the way it is, he's doomed. He has no chance of ever being a happy, healthy, normal human being, no [tape irregularity].

MR. SCHWARTZ: So what happens if you force him not to see him?

MR. CHANDLER: Not to see Michael?

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: Nobody's saying for sure what will happen. Most people's feeling is that he's gonna go on and hate me for a long time and then some day when he gets older he'll thank me.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah. And why do you think he hates you now?

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. CHANDLER: I said I think he'll — I said he may or may not hate me now —

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — but he'll definitely hate me tomorrow. He'll hate me, why? Because I'm taking Michael away from him. That's why.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: And that's a —

MR. SCHWARTZ: So you really think Michael's bad for him?

MR. CHANDLER: I know Michael's bad for him.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: You know how I know that? Why would somebody, Dave — if you tell me this, think of this logically. What reason would he want us split up — [tape irregularity] would he want me out of the way? What would be the reason, unless he has something to hide?

MR. SCHWARTZ: But —

MR. CHANDLER: I know what he has to hide. I happen to know what it is.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: But I can't tell you.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Okay.

MR. CHANDLER: I'm just asking you in terms of logic. You know me. I'm not — I'm a pretty liberal guy.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: I don't get in anybody's way, okay? So, I mean, what reason would he want me out of the way to such an extent that neither one of them will take my phone calls, neither one of them will talk to me?

Evan claims Jackson wants him “out of the way” and he assumes the star has ulterior motives for that. In the previously quoted part of the conversation Evan claims that Jackson and Jordan “don't want anybody getting in the way” and now he says “I don't get in anybody's way, okay?” and that he is “a pretty liberal guy”. Considering what Evan assumes about the relationship between Jackson and Jordan and how he blames June for enabling Jackson and portrays himself as a concerned father, this is remarkable.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. CHANDLER: [...] *My approach to the whole thing is that the one person — the person who doesn't talk is the one who's wrong, period —*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: — *no matter what the action was, I believe everything is preventable, every bad action that anybody takes is — unless you're truly pathologic —*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: — *is probably preventable if you just found somebody who would sit [tape irregularity] you know what? They don't even have to talk back and give you [tape irregularity] if you get it out, everything will be okay, you know, but that's my approach. My approach is that the people who don't talk are the ones who are wrong.*

[...]

MR. SCHWARTZ: *I just said I am wrong, but here is the other — I mean, the thing is Jordy's 13 years old. I'm talking about adults. I mean, I don't know if he — I mean, you're his dad. You're his role model.*

MR. CHANDLER: *No, I'm not his role model.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yes, you are, definitely —*

MR. CHANDLER: *Not anymore.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *You are, positively, in the long run, you're his role model.*

MR. CHANDLER: *There is no — there isn't gonna be a long run if things went on like this. Don't you see? As long as I go along with whatever they want to do —*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: — *everything's okay. As soon as I say you can't [tape irregularity] anybody —*

To be clear: Jackson or Jordan did not indicate to Evan that they have some kind of “romantic” or sexual relationship that Evan or June needs to go along with. On the contrary. According to *All That Glitters*, when Evan asked Jordan about whether their relationship was sexual Jordan answered: “*That's disgusting! I'm not into that.*” [1; page 46]

While earlier Evan claimed he had evidence against Jackson, here he bases his suspicions on his belief that “*the person who doesn't talk is the one who's wrong*”.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Evan also complains that he is not Jordan's role model any more – from the context it seems, because Jackson is instead of him.

MR. CHANDLER: *There's no reason why they would have to cut me out unless they – unless they need me to be away so they can do certain things which I don't think are good to be doing.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *And I — and not only that, but I don't even have anything to say about it, okay? [tape irregularity] I think what they're doing and it isn't bad, and so maybe I'm wrong –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— but I'm not even getting a chance to express that.*

[...]

MR. CHANDLER: *I had a good communication with Michael.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *We were friends, you know. I liked him.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *I respected him and everything else for what he is, you know. There was no reason why he had to stop calling me. He could have called me.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *In fact, Dave, I – you ask Jordy. I sat in the room one day, and I talked to Michael and told him exactly what I want out of this whole relationship, what I want [tape irregularity], okay, so he wouldn't have to figure me out.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *And one of things I said is we always have to be able to talk to each other.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *That's the rule, okay, because I know that as soon as you stop talking weird things start going on and people [tape irregularity] –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Imaginations take over.*

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. CHANDLER: *Imagination will just kill you.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Right.*

While earlier Evan claimed he had evidence, here he says maybe he is wrong. He assumes things because he feels cut out and because Jackson stopped calling him and stopped talking to him. In fact, he concedes that because Jackson stopped talking to him “*weird things start going on*” and “*imagination will just kill you*”.

MR. CHANDLER: *And you want to know what I told her? I told her this. I said June — “Monique,” I said, “if you ever want to sleep with somebody else or if you don’t love me anymore, if you come to me and you tell me that [tape irregularity] out of the house and fuck his brains out, I’ll love you forever, I’ll support you and wish you well. But if it’s the other way around, you fuck him first and then you [tape irregularity], I’ll kill you, period.” I said, “Those are the rules. If you want to stay with me, you gotta understand that’s the only way I can survive. That’s how I live.*

Here Evan talks about his then-wife “Monique” and what would happen if she cheated on him. I quote this part to further illuminate Evan’s character and to put the next part into a context.

MR. CHANDLER: *And so if I wasn’t able to talk to her, this marriage would have been over a long time ago.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *Because [tape irregularity] –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Don’t we learn like that?*

MR. CHANDLER: *Because of my imagination, Dave.*

Here we get back to the topic of Evan’s imagination and this is how it is related to the main subject of the conversation. Evan says if he would not be able to discuss his insecurities, fears and jealousy with his wife (this is discussed in a bit more detail in the full conversation) their marriage “*would have been over a long time ago*” because Evan would imagine things. Basically Evan admits that when people stop talking to him he has a tendency of imaginaning bad things about those people.

MR. CHANDLER: *I know that after tomorrow — in fact, not even after tomorrow. It’s already happened. I don’t ever want anything to do with June anymore because June is not part of my family. In my mind, she’s died. I don’t ever want to talk to her again. [tape irregularity] **sitting on the stand being totally humiliated or at the end of a shotgun. That’s the only way I want to see June now.** She’s gotta [tape irregularity] do this to kid. Again, it’s not right. Can do it to me. Can’t do it to my kid. It’s not right.*

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Evan has just admitted that he could be wrong and rather than having facts he imagines things, yet he is very aggressive towards June and wants to see her “*sitting on the stand being humiliated or at the end of a shotgun*”.

MR. CHANDLER: You want to know something? You don't even have to ask me. You could — as you said before, you want to sit down and talk to the people I spoke to —

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — you're going to have a chance to do that if you want to. You go and ask the experts —

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — and you won't have to ask. They will be there anyway. There's not one person in this world [tape irregularity] can't find a person —

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — disagree with me. I'm the one that disagreed with — I didn't even want to know about it.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: I kept saying, “No, this is okay. There's nothing wrong. This is great.” It took experts to convince me [tape irregularity] that by not taking action —

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — my son was going to be irreparably damaged for the rest of his life [tape irregularity]. That was what I heard.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Because his friend is older, or because of all the seduction?

MR. CHANDLER: Well, you know, age in and of itself is not a harmful thing.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: But it could have been used to advantage, and in some ways Michael is using his age and experience and his money and his power to great advantage to Jordy. The problem is he's also harming him, greatly harming him, for his own selfish reasons. He's not the altruistic, kind human being that he appears to be.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Do you think —

MR. CHANDLER: (Simultaneous, inaudible) selfish motives here.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. SCHWARTZ: *You mean, harming Jordy because it's taken him out of reality?*

MR. CHANDLER: *It's not so much really what he's taken him out of. It's what he's brought him into.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *I mean, I don't mean to be devious. I just can't be –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *You can't tell me.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— specific about it, but I tell you that, again, **it all comes down to one thing. They don't want to talk to me.***

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *Jordy — yeah, he's 13 years old. He's only [tape irregularity], hoping that the problem will go away by itself, but June's old enough to know better. June's the one that's frustrated me.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Well, you know, this is the deal: I talked to Jordy about it today, about, you know, his not contacting you and not calling you on Father's Day and not sending you anything. He's confused June — and this is the truth and from him. June did everything to get him to send you a card, to call and everything. He's just frustrated, you know, and I don't know about what or — you know, it's just like he's scared or doesn't know what to do or –*

MR. CHANDLER: *(Inaudible).*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Pardon me?*

MR. CHANDLER: *June didn't do a thing to have him call me or send me a card by her own admission to me last time. She didn't give a shit, is what she told me.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Well, but I don't believe that because, I mean –*

MR. CHANDLER: *(Simultaneous, inaudible) told me.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Because, I mean –*

MR. CHANDLER: *I –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *With June and – I talked to them today.*

MR. CHANDLER: *Well, then, she's lying to you, Dave.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Well, but would Jordy lie?*

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. CHANDLER: Now they're scared shit.

MR. SCHWARTZ: No. Would Jordy — no, because they don't know anything about it. I didn't even tell them that I had talked to you this morning, okay?

Evan again talks about “experts” convincing him that if he would not take action his son would be “*irreparably damaged for the rest of his life*”. Earlier in this chapter I have already addressed Evan’s claims about these so called “experts”, as well as the fact that Evan did not have any evidence and apparently he relied on his “imagination” more than anything else.

Evan claims Jackson “*is using his age and experience and his money and his power*” and later in this conversation you will see Evan use more of these same expressions while describing Jackson. This is significant because Jordan used these same or very similar expressions to describe Jackson in an interview that was conducted with him by psychiatrist Dr. Richard Gardner in October 1993. According to *All That Glitters*, Jordan and Evan never talked about the alleged abuse in detail, yet Jordan’s train of thought, opinions, choice of words in his interview with Dr. Gardner are remarkably similar to those of his father’s in this conversation. About Jordan’s alleged “confession” you can read more in the next chapter entitled [**How Did The Allegations of the Chandlers Emerge?**](#) For a little more detailed discussion about the similarities between Jordan’s thoughts and expressions in the Gardner interview and those of his father’s in this conversation you will have to read the later chapter entitled [**The Chandler Allegations.**](#)

MR. SCHWARTZ: I mean, you know more than I know, so I'm at a disadvantage.

MR. CHANDLER: Well, then, I will tell you without question. It's gone way too far.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: Jordy is never going to be the same person he was.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: It's never — by the time it runs its course —

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — if it does, he will be so damaged he'll never recover —

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — and that's not my opinion. I mean, I happen to be believe it now because my eyes have been opened —

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — but I'm not the one that first [tape irregularity], so what I'm saying to you is that I'm acting because [tape irregularity] I'm going to

The Michael Jackson Allegations

cause him great harm, and you tell me if maybe it's gonna cause him harm right now. I think he'll be harmed much greater if I do nothing, and besides now I'm convinced that if I do nothing I'm going to be, from doing nothing, causing him harm, and I couldn't –

Again a reference to outside influences who allegedly formed Evan's opinion. Evan talks about harm that Jackson allegedly causes while not having any evidence of any wrongdoing and while his son is adamant that nothing inappropriate has happened.

*MR. CHANDLER: [...] I ask you this: If Michael Jackson were just some 34-year-old person, would this be happening? No. **He's got power, he's got money, he's got seduction.** [tape irregularity] happening [tape irregularity] **they've been seduced away from the family by power and by money.***

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: And by this guy's image.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

*MR. CHANDLER: **He could be the same person without the power and the money, and they wouldn't even be talking to him. You know it and I know it. So for power and money and his image, June and Jordy have broken up the family, and even though [tape irregularity] a lot better, because I've sat down and talked to him, and I've told him long before it came down to going this far –***

Evan seems to be jealous of Jackson (in fact in *All That Glitters* it is admitted that he was jealous of the friendship between Jackson and his son) and he accuses both his ex-wife and his son of “*breaking up the family*” for Jackson's money, image and power.

MR. CHANDLER: — but if [tape irregularity] now, June wouldn't be in the picture and neither would Kelly, any more than I am.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: They would have dumped her a long time ago. They even told me [tape irregularity]. They can't stand her.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Wait. Jordy can't stand June?

*MR. CHANDLER: Yeah. Neither one of them like her. **They don't like anybody but each other.***

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

*MR. CHANDLER: They don't like you, and they don't like me and they don't like her. **They don't want anybody coming between them.** [tape irregularity] got to be eliminated. You go ahead and you see — you tell June. You tell June to start saying “No” to everything they want –*

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — and see what happens. The only reason she's there is because she says "Yes" [tape irregularity] favorite as long as I was saying "Yes." Trust me. I don't know what's happened to Jordy except he doesn't care, literally does not care, if he would ever see him again. He hopes I would go away and not bother him. That's [tape irregularity].

MR. SCHWARTZ: Well, I know that's not true.

MR. CHANDLER: (Simultaneous, inaudible) Michael.

MR. SCHWARTZ: I know that's not true.

MR. CHANDLER: I'm telling you. But that doesn't matter, you know. **I'm not taking it personally. I'm just trying to do what I have been led to believe is the right action to take so that he's not harmed. I mean, Unfortunately, June and [tape irregularity] because in order to protect Jordy certain things are gonna have to come out, and those two are not going to have any defense against it whatsoever. They're just going to be [tape irregularity] violently destroyed.**

MR. SCHWARTZ: Do you think that it helps Jordy?

MR. CHANDLER: Yeah, it'll help Jordy because he won't — he'll never see Michael again. That's —

MR. SCHWARTZ: I mean, do you think that —

MR. CHANDLER: And he's probably never gonna see June again if I have to go through with this.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Do you think —

MR. CHANDLER: Unless I'd let him.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Do you think that would affect him?

MR. CHANDLER: What?

MR. SCHWARTZ: That he was — that this was done by force?

MR. CHANDLER: You mean that Michael did this to him?

MR. SCHWARTZ: No, that you, like, are forcing him not to see someone or take him away from his mom?

MR. CHANDLER: Well, I am gonna force him not to see —

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah, but do you think that's the right way to do it?

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. CHANDLER: *Yeah. I've been led to believe that it's the right thing to do. In fact, it's the right thing to do because how do you know? You don't know what –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *I don't have a clue.*

MR. CHANDLER: *Suppose you were to find out what they're doing and you were to agree with me that these things that they're doing are harmful to Jordy or –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *I'd like to know.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— be harmful.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *I mean, in my wildest imagination I can't figure out what it is.*

MR. CHANDLER: *Okay. But suppose –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Unless it's sex, and I don't know, you know.*

MR. CHANDLER: *Suppose that you were to find out that there were things going on that you believed were harmful to him? Would you say to me, "Hey, look. You know, I got things to do here [tape irregularity], but, you know, time will go by and everything will be okay"? I mean, that's –*

[...]

MR. CHANDLER: *Okay. Well, they won't talk to me about those things. They won't talk to me about anything.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Even about what you think they're doing or about what you know they're doing?*

MR. CHANDLER: *What I know they're doing.*

Evan makes the accusation that Jordan and Jackson “*don't like anybody but each other*”, that “*they don't want anybody coming between them*” and he says that he has been “*led to believe*” that he needs to take action so that the boy does not get harmed. He also says that “*those two*” (presumably June and Jackson) are going to be “*violently destroyed*”. He goes on about how Jordan will “*never see Michael again*”, and “*he's probably never gonna see June again if I have to go through with this*”. Remember this is all while Jordan himself is adamant that nothing inappropriate has happened.

Evan also says: “*Suppose you were to find out what they're doing and you were to agree with me that these things that they're doing are harmful to Jordy*” and later claims he does not just think they are doing harmful things but he *knows*. In actuality, Evan did not have anything but assumptions and “*imagination*” but this does not stop him from fantasizing about violently destroying both Jackson and June.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Like said before, the fact that Evan used these allegations as a way to demand money from Jackson instead of trying to put the alleged molester of his son in prison (see more in the chapters [The Chandlers' Monetary Demands](#) and [The Settlement](#)), the fact that he did not show much interest in Jordan before Jackson came into his family's life, nor did he show much interest in his other two children who were not millionaires like Jordan after the allegations (see our chapter [Michael Jackson's first accuser – meet the Chandler family!](#)) and other facts discussed in this document (eg. in the chapters [Evan Chandler's "Suspensions"](#) and [Evan Chandler's 1996 lawsuit against Michael Jackson](#)) put Evan's posturing in this conversation as a concerned father into a perspective and pretty much discredit it.

*MR. CHANDLER: I mean, I've tried to talk to Jordy. Jordy — Jordy does not talk to me. This stopped long before I told him he couldn't [tape irregularity]. He just does not talk to me anymore. In fact, when he talks to Michael on the telephone, he goes in another room because I'm not allowed to hear what they're talking about **except I taped [tape irregularity] they're talking about. Ha ha ha.** Anyway, all I'm saying is that [tape irregularity] that I would be negligent to continue to do nothing [tape irregularity] gonna be because nobody really knows how Jordy will be affected one way or the other. **I know for a fact that he's going to be affected adversely if I do nothing.***

No incriminating tape has ever been produced of Jackson and Jordan's phone conversations. In actuality, like mentioned before, in his brother's book *All That Glitters* Evan himself says in the chapter entitled "August 4" that he was wary of going to the police because the case would have been just Jordan's word against Jackson's word [1; page 109]. That means either Evan bluffs here about taping Jordan and Jackson's phone conversations, or if he indeed did then it did not produce the evidence he hoped for.

Evan claims he knows "for a fact" that Jordan is going to be "affected adversely if I do nothing". How does he know it for a fact when all he has are assumptions and "imagination"?

MR. SCHWARTZ: Would you do me a big favor?

MR. CHANDLER: What?

MR. SCHWARTZ: Could you and I go to one of these shrinks and talk it over?

MR. CHANDLER: No.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Why not?

MR. CHANDLER: Because it's too late, after 8:30 tomorrow.

MR. SCHWARTZ: But why not? Why couldn't we go talk it over —

MR. CHANDLER: Because the thing's already — the thing has already been set in motion.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *It's happening at 8:30. 8:36 tomorrow –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— it's out of my hands. I do nothing else again –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— after 8:36 tomorrow. It's all been automatically set in motion.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *I'm not even in contact anymore –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— with this person. This thing is –*

Evan refuses Schwartz's offer to go together to a "shrink" claiming that "*the thing has already been set in motion*" and that "*it's out of my hands*". This makes little sense because Evan pretty much pulled the strings and was in control during the formation of these allegations. What was already unstoppably "*set in motion*" and why when Evan had no evidence, just his "*imagination*" and while his son himself was adamant that he had not been molested?

MR. CHANDLER: *The evidence is already locked up in a safe place –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— and it's gonna come out only [tape irregularity] let it come out, and that's it. If they don't talk to me tomorrow, out it comes.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Okay. Well, but let me ask you this- -*

MR. CHANDLER: *(Simultaneous, inaudible) Michael Jackson — Michael Jackson's career, Dave. This man is gonna be humiliated beyond belief. You'll not believe it. He will not believe what's going to happen to him.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *Beyond his worst nightmares. [tape irregularity] not sell one more record.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. CHANDLER: *That's for sure. And I mean I'm [tape irregularity] it just has to happen in order to get — to keep [tape irregularity] and it doesn't have to happen if they show up tomorrow.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *But if they don't show up — and I've made it very clear — I've tried to make it really clear on that answering machine, "This is the last chance to talk. If you talk, we have a chance. If we don't talk, it's all over." It's out of my hands. I mean, what else can I do?*

Evan's claim of having evidence was addressed earlier.

When you read these aggressive sentences from Evan about how Michael Jackson “*is gonna be humiliated beyond belief*” and that “*he will not believe what's going to happen to him*” always remember that this is all while Jordan himself is adamant that he has not been not molested and while Evan relies on “*imagination*” rather than on factual evidence of any wrongdoing. It is important to emphasize that Evan's desire to destroy and humiliate Jackson **precedes** the emergence of Jordan's allegations and that Jordan first came up with those allegations while he was later in Evan's care and paid visits to the office of Evan's lawyer, Barry Rothman whom Evan himself described as “*the nastiest son of a bitch*”. You will read more details about how Jordan's allegations emerged in the next chapter entitled **How Did The Allegations of the Chandlers Emerge?**

MR. CHANDLER: *What's the disadvantage to you if Michael Jackson's destroyed and out of the family? What good is he doing you?*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *What harms it — well, it has nothing to — I'm only thinking of Jordy.*

MR. CHANDLER: *(Simultaneous, inaudible) come over to talk to you, you seemed pretty damned upset that everybody was telling you that Michael Jackson has taken your family away from you. You even went so far as to tell me you couldn't get bank loans because of that [tape irregularity] turn around completely 180 degrees.*

Evan here again tries to convince Schwartz to join him in destroying Michael Jackson by playing on his vanity as a husband.

MR. SCHWARTZ: *I would do anything for Jordy. I would lose everything. I would die for Jordy. That's the bottom line.*

MR. CHANDLER: *Then why don't you just back me up right now and let's get rid of Michael Jackson.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Because I don't know the facts.*

MR. CHANDLER: *Okay. Well, when you know —*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *I mean, I don't —*

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. CHANDLER: *Okay. When you know the facts, when you see the facts come out, then you'll make a decision at that point.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Right. That's fair.*

MR. CHANDLER: *Okay.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *I mean, that's more than fair, but this — let me —*

MR. CHANDLER: *It's unfortunately gonna be too late, then, and nothing's gonna matter at that point.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Why?*

MR. CHANDLER: *Because the fact is so fucking overwhelming —*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah?*

MR. CHANDLER: *— that everybody's going to be destroyed in the process. The facts themselves are gonna — once this thing starts rolling —*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— the facts themselves are gonna overwhelm. It's gonna be bigger than all of us put together, and the whole thing's just gonna crash down on everybody and destroy everybody in its sight. That's [tape irregularity] humiliating, believe me.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah. And is that good?*

MR. CHANDLER: *Yeah. It's great.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Why?*

MR. CHANDLER: *Great, because —*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *I mean, is that how you're —*

MR. CHANDLER: *Because June and Jordy and Michael —*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— have forced me to take it to the extreme —*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— to get their attention. How pitiful, pitifuckingful they are to have done that. I've tried to get their attention —*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. CHANDLER: — *I have begged on the phone, and all I get back is, “Go fuck yourself” on the phone, and so now I’m still trying to get their attention until 8:30 tomorrow for their [tape irregularity], and I will know that even having gone this far they won’t talk to me, then I know that I’m absolutely right in doing what I’m doing because they have left me no other [tape irregularity]. I am not allowed to talk to [tape irregularity], and so since they’re sending me that message and telling me that –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: — *they leave me no choice. They will not let me say to them, “This is what’s bothering me, and this is what I’d like to do about it. What do you think?” They’re saying, “We don’t care what you have to think — say about [tape irregularity].”*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *You mean by no communication?*

MR. CHANDLER: *Am I supposed to just bury my head? No. Not when my kid’s involved.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: ***I can’t. So it’s their fault. Everything’s their fault, one hundred percent, and the reason it’s their fault [tape irregularity] try to communicate, and they have time after time frustrated my attempts to talk by telling me, “Go fuck yourself.” And when you do that to somebody, consistently, you drive them to do something [tape irregularity]. I’m not an evil person. I don’t want to do this.***

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *It’s their fault because they won’t talk. They have one more chance. I’ve told them this. That’s why I left that message. The message was very harsh [tape irregularity] and it was very true, and it was to let them know that I am not kidding around.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *I’m begging them. That message was begging, one more time –*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: — *to sit down and talk and saying basically, “I don’t want to hurt you, but you’re not leaving me any choice.”*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. CHANDLER: *And, you know, if they choose to ignore it, for whatever their motives — June doesn't ignore things for the same — she doesn't bury her head in the sand and make believe it's gonna go away.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *June usually will call you up and say, "Go fuck yourself and drop dead" —*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— and she'll get violent and all that, maybe even punch you in the face.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Well, that's not so bad.*

MR. CHANDLER: *That's right, and yet she's not calling me —*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— she's not doing anything. She's not talking either. So Michael's not talking either. The three of them, completely different personalities —*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *— handle situations in three completely different ways, and yet none of the three of them is calling me.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *You can tell me that Jordy's burying his head in the sand and that's his reaction [tape irregularity]. What's the other two excuses? I don't know. They won't even tell me what their excuse for not talking to me is. I don't even — I can't make an excuse for —*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Michael, I can't tell you. June, she doesn't know what's going on.*

MR. CHANDLER: *Well, of course she doesn't know what's going on. She wouldn't let me tell her.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *But she doesn't going on — know what's going on —*

MR. CHANDLER: *I did tell her once.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *I did tell her once what my thoughts were about it.*

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *And she said, “Go fuck yourself,” basically.*

Evan is desperate to “get rid of Michael Jackson” and this is **before** he made his son – under dubious circumstances – support his claim that the star had allegedly molested him. (Details about how Jordan’s allegations emerged in the next chapter [How Did The Allegations of the Chandlers Emerge?](#))

Evan talks about overwhelming “facts” when in reality he did not have any evidence. His anger is not just directed towards Jackson but also towards June and Jordan as evident when he says: “*Because June and Jordy and Michael have forced me to take it to the extreme to get their attention. How pitiful, pitifuckingful they are to have done that.*”

He blames all three of them for not talking to him – and in fact, their refusal to communicate with him seems to be his main problem. At one point Evan says: “*I’m not an evil person. I don’t want to do this*”. If what he does is in the best interest of his son and he is only trying to get him out of a situation that is harmful to him then why would he say that?

He also accuses June of physical violence, when in fact it is documented that Evan himself was the physically abusive one (see the chapter [Michael Jackson’s first accuser – meet the Chandler family!](#)).

According to *All That Glitters*, the situation when Evan allegedly told June of his concerns about Jackson and Jordan happened on June 9, the day of the preschool graduation of “Cody” (an alias), Evan’s younger son. According to the book, this is how it went:

“When June came by to pick up Kelly, Evan took June into the backyard where they could talk privately. “I’m worried about Jordie,” he began. “I’m afraid he might be gay.”

According to Evan, June shrugged her shoulders and replied, “So what. So he’s gay. Who cares?”

*Evan couldn’t believe what he had just heard. **In his mind**, June was admitting their son might be gay and having sex with Michael, and that it was no big deal. He became instantly enraged and screamed at June, “Who cares! Who cares! Are you crazy!!” Barely in control of his temper, Evan ordered June to leave his house.*

That June saw nothing wrong with Jordie being gay was not what angered Evan. “Though what straight parent would be pleased at the prospect,” he later explained. “It was the way she flipped it off, like there was nothing to be concerned about, or even talk about. Maybe I should have tried to talk to her more. But I just lost it. Anyway, looking back, I doubt it would have made any difference. She was already locked on course.” [1; page 55]

As you can see again, Evan is pretty liberal with details and with the interpretation of certain stories. June stating that she would not care if Jordan was gay is far from “admitting” that

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Jordan might have sex with Michael Jackson, yet “*in Evan’s mind*” that alleged statement by June meant that she “admitted” she would not care if their son was molested by Jackson.

The story in *All That Glitters* also contradicts Evan’s interpretation in this conversation where he repeatedly claims that June told him to “*go fuck himself*” when he voiced his concerns about Jordan and Jackson to her. However, according to their own book, all he voiced concerns about was that Jordan might be gay and when June said she would not care, Evan “*became instantly enraged and screamed at June*” and then “*barely in control of his temper, Evan ordered June to leave his house*”. This kind of behavior by Evan – weird assumptions, suggestions and temper tantrums – would explain why June, Jackson and Jordan refused to communicate with him, rather than having something to hide as Evan imagines and interprets it in this conversation.

For the record, Jordan is not gay.

MR. CHANDLER: I have nothing to gain by talking to them tomorrow. All that can happen tomorrow is that I’m gonna look at their faces and I’m gonna feel bad –

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — and I’m gonna mitigate my position. I’m gonna give in somewhat [tape irregularity] I just went ahead and did what I was gonna do, I don’t ever have to see them again –

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — they’re automatically gonna be destroyed and I’m gonna get what I want. That’s a given [tape irregularity], so –

MR. SCHWARTZ: But, I mean, is that the way to get Jordy?

MR. CHANDLER: — talk to them — I’m talking to them for their sake –

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — mine. This is my fourth, fifth and last attempt to communicate.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: So when I leave a threatening message, I am threatening them –

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — because nothing else works. Crying didn’t work. Begging didn’t work. Intelligence didn’t work.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. CHANDLER: *Appealing to the motherly [tape irregularity] nothing worked. So what else is left? You threaten. If that doesn't work, you've basically tried everything there is that you could possibly try.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *I didn't threaten him physically. I didn't say I was going to kill them. Michael can show up with all his bodyguards with guns and surround me if he wants to.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *I'm not killing anybody tomorrow. It's not the next step. His death is not the next (inaudible), so I mean I will talk to them tomorrow, but that's for their — they can't possibly feel threatened.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *That's bullshit. I didn't threaten them physically in any way, and certainly Michael's got enough [tape irregularity] lawyers (inaudible). He has Burt Fields (sic!), who's a big hotshot, if he wants to, sit right there. I don't give a shit.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *Whatever, you know, is going to make them protected from my great threat. I'm showing up all by my little self, and they can show up with an entire army if they need to protect themselves from me, but there's nothing that they can do to convince me that they're not showing up because they're afraid for their lives.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: *Yeah.*

MR. CHANDLER: *They could show up [tape irregularity] surrounded by bodyguards. He could certainly have them come over to June's house, so [tape irregularity] threat was obviously the last (inaudible). **I've never punched anybody. I've never shot anybody. I've never done anything violent in my life. There's no reason why they should feel physically threatened.** Never ever given them any indication that I [tape irregularity] Jordy, so, you know, they know that that threat's [tape irregularity] to be fearful of that. They know that that [tape irregularity] and they know that I left it because there's no other way to get ahold of them.*

Like detailed the chapter **Michael Jackson's first accuser – meet the Chandler family!** it is not true that Evan was not violent. Also take note of Evan's words when he says "*I'm not killing anybody tomorrow. It's not the next step. His death is not the next*" – as if that should make him look less threatening.

Evan claims that he tried everything reasonable to communicate his alleged concerns to June and Jackson and that he is acting only out of desperation because no intelligent way of trying

The Michael Jackson Allegations

to talk to them worked. However, in *All That Glitters*, there is simply no intelligent attempt at talking to them presented. According to the book, only one day after Evan was personally introduced to Jackson, he asked, out of the blue: “*Are you fucking my son up the ass?*” (sic!) [1; page 30]. According to the same book, some time later he asked his son just as bluntly:

“Hey, Jordie, are you and Michael doin’ it?”

“That’s disgusting!” Jordie reacted. “I’m not into that.”

“Just kidding.” [1; page 46]

I have previously addressed the way Evan, according to the book, communicated his concerns to June.

From the book it is also obvious that Evan did not accept a “no” for an answer and he pressured Jordan as long as he did not say what Evan wanted to hear. About the details of this you can read more in the next chapter entitled **How Did The Allegations of the Chandlers Emerge?**

MR. CHANDLER: There are other people involved that are waiting for my phone call that are intentionally going to be in certain positions –

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — [tape irregularity]. I paid them to do it. They’re doing their job. I gotta just go ahead and follow through on the time zone.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Um-hmm.

MR. CHANDLER: I mean the time set out. Everything is going according to a certain plan that isn’t just mine. There’s other people involved –

Evan talks about a plan that is not just his but there are also other people involved who are in certain positions and whom he paid. Again, keep in mind that this is while Jordan is adamant that no inappropriety has happened. Evan however already goes by “*a certain plan that isn’t just mine*”.

MR. CHANDLER: But if they are there, it’s going to be far better than if they’re not — I mean, they’re going to have a chance to make things a lot better if they’re there. My instructions were to kill and destroy [tape irregularity], I’m telling you. I mean, and by killing and destroying, I’m going to torture them, Dave.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: Because that’s what June has done to me. She has tortured me –

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

*MR. CHANDLER: — and she's gonna know that you can't [tape irregularity]. I'll tell you one thing that **Jordy has no idea about, and that's what love means. He doesn't even have the remotest idea. He can't learn it from June. She doesn't know what it means. She has no conception of what it means.***

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: So maybe, you know, I can get (inaudible) teach him that. I don't know.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah [tape irregularity].

MR. CHANDLER: Part of it [tape irregularity] other people and communicating, and those are three things that must be in place in order for a loving relationship to exist, because all of those things show that you care about that other person. Not one thing [tape irregularity].

This is more about Evan's hurt ego than anything else. He wants to “kill and destroy” and “torture them” because of what June – in Evan's mind at least – has done **to him**.

The claim about Evan wanting to teach Jordan about love is ironic considering the fact how Evan treated his other two children after these allegations. Details in the chapter **Michael Jackson's first accuser – meet the Chandler family!**

MR. CHANDLER: — look at her behavior, I'm just saying that June is a brilliant and pathologic personality.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: What you see on the surface ain't even remotely related to what's really going on underneath.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: And I believe that that will come out in lie detector [tape irregularity] psychological evaluations –

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — which they're all gonna have to do.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: So –

MR. SCHWARTZ: And you think that's good for Jordy?

MR. CHANDLER: I think that in the long run would — of course it's not the best thing for Jordy.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: *The best thing for Jordy would be for everybody to sit there and peaceably resolve amongst themselves [tape irregularity], but because they're not willing to do that, I'm not allowed to have a say in what the best [tape irregularity]. I'm not even allowed to [tape irregularity] Jordy is. I'm not allowed to have a say in anything about Jordy. So when you ask me that question [tape irregularity] I would welcome them to do that, but they don't care. They don't care about what I think, so they don't ask me that question. Do I think — I mean, just to answer your question, I think that [tape irregularity] for Jordy either way in the short [tape irregularity], in the short term.*

There is an irony in Evan calling June a “pathologic personality” considering his own behaviour.

MR. CHANDLER: *I think in the long term he's got a [tape irregularity] a chance of being a happy human being if I do what I have to do than if I let things go the way they are. **Could a compromise be worked out? Possibly.***

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: *Yeah. Let them convince me as to why [tape irregularity] tell me I'm wrong. Let them show me how Jordy's benefitting and not being harmed. They got their chance.*

[...]

MR. CHANDLER: *They've had four or five times that I've called them [tape irregularity] haven't wanted to get in a conversation with me about it, and I believe they don't want to get in a conversation with me about it is because they know they can't defend their position.*

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: *[tape irregularity] to cut — I mean, I'm young, I'm really liberal. As far as I'm concerned, anybody could do anything they want. That's my philosophy. You guys can do whatever you want. Just be happy. Don't get hurt. So...*

[end tape]

Why would a parent who allegedly suspects child molestation, moreover claims to have “evidence” of it and represents himself as a “concerned father” want to work out a “compromise”? Considering Evan's alleged beliefs about the relationship between Jordan and Jackson and that elsewhere he claims to be a “concerned father” the last sentences of the conversation are also remarkable.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Summary

This conversation needs to be viewed in the context of Evan Chandler's other actions and also in the context of his personality. While discussing the conversation above I cited many of the facts, events and actions which put Evan's claims and posturing as a concerned and desperate father into a perspective. Additionally please also consider the fact that during these allegations Evan's focus was always on the money – every step, every action he made was aimed at that. The details of this will be discussed later in this document in the following chapters: **The Chandlers' Monetary Demands**, **The Settlement** and **Evan Chandler's 1996 lawsuit against Michael Jackson**.

Also consider the sequence of events as these allegations against Jackson emerged: Evan gets jealous of the friendship between his son and Jackson and he develops the fixed idea that the relationship between them is sexual, although he has no evidence of it and his son himself states to him that nothing inappropriate has happened. Probably it is no coincidence that this "suspicion" of Evan emerges at the same time when Jackson refuses to comply with his demands such as building an addition to his house or making him a partner in a film production company Jackson has just founded (see later in chapter **The Chandlers' Monetary Demands**). Evan then pressures Jordan to confess the "suspected" sexual abuse and when Evan gets control over the boy Jordan allegedly (and conveniently for Evan) "confesses" to him about alleged sexual abuse under highly questionable circumstances. Those circumstances will be discussed in detail in the next chapter.

Between Jordan's alleged "confession" to Evan and their reporting of the allegations to authorities (through a therapist) there is a full month during which Jordan stays with his father who refuses to return him to his mother June. During that time Jordan pays visits to the office of Evan's "*son of a bitch*" lawyer Barry Rothman (whom Evan hired long before Jordan's alleged "confession" of abuse) and there is plenty of time for Evan and Rothman to coach the boy. Meanwhile Evan, the allegedly "concerned father", demands money from Jackson in exchange for not going public and to authorities with allegations of sexual molestation of his son. (Details in the later chapter **The Chandlers' Monetary Demands**.)

It is after Jackson's refusal to pay him off when Evan takes his son to a therapist where Jordan makes his detailed allegations for the first time which then triggers the investigation and the public scandal. But even after that Evan's focus remains on how to make money with these allegations. Only two weeks after going public with the allegations Evan hires a civil lawyer, Larry Feldman who files a civil lawsuit against Jackson, admittedly with a "*highly profitable settlement*" in mind [1; page 168]. In a highly tactical court game then the Chandlers fight for the civil lawsuit being brought ahead of the criminal proceedings (which compromises Jackson's right to a fair trial as discussed in the chapter about **The Settlement**) and express no interest in putting the alleged molester of Jordan behind bars. Their priority is always money.

All these events are detailed in this document, either in previous or following chapters and it is highly recommended to read them to get a full perspective of the events as they unfolded.

Sources:

[1] Raymond Chandler – All That Glitters: The Crime and the Cover-Up (Windsong Press Ltd, September 2004)

The Michael Jackson Allegations

[2] Mary A. Fischer: Was Michael Jackson Framed? (GQ, October 1994)
<http://www.buttonmonkey.com/misc/maryfischer.html>

How Did The Allegations of the Chandlers Emerge?

On July 11, 1993 Jordan Chandler, who was residing with his mother June Chandler, went to visit his father for a week but at the end of the week Evan Chandler refused to return the boy to his mother. This was the week when Jordan's allegations against Michael Jackson began to take shape. The Chandlers claimed that the boy's confessions of abuse were made after Evan sedated him for a minor dental procedure (pulling a baby tooth) with the help of his Anesthesiologist and friend, Mark Torbiner on July 16, just one day before Evan was scheduled to return his son to his ex-wife.

According to the Chandlers' story, as presented in Ray Chandler's 2004 book *All That Glitters*, after Jordan emerged from the sedation Evan pressured him to "confess" and corroborate his "suspicions" that Michael Jackson had sexually molested him. The boy refused. Then Evan started to blackmail him with lies and threats against his friend, Michael Jackson.

First Evan claimed he had bugged Jordan's bedroom (admittedly a lie).

"When Jordie came strolling back from the kitchen, Evan went on the attack. 'Have a seat, and listen very carefully to what I'm about to say. Do you remember when you came over to the house I told you that if you lie to me I was going to destroy Michael?' Jordie nodded that he did. 'Good. Keep that in mind, because I'm going to ask you a question. Do you care about Michael?'"

"Yes," the boy answered.

"You could say you love him, right?"

"Yes."

"And you wouldn't want to hurt him?"

"No."

"Okay then, let me remind you of something. Remember I told you I bugged your bedroom?" Jordie nodded. "Well, I know everything you guys did, so you might as well admit it." [1; page 90]

But Jordan remained *"silent, seemingly unimpressed"* [1; page 90] and *"sensing this, Evan quickly changed tack"* [1; page 90]. Then he tried to cajole Jordan by telling him that being bisexual was not only OK but was *"sorta cool, in a way"* [1; page 91]. That didn't work either, Jordan still would not say that Jackson molested him.

Then Evan's threats against Jackson became more direct and more aggressive:

The Michael Jackson Allegations

"I'm going to give you one last chance to save Michael. If you lie to me, then I'm going to take him down in front of the whole world, and it'll be all your fault because you're the one person who could have saved him. [1; page 91]"

and

"I know about the kissing and the jerking off, so you're not telling me anything I don't already know," Evan lied. "This isn't about me finding anything out. It's about lying. And you know what's going to happen if you lie. So I'm going to make it very easy for you. I'm going to ask you one question. All you have to do is say yes, or no. That's it. Lie and Michael goes down. Tell me the truth and you save him. [1; page 91]"

Jordan by this time, of course, knew what his father would consider "the truth" and what would he consider a "lie", since Evan made that very clear. Ray Chandler writes in his book: *"In his heart, Evan already knew the truth; he didn't need Jordie to confirm it."* [1; page 91] In other words Evan had a fixed, preconceived idea that Jackson had molested his son and he would only accept confirmation from Jordan as "the truth". Everything else would be considered a "lie" and would result in Evan acting to "taking down" the entertainer. And this is when Jordan, after pleading his father not to hurt Jackson, allegedly, gave in:

"Okay. What's the question?"

"Did Michael touch your penis?"

Jordie hesitated. Then, almost inaudibly, he whispered "Yes."

Evan would press no further. He had heard all he needed to hear. He reached out and hugged his son, and Jordie hugged back, tight.

"We never talked about it again," Evan later told the L.A. district attorney. To Evan, the details didn't matter. "The prison walls had cracked and I was confident the rest would take care of itself." [1; page 91-92]

After all these threats and blackmailing Jordan "confesses" with an almost inaudible "yes" and we are to believe that Evan doesn't have any further questions? Supposedly his son has just confessed he has been molested but his father is not interested in details, such as when, where, how, how many times and exactly what happened, under what circumstances was his son's penis touched by another man? In actuality, Evan later tells the Los Angeles DA that *"we never talked about it again"*. It would only make sense if Evan knew there were no details to be told. It also seems to be an attempt on Evan's part to distance himself from the allegations, so that he could not be accused of coaching his son.

All the "details" would later coalesce when we hear about the masturbation, mutual masturbation and oral sex claims but these "details" only surface after Jordan spends more time in his father's care and in the office of Evan's attorney, Barry Rothman, a person that Evan himself described in his taped phone conversation with David Schwartz as the *"nastiest son of a bitch"* [2].

The Michael Jackson Allegations

It must be emphasized that the above described story of Jordan's alleged "confession" about the abuse is based solely on Ray Chandler's account in *All That Glitters* and we do not know how much of it is true. Even if it is completely true, the way Jordan was coerced and threatened into a "confession" would make these allegations very problematic. However, there are reasons to doubt the claim that Jordan "confessed" anything at all on July 16.

Here is why.

On July 14 Evan and his attorney, Barry Rothman contacted a psychiatrist, *Dr. Mathis Abrams* and presented him with their side of the story and asked his opinion about it. **Without having met either the child or the accused, simply based on Evan and Rothman's version of the story**, on July 16 Dr. Abrams sent Rothman a two-page letter in which he stated that *"reasonable suspicion would exist that sexual abuse may have occurred"* [3]. Dr. Abrams was not even told who the child or the accused was and when he urged Evan to bring the child to him for an interview for further evaluation Evan refused by using a bizarre excuse:

Evan declined, explaining that he needed more time to decide what to do because he feared that if his son and the adult were truly in love, which they appeared to be, and he separated them by involving the authorities, the separation would be traumatic and his son might hate him for it. "I might lose him forever if they're ripped apart like that," Evan told the psychiatrist. [1; page 88]

Instead of taking his son to the therapist to find out whether his concerns were substantiated or not Evan was more interested in using Dr. Abrams' letter as a "negotiation" tool with his ex-wife June and with Michael Jackson.

In *All That Glitters* it is claimed that on July 20 Jordan's mother, June Chandler and her then husband, David Schwartz met Evan's attorney, Barry Rothman in his office. During that meeting Dr. Mathis Abrams' letter was shown to them and it was demanded that they sign a document that would transfer custody of Jordan from June to Evan.

Although Rothman and Evan Chandler wanted to convince June Chandler and David Schwartz that Jordan had been molested by Jackson – and as a tool for that they used Dr. Abrams' letter – Jordan's alleged confession was not mentioned to them during that meeting. In *All That Glitters* it is claimed that it was because Evan did not tell Rothman about Jordan's alleged "confession". The reason given is that Evan did not want to betray the boy's trust.

On August 4 Evan and Jordan met with Jackson and his private investigator, Anthony Pellicano at the Westwood Marquis Hotel. Evan read Dr. Abrams' letter to them and after the meeting Evan and Rothman invited Pellicano to Rothman's office where they made a \$20 million demand to not to go to authorities and to the public with allegations of child molestation against Michael Jackson. [Details about that meeting in our later chapter entitled [**The Chandlers' Monetary Demands.**](#)]

However, according to Ray Chandler's book, on August 6 Jordan was still unwilling to tell his mother, June Chandler that Jackson had allegedly molested him. Ray Chandler claims it was because the boy was *"too ashamed"* [1; page 111]. This could be possible, of course, however Evan himself still did not mention Jordan's alleged "confession" to his ex-wife either, although he is described as being desperate to convince June that their son had been

The Michael Jackson Allegations

molested by Jackson. The explanation given in the book is once again that Evan did not want to betray the boy's trust. Evan is quoted in the book as saying: *"It shouldn't have mattered, anyway," Evan believed. "I am his father and if I'm telling her our child has been molested, that should be enough."* [1; page 112]

The book describes a peculiar sequence of events on August 9-11. June took Jordan to the movies, but Evan only allowed it *"on the condition that she not badger Jordie with questions"* [1; page 115]. Keep in mind that meanwhile Evan is desperate to convince June that their son had been molested by Jackson, yet he does not allow June, the boy's mother, to personally ask Jordan about it. According to the book, the next day June again took out Jordan to lunch and she and her then-husband, *David Schwartz* started to ask him questions: *"What's your dad up to? How much money did he ask for? Did Rothman file for custody?"* [1; page 116]

The book claims that this made Jordan threaten them that he would call the "cops" if they did not take him back to his father, so June took him back to Evan. The book describes this as a dramatic *"abduction"* attempt by June [1; page 116] which makes little sense because June had legal custody over the boy, so the "cops" could not have done anything to force her to return Jordan to Evan if she had not voluntarily wanted to. Keep in mind that this version of the events is just Ray and Evan Chandler's version and it does not mean it is the truth, but this is their story. The story in the book goes on:

"When they arrived, June told her son that if Evan were telling the truth she would join forces with them to see Michael punished. Safely inside his father's house, Jordie told Evan what had occurred, and about June's offer to help if she could be convinced.

Evan knew the only chance of accomplishing this was for Jordie to tell June everything, which the boy was still reluctant to do. "I realized for the first time I was going to have break my promise to Jordie and tell June he admitted to being touched. Things were totally out of control and it was the only way to end the insanity." [1; page 116]

It is very ironic that Evan talks about an "insanity" when it was his behaviour that was bizarre. Why all the drama, secrecy and complications when he could have simply told June immediately after July 16 that Jordan had confessed to him that he was inappropriately touched by Michael Jackson? Are we to believe that while Evan is described as desperate to convince June that Jackson molested their son, for almost a month he would not mention to her the single most important "evidence", Jordan's own confession? The explanation that Evan did not mention it because he did not want to betray Jordan's trust is hard to believe considering the fact that he did not have a problem with betraying his son or lying to him on other occasions. Additionally, Evan had already claimed to other people, including June, that Jackson had allegedly molested Jordan, basing his claim on Dr. Abrams' letter. Why would telling Jordan's mother about the alleged "confession" of the boy be a bigger *"betrayal"*?

Even on August 10, when June told Jordan that she would help them punish Jackson if Jordan confirmed his father's claims, the boy was still reluctant to do so. The confirmation would finally come the next morning, according to the book, when Jordan called his mother and told her about his allegations on the phone – with Evan standing next to him. June then requested to talk to the boy alone, but Evan refused to let them. Evan's reasoning in the book was that

The Michael Jackson Allegations

he did not trust June after her “*attempt to abduct*” Jordan, and that June and David Schwartz expressed to him their suspicion that Evan had coerced Jordan into making allegations against Jackson. With the above described events June did have a good reason to suspect that and Evan not letting the boy talk to her one-on-one certainly would not be the way to dispel that suspicion. Nor would the fact that during this period Evan and his lawyer, Barry Rothman continued to demand money from Jackson which is discussed in detail in the chapter [The Chandlers’ Monetary Demands](#).

On August 16, June Chandler’s attorney, *Michael Freeman* informed Rothman that they had filed a motion for a Court Order to have Jordan returned to his mother, June Chandler. In response to that and frustrated by Jackson’s refusal to pay him off, on August 17 Evan took Jordan to Dr. Abrams where the boy first made his detailed allegations against Michael Jackson, which inevitably involved the authorities, made the allegations public and afforded Evan the ability to get custody of Jordan. In Ray Chandler’s book we read:

“In a phone conversation the night before Freeman’s request was to be heard in court, Barry counseled Evan that unless he was willing to walk into the courtroom and accuse Michael of molesting Jordie, he didn’t have a prayer of winning; June had legal custody and that was all she needed to get Jordie back.” [1; page 119]

By the time Jordan was under his father’s control for a month. Consider the fact that initially Evan should have returned Jordan to his mother on July 16. To claim in the hindsight that Jordan “confessed” to him that day about having allegedly been molested by Michael Jackson, would be a good way for Evan to justify why he did not. However, the events which took place between July 16 and August 17, as described above, make that claim dubious at least.

Sources:

[1] Raymond Chandler – *All That Glitters: The Crime and the Cover-Up* (Windsong Press Ltd, September 2004)

[2] Taped phone conversation between Evan Chandler and David Schwartz (July 8, 1993)
https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/plugin-schwartz_chandler.pdf

[3] Letter sent to Barry Rothman by Dr. Mathis Abrams on July 16, 1993. Also quoted in *All That Glitters* [1].

The Use of Sodium Amytal?

Mary A. Fischer, in her October, 1994 GQ Magazine article writes that when Jordan was sedated in his father's office on July 16th, 1993, allegedly, he was administered the controversial drug Sodium Amytal, which studies have shown can make the human mind suggestible. Fischer wrote that through the use of Sodium Amytal false memories might have been implanted in Jordan's mind.

While Fischer's article is a valuable source in many respects, there are reasons to doubt this particular theory. Here is why.

According to Anthony Pellicano, on August 4, 1993, about two weeks after Jordan's sedation and alleged "confession", while Evan read passages from Dr. Mathis Abrams' letter to Jackson and his people at a meeting [details in the chapter [The Chandlers' Monetary Demands](#)], when he arrived at the parts about child molestation "*the boy, says Pellicano, put his head down and then looked up at Jackson with a surprised expression, as if to say 'I didn't say that.'*" [1]

Jordan's uncle Ray Chandler himself uses this defense against the Sodium Amytal theory in an article he has written for his now defunct website (atgbook.net) in 2005:

"Ironically, the person who best refutes Fischer's drug fairytale is none other than Anthony Pellicano. In December of 1993 Pellicano described Jordie's behavior at the August 4 Westwood Marquis meeting as follows:

The father began to read the psychiatrists letter, which cited the criminal statutes that applied to child abuse. "Jordie was looking down," [Pellicano said] "and he pops his head up and looks at Michael like, 'I didn't say that.'"

According to Pellicano, just two weeks after the alleged brainwashing Jordie wasn't brainwashed at all! He was acting embarrassed and guilty about the accusations his father had made." [2]

"Ironically", with this defense against the Sodium Amytal theory Chandler acknowledges the credibility of Pellicano's account: if Chandler brings up Pellicano's account as a defense against the Sodium Amytal claim then logically that means he acknowledges it as accurate. Pellicano's account supports the theory that Jordan's memory was not altered on July 16.

Jackson's 2005 attorney, Thomas Mesereau said he had witnesses who, if Jordan testified against Jackson at the 2005 trial, would tell the jury that Jordan privately confided in them that Jackson never molested him. If this is true then this too supports that Jordan's memory was not altered.

Ray Chandler in his book and article admits that Jordan was sedated on July 16 for a minor dental procedure (pulling a baby tooth), so that is not in question, but he denies that Sodium Amytal was used. In his 2005 article Ray Chandler speculatively tries to attribute the origination of the Sodium Amytal story to Jackson's camp, but Fischer cites her sources for the story, none of whom belong to the Jackson camp.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

One of her sources was a report by “a newsman at KCBS-TV”. We know from Ray Chandler’s 2005 article that the newsman was Harvey Levin (since then known as the founder of celebrity gossip website TMZ). Fischer wrote in 1994:

“A newsman at KCBS-TV, in L.A., reported on May 3 of this year [1994] that Chandler had used the drug on his son, but the dentist claimed he did so only to pull his son’s tooth and that while under the drug’s influence, the boy came out with allegations.” [1]

From the wording (“the dentist claimed” and the emphasis on that it was used “only to pull his son’s tooth”) it seems that the source of Levin’s information was Evan Chandler himself or someone on his side, although Ray Chandler in his article denies that. Mary Fischer herself asked Mark Torbiner, Evan’s Anesthesiologist, the person who supposedly sedated Jordan, and he answered somewhat ambiguously: “If I used it, it was for dental purposes” [1]. Ray Chandler in 2005 cannot get a flat-out denial from Torbiner either. In the footnotes to his article he writes:

“Fischer claimed that she spoke to Torbiner and that he told her “If I used it [the drug], it was for dental purposes.” Dr. Torbiner would not respond to inquiries about what, if anything, he told Fischer. His attorney stated that Torbiner was bound by the doctor-patient privilege and could not discuss the issue without written consent from his patient.” [2]

We don’t know Levin’s sources for his claim, but we do know that Fischer’s source, Mark Torbiner was a member of the Chandler camp, not the Jackson camp. Though he did not directly claim he used Sodium Amytal on Jordan, but he made an ambiguous statement about it.

In the spring of 1994, when this story first appeared through Harvey Levin, there was a high profile child abuse trial featured in the American media with the protagonist Sodium Amytal. In that case a 23-year-old woman, Holly Ramona accused her father of raping her when she was a child. However, her father counter-sued Holly’s therapist for implanting false memories in her mind with hypnosis and with the use of Sodium Amytal. In that trial, evidence revealed that the drug was unreliable. [3]

At the time the prosecution in the Jackson case were still pursuing the Chandlers to testify against the entertainer in a criminal case. Los Angeles district attorney, Gil Garcetti said right after the Chandler settlement in January 1994:

“The criminal investigation of singer Michael Jackson is ongoing and will not be affected by the announcement of the civil case settlement,” Garcetti said. “The district attorney’s office is taking Mr. [Larry] Feldman [the Chandlers’ attorney] at his word that the alleged victim will be allowed to testify and that there has been no agreement in the civil matter that will affect cooperation in the criminal investigation.” [4]

A claim that Sodium Amytal was used on Jordan would be a good way for the Chandlers to impeach him and allege that his memories are unreliable and thus get the prosecution off their back. At the time the Chandlers already had their money from the civil settlement and never wanted to testify in a criminal court [for details see the later chapter about [The Settlement](#)].

The Michael Jackson Allegations

(Of course, in 2005 the Chandlers would not need this Sodium Amytal story any more, so Ray Chandler could go back denying it – and blaming it on the Jackson camp at that.)

It is certainly an unusual and suspicious thing to sedate someone supposedly just to pull a baby tooth. It makes it even more suspicious when we know that Evan Chandler and his anesthesiologist were allegedly involved in questionable “medical” practices. Actress *Carrie Fisher* wrote in her 2011 autobiography *Shockaholic*:

“But getting back to the special medical access I mentioned earlier, I had this dentist at the time, a Dr. Evan Chandler, who was a very strange character. He was what would be referred to as the Dentist to the Stars! And as one of the people who would have unnecessary dental work just for the morphine, this man was one of those people who could arrange such a welcome service. He referred his patients to a mobile anesthesiologist who would come into the office to put you out for the dental work. And as if that wasn’t glorious enough, this anesthesiologist could also be easily and financially persuaded to come to your house to administer the morphine for your subsequent luxury pain relief. And I would extend my arms, veins akimbo, and say to this man—“Send me away, but don’t send me all the way.” [5]

So it remains a possibility that Evan did drug his son to try to manipulate him in some way, whether with Sodium Amytal or something else, but if Pellicano's account is true (and we can conclude it is from the fact that Ray Chandler uses it as their defense against the Sodium Amytal claim) it appears the attempt was not successful and Evan eventually needed other methods to get his son say what he wanted him to say.

In any case, whether Sodium Amytal was used or not is not pivotal in this case at all. As you can read in the previous chapter [[How Did The Allegations of the Chandlers Emerge?](#)], the Chandlers’ own version of how Jordan came up with the allegations is very problematic in itself, even without the introduction of Sodium Amytal into the story.

Sources:

[1] Mary A. Fischer: Was Michael Jackson Framed? (GQ, October 1994)
<http://www.buttonmonkey.com/misc/maryfischer.html>

[2] Raymond Chandler’s article on his now defunct website (Allthatglittersbook.com, Atgbook.com, Atgbook.net, January-February, 2005)
<http://web.archive.org/web/20050208010747/atgbook.net/GQFinal.html>

[3] Dennis Dutton: A Family Torn Asunder (July 20, 1997)
<http://www.napanet.net/~moiraj/santafe.html>

[4] Jackson Settles Abuse Suit but Insists He Is Innocent : Courts: Singer will reportedly pay \$15 million to \$24 million to teen-ager. Criminal investigation will proceed. (Los Angeles Times, January 26, 1994)
http://articles.latimes.com/1994-01-26/news/mn-15478_1_michael-jackson

[5] Carrie Fisher – Shockaholic (Simon & Schuster, November 2011)

The Chandlers' Monetary Demands

The fact that Michael Jackson settled out of court with his first accuser in 1994 is often brought up against him as a sign of guilt. The settlement and the events leading to it will be discussed in detail in a later chapter ([The Settlement](#)). Those who characterize the settlement as “hush money” do not realize had Jackson really wanted to “hush” his accuser he could have done so before the allegations went public and before the authorities were involved. In fact, the accusing side’s goal was to get a pay-off from the very beginning. It is clear that the reason they turned to the public and the authorities with their allegations was because they did not get the pay-off they desired.

Before disclosing their allegation to a person mandated to report the alleged abuse, a psychiatrist, and going public with the allegations, Jordan Chandler’s father, Evan Chandler demanded money from Michael Jackson. In his book, *All That Glitters*, Jordan’s uncle, Ray Chandler vehemently denies that the demand was an act of extortion and prefers to call it “negotiations”. Whatever you want to call it, this is how it went:

According to Ray Chandler’s book, *All That Glitters*, with Dr. Mathis Abrams’ letter in his hand, Evan attempted to “negotiate” with Michael Jackson and wanted to do so alone. In the chapter entitled “August 1” the book states:

“Although Evan was certain Michael’s actions toward Jordie were harmful, he still did not believe them to be intentional. As twisted as Michael was, Evan believed Michael genuinely cared about Jordie, and that if he could talk to Michael alone and explain his concerns, Michael would understand and together they could work out a solution, “without the damn lawyers.” [1; page 99]

Jackson, however, refused to negotiate with Evan “without the damn lawyers”. According to *All That Glitters*, Jordan’s step father, David Schwartz had already delivered the news of the Abrams’ letter to Jackson’s private investigator, Anthony Pellicano, so Jackson already could suspect that Evan was up to something. Additionally, Jackson had already listened to the [Taped phone conversations between Evan Chandler and David Schwartz](#). Nevertheless, Jackson agreed to meet with Evan but only in the presence of his lawyer, Bert Fields or Pellicano. The telephone conversation between Evan and Jackson is described as follows in *All That Glitters*:

*“I just want to find out what’s going on between you two,” Evan explained.
“You don’t need a lawyer. We can work this out ourselves.”*

Michael wouldn’t budge: Pellicano or Fields had to attend.

“We may talk about some embarrassing things for both of you,” Evan cautioned.

“Anything you say to me, you can say to Bert,” Michael insisted.

“But I don’t think anyone else should hear these things. I don’t want you to get in trouble. I just...” Click.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

This phone call was a turning point for Evan. "I understood that a man in Michael's position needed lawyers for everything, but this was not business, not to me. I really thought we could work it out if we could get all the lawyers out of the picture, and I thought Michael would want that too. If I wasn't bringing a lawyer, why did he need one?" [1; page 100]

The meeting took place on August 4 at the Westwood Marquis Hotel. Present were Michael Jackson, Anthony Pellicano and Evan and Jordan Chandler. According to Mary A. Fischer's 1994 *GQ* magazine article:

"On seeing Jackson, says Pellicano, Chandler gave the singer an affectionate hug (a gesture, some say, that would seem to belie the dentist's suspicions that Jackson had molested his son), then reached into his pocket, pulled out Abrams's letter and began reading passages from it.

When Chandler got to the parts about child molestation, the boy, says Pellicano, put his head down and then looked up at Jackson with a surprised expression, as if to say "I didn't say that."

As the meeting broke up, Chandler pointed his finger at Jackson, says Pellicano, and warned "I'm going to ruin you." [2]

The hug is mentioned in Ray Chandler's book as well: *"Evan then walked over to Michael and embraced the star with a big, happy-to-see-you hug, patting him on the back like an old friend."*[1; page 102]

And then it is explained in a peculiar way:

"In an interview for Vanity Fair six months after the Westwood Marquis meeting, Pellicano drew attention to the fact that Evan hugged Michael at the start of the meeting. "If I believed somebody molested my kid and I got that close to him, I'd be on death row right now." Supposedly this means that because Evan didn't kill Michael right then and there, he really didn't believe the molestation occurred.

Pellicano, of course, would have us believe Evan had already accused Michael of molesting Jordie as part of an extortion attempt, so when Evan hugged him it showed he knew Michael had done no such thing.

But if Evan went there to extort Michael, why would he start off by giving him a big hug? Why would he act friendly? Wouldn't he at least pretend that he believed Michael had molested Jordie and that he was angry? Especially with Michael's audio expert/private investigator present as a witness!

That Evan walked into the meeting and gave Michael a big hug only corroborates that Evan went there with the belief that Michael genuinely cared for Jordie and hadn't done anything intentional to hurt him. After all, the idea that Michael was being accused of intentionally harming the boy — that a "molestation" had occurred — did not originate in Evan's mind. It was Anthony Pellicano and Bert Fields who first used the term." [1; page 107]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

How many parents would give the person whom they suspect to have molested their child a “happy-to-see-you hug” and would “pat him on the back like an old friend”? And how many parents would have to “pretend” to be angry with the alleged molester, instead of genuinely be angry?

Another remarkable aspect of the above quoted text is Evan’s apparent attempt to refrain from the use of the term “molestation”. Remember, this meeting took place after Jordan allegedly already “confessed” to Evan about having been molested by Jackson (**How Did The Allegations of the Chandlers Emerge?**).

Jackson and his people understood that Jackson was being accused of child molestation, even if Evan was careful not to make that accusation himself. At the Westwood Marquis Hotel Evan had only read Dr. Abrams’ letter, he did not make any accusation in his own words. Apparently, Evan and his attorney Barry Rothman were trying to make sure that Evan could not be sued later if the allegations were proven to be false. Actually, according to Ray Chandler’s book, Rothman warned Pellicano on August 1, that Evan could not be sued even if the allegations were found to be untrue:

“But Barry was not intimidated. He informed Pellicano that Evan had made no public statements of defamatory remarks about Michael in any way. And further, that Evan, as a dentist, was a mandatory reporter governed by the same requirements as any licensed health professional. Not only was he required to report his suspicions to the proper authorities, but he could not be sued for doing so even if they turned out to be incorrect.” [1; page 100]

According to *All That Glitters*, a day after Rothman warned Pellicano that Evan could not be sued even if the allegations were found to be false, allegedly Pellicano called Rothman and “announced he had a way of working everything out. Michael would help Jordie and Evan “reestablish their relationship” by assisting them in setting up a screenwriting career. That way they could spend lots of time together doing what they loved best.” [1; page 101]

According to the book, this offer was the first thing that Evan brought up at the Westwood Marquis Hotel on August 4, but Pellicano denied making the offer and it became clear that he was not willing to offer him anything. According to *All That Glitters*, this made Evan “frustrated by Pellicano’s attitude, and Michael’s apparent condoning of it” [1; page 102-103] and Evan allegedly told the entertainer that he knew what he had done to Jordan and that the boy had confirmed it. The book claims “Evan then asked his son to confirm that he had, and the boy nodded affirmatively” [1; page 103], to which Jackson looked straight into Jordan’s eyes and said: “I didn’t do anything.” [1; page 103]

Allegedly, for Evan this was “the defining moment”:

“For Evan, it was the defining moment. “I knew Michael was screwed up, but until that point I wasn’t sure where he was coming from. Part of me still believed he was genuinely in love with Jordie and was acting innocently out of a warped mind, without any forethought or cunning.

“But his smile was chilling, like the smile you see on a serial killer or rapist who continually declares his innocence despite mountains of evidence against him. I knew it immediately; Michael Jackson was a child molester! It was

The Michael Jackson Allegations

suddenly so obvious, June had been fooled, Jordie had been fooled, and I had been fooled. The entire world had been fooled by this pitiful creature with a brilliant but criminal mind.” [1; page 103]

According to *All That Glitters*, Jordan “confessed” to Evan on July 16, yet Ray Chandler describes this moment on August 4 as *the* defining moment; a moment in which Jackson looked into Jordan’s eyes and said he didn’t do anything. We are to believe that this is what convinced Evan that Jackson was a child molester? Not that his son had earlier “confessed” to him? Ray Chandler closes the account of the meeting by stating:

“Evan felt victorious. Not because he had won anything, but because he had finally solved the puzzle. Not only had there been sex between his son and Michael, but he now understood Michael’s true feelings. He had glimpse into the man’s heart, and it was not a pretty sight.” [1; page 104]

Jordan allegedly “confessed” to his father on July 16, but according to this storyline, Evan “solved the puzzle” only on August 4, and does that by interpreting Jackson’s denial in a rather peculiar way.

Evan’s new conviction, however, didn’t prevent him from continuing his “negotiations” with Jackson. After the Westwood Marquis Hotel meeting, Pellicano was invited to meet with Barry Rothman and Evan at Rothman’s office and that is when Evan and Rothman made their \$20 million demand.

Ray Chandler’s reasoning for that is:

“Evan had two goals. First and foremost was the welfare of his son. On the surface Jordie seemed fine, but this wasn’t surface stuff. Dr. Abrams had expressed deep concern for the boy and left Evan with the impression that serious damage might already have occurred. [Note: Dr. Abrams had not met Jordan yet at this point. Evan refers to Dr. Abrams’ letter here, which was in answer of the version of events that he and his lawyer presented to Abrams.] Evan hoped for the best but needed to prepare for the worst.

If Jordie needed long-term counseling it could be expensive, and they would have to find a state that did not require psychotherapists to report child abuse to the authorities. That could mean relocating and closing his dental practice. How would he support his family? A worst case scenario to be sure, but possible.

Soured by his experience with Pellicano and Michael — in particular, “Michael looking into Jordie’s eyes and denying their intimacy” — Evan’s second goal was to punish Michael. “I didn’t want him to get off scot-free. But a few million is chump change to him. I figured twenty million was definitely punishing amount. At the very least it would give him something to think about. If it turned out Jordie was okay and didn’t need a lot of counseling, so much the better. He’d be set for life. He deserved it after what Michael did to him.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

“And it wasn’t just the sex part. Everyone made a big deal about the sex – the press, the cops, the DA. That was important, sure, but it wasn’t the main thing for me. It was what Michael did to him to get to that point. He took over his mind and isolated him from his family and friends and everyone he cared for. He made him his own little slave. On the outside it looked like he was showing Jordie the time of his life, but on the inside he was robbing him of his individuality, his soul. That was the real crime, and that’s what I wanted Michael to pay for.” [1; page 108-109]

Others have differing account about where the \$20 million sum demanded by Evan (who was an aspiring screenwriter) came from. On August 28, 1993 the Los Angeles Times wrote: *“Film industry sources have said that the boy’s father sought a \$20-million movie production and financing deal with Jackson.” [4]*

A friend of Jackson, painter David Nordahl elaborated that in an interview he gave to the *Reflections on the Dance* website in 2010:

“I was working on sketches for his [Jackson’s] film production company, called Lost Boys Productions. Sony had given him (Michael) \$40 million to start this production company and that little boy’s dad (Evan Chandler), who considered himself to be show business material, because he had written part of a script. After that he considered himself a Hollywood screenwriter, and being friends with Michael and his son being friends with Michael, this guy had assumed that Michael was going to make him a partner in this film production company and that’s where the \$20 million figure came from. He wanted half of that Sony money. It was proven. It was an extortion. Michael listened to his business advisors and they all told him to keep his mouth shut and to go on to Korea, go on with your tour, you’re in the middle of a tour. We’ll take care of it.” [5]

Back to Evan Chandler’s opinion that \$20 million was “punishing amount”: why not leave punishment up to the proper authorities? The answer in *All That Glitters* is that Evan thought they would not believe them and he was concerned about the publicity that the allegations would bring. Ray Chandler writes about that concern:

“It wasn’t just after the fact that Evan made these claims. He expressed his fears about a public airing on Dave’s secret tape, six weeks before the affair became public. “It’s gonna be bigger than all of us put together, and the whole thing’s just gonna crash down on everybody and destroy everybody in its sight.” His son and himself included.” [1; page 109]

However, there’s a problem with this claim. In the taped phone conversation between Evan and David Schwartz, and in the context, that statement wasn’t an expression of concern. On the contrary.

“MR. CHANDLER: It’s unfortunately gonna be too late, then, and nothing’s gonna matter at that point.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Why?

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. CHANDLER: Because the fact is so fucking overwhelming –

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah?

MR. CHANDLER: — that everybody's going to be destroyed in the process. The facts themselves are gonna – once this thing starts rolling –

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — the facts themselves are gonna overwhelm. It's gonna be bigger than all of us put together, and the whole thing's just gonna crash down on everybody and destroy everybody in its sight. That's [tape irregularity] humiliating, believe me.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah. And is that good?

MR. CHANDLER: Yeah. It's great.

MR. SCHWARTZ: Why?

MR. CHANDLER: Great, because –

MR. SCHWARTZ: I mean, is that how you're –

MR. CHANDLER: Because June and Jordy and Michael –

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — have forced me to take it to the extreme –

MR. SCHWARTZ: Yeah.

MR. CHANDLER: — to get their attention. How pitiful, pitifuckingful they are to have done that.”[3]

(Towards the end of our chapter about [The Settlement](#) you can read some more facts those go against the claim that the Chandlers settled for money and tried to avoid a criminal trial because they were wary of publicity.)

According to *All That Glitters*, Rothman was convinced that Jackson would not pay \$20 million, so he tried to talk Evan down to \$5 million, but Evan was intractable because he believed “five million was a pay-off, not a punishment.” *He wanted Michael punished for what he now believed was a blatant molestation.*” [1; page 109]

According to the book, on August 9 Pellicano came back with a counteroffer of \$1 million to fund three screenplays written by Evan and Jordan. Evan turned it down. Then on August 13 Pellicano's next offer, which made it clear that Pellicano was rather just keeping them in check, probably to be able to record them on tape while negotiating about money (indeed there were tapes that Pellicano later produced of these phone conversations), not seriously bargaining, shocked Rothman and Evan: \$350,000.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

“Barry couldn’t believe his ears. Pellicano was completely ignoring the rules of the game. Barry started at twenty million, Pellicano had countered with one million, surely the next number should be somewhere in between. And strange as it was that Pellicano had lowered his million dollar offer, it was even crazier that he refused to reinstate it when Barry told him that he had “busted [his] hump for three days...getting Evan to hopefully agree.” [1; page 117-118]

According to the book, on August 17 Pellicano called Rothman to find out if Evan accepted the offer.

“Barry told him no, but suggested again that Evan might be willing to take the original million dollar offer if Pellicano was willing to renew it. “It’s never going to happen,” the investigator insisted.” [1; page 121]

The day before, on August 16, June Chandler’s attorney, Michael Freeman informed Rothman that they had filed a motion for a Court Order to have Jordan returned to his mother, June Chandler. In response to that and frustrated by Jackson’s refusal to pay him off, on August 17 Evan took Jordan to Dr. Mathis Abrams where the boy made his allegations against Michael Jackson, which inevitably involved the authorities and afforded Evan the ability to get custody of Jordan.

According to *All That Glitters*:

“In a phone conversation the night before Freeman’s request was to be heard in court, Barry counseled Evan that unless he was willing to walk into the courtroom and accuse Michael of molesting Jordie, he didn’t have a prayer of winning; June had legal custody and that was all she needed to get Jordie back.” [1; page 119]

If one were to follow the above events, it is clear that Jackson had plenty of opportunities to pay off the Chandlers, had he really wanted to, before the case went public or to the authorities. He chose not to do so, which baffled Evan. Ray Chandler writes in his book:

“Fields and Pellicano already knew Evan was willing to negotiate. Why not pay him off and nip the nightmare in the bud while you’ve got the opportunity? Especially when you know your man is guilty of sleeping with little boys, at least. Not only do you avoid a civil suit, but also, more important, you buy your way around authorities by removing their star witness. Ten, twenty, thirty million? Money’s no object. The deal could be a fait accompli within hours. And if it doesn’t work, you can always come out swingin’ anyway.” [1; page 126]

and

“On the morning of August 17, 1993, as he negotiated with Barry Rothman, Anthony Pellicano had in his possession a copy of the psychiatrists report with the names omitted. He held in his hand the future of the most famous entertainer in human history. Yet the tape is replete with examples of Pellicano refusing to compromise on what would amount to chump change

The Michael Jackson Allegations

to Jackson. Why take the chance of Michael's name ending up on that report and triggering an investigation?" [1; page 138]

Whether you use the term extortion to describe the above events or not, Ray Chandler closes the chapter about the "negotiations" with a standalone paragraph, as if to summarize the chapter and emphasize:

"Had Michael paid the twenty million dollars demanded of him in August, rather than the following January, he might have spent the next ten years as the world's most famous entertainer, instead of the world's most infamous child molester." [1; page 128]

Yes, this is coming right from the accuser's family. Meanwhile, please remember how Jordan's allegations emerged: his father threatened and pressured him into saying what he wanted to hear (**How Did The Allegations of the Chandlers Emerge?**). The same father who then used these allegations to try to "negotiate" with Jackson for money.

Sources:

[1] Raymond Chandler – All That Glitters: The Crime and the Cover-Up (Windsong Press Ltd, September 2004)

[2] Mary A. Fischer: Was Michael Jackson Framed? (GQ, October 1994)
<http://www.buttonmonkey.com/misc/maryfischer.html>

[3] Taped phone conversation between Evan Chandler and David Schwartz (July 8, 1993)
https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/plugin-schwartz_chandler.pdf

[4] Charles P. Wallace and Jim Newton – Jackson Back on Stage; Inquiry Continues (Los Angeles Times, August 28, 1993)
http://articles.latimes.com/1993-08-28/news/mn-28760_1_michael-jackson

[5] Friendship & A Paintbrush – Interview with David Nordahl (2010)
Original source: <http://www.reflectionsonthedance.com/interviewwithdavidnordahl.html> – the audio clips those contained the conversation are no longer available on the website.

The Chandler Allegations

According to the Chandlers' story, Jordan Chandler "confessed" about the alleged sexual abuse by Michael Jackson, on July 16, 1993 after he was sedated for a minor dental procedure in his father Evan Chandler's dental office. The circumstances of that alleged "confession" were discussed in the chapter [How Did The Allegations of the Chandlers Emerge?](#).

There was more than a month between the date of Jordan's alleged "confession" to his father (July 16) and the day he was taken to a psychiatrist, Dr. Mathis Abrams (August 17), where he first made formal allegations against Michael Jackson, which then triggered the official investigation against the entertainer.

According to the book, *All That Glitters*, written by Jordan's uncle, Ray Chandler, between July 16 and August 10 Jordan's alleged "confession" was never mentioned to anyone by either Jordan or his father, not even to Jordan's mother, June Chandler even though Evan is described as desperate to convince her that their son had been molested by Michael Jackson. All Evan relied upon was the so called Abrams letter that was discussed earlier in this document. Evan Chandler used that letter to demand money from Michael Jackson between July 16 and August 17 as it was discussed in the previous chapter.

On August 16, the Court ordered Evan Chandler to return Jordan to his mother the next day. In response of that, and frustrated by Jackson's refusal to pay him off, Evan took Jordan to Dr. Abrams on August 17 where the boy alleged that he had been sexually molested by Michael Jackson. Therapists are required by law to report all child abuse allegations to authorities. Taking Jordan to a therapist and having the therapist report the allegations instead of Evan himself reporting them was a way to report the alleged child abuse through a third party without liability passing to the parent in case the allegations turn out to be false.

Although Dr. Abrams dutifully reported the case, ten years later, on December 12, 2003 he told CBS News that he did not spend enough time with Jordan Chandler to conclude whether the boy was telling the truth or not:

"I think that this [children changing their stories] is a possibility in both cases, that there could be coaching, but, again, I wasn't given the opportunity in the initial one to even try to find out." [1]

Before Jordan made his formal allegations to Dr. Abrams, he lived with his father for more than a month. Geraldine Hughes, the legal secretary of Evan's attorney, Barry Rothman claimed in an interview she gave to the *Reflections On The Dance* website that the boy spent several hours in Rothman's office alone with the attorney behind closed doors:

"I really believe that the whole thing was plotted and planned and the words were given to him [Jordan Chandler] to say because I actually witnessed the 13 year old in my attorney's office without any supervision of his parents and he was kind of snuck in there, it was like no one in the office knew he was in there. He was behind closed doors with my attorney for several hours, and I kind of believe that is where he was being told what to say. I can't say that I actually witnessed him being told, but I did witness that there was a meeting

The Michael Jackson Allegations

between my attorney and the 13 year old accuser for several hours. Actually it was a meeting that nobody in the office was supposed to know even existed and the only reason that I found out (was because) I was on my way out of the office and we were under threats of death about just walking in his office without even knocking or without announcing, and I was just rushing so I opened up the door and when I opened up the door I saw the boy in his office and I was kind of shocked. We didn't even know he was in there and he had a startled look on his face and the attorney blasted me for coming in there unannounced.” [2]

What Jordan specifically told Dr. Abrams on August 17 was not disclosed to the public. However, there are two documents which we can use to determine what was alleged: a declaration by Jordan Chandler dated December 28, 1993 [3] and an interview that psychiatrist, *Dr. Richard Gardner* conducted with Jordan on October 6, 1993 [4]. Both were leaked to the public in February, 2003, only a couple of days after Martin Bashir's manipulatively cut and narrated documentary, *Living with Michael Jackson*, was aired. [The Bashir interview will be discussed in our section about [The 2005 Allegations](#).]

Who leaked them to the media is not known. However Jordan's uncle, Ray Chandler later presented audio clips from the Richard Gardner interview in a second slanderous documentary Bashir made of Jackson, entitled *Michael Jackson's Secret World*, which aired in February 2005, just when Jackson's trial for the Arvizo case was about to begin. Ray Chandler also quotes parts of the interview in his book.

From these two documents we learn that Jordan Chandler alleged that he and Jackson started to sleep in the same bed in late March, 1993 when he, together with his mother and sister, went on a trip to Las Vegas where they stayed at the Mirage Hotel. According to Jordan Chandler, one night while Jordan and Jackson watched the movie *The Exorcist*, Jackson, because Jordan was scared, offered to let Jordan sleep in his room. There was no claim of physical contact occurring between Jordan and Jackson on that trip.

Jordan claimed that from then on, whenever he and Jackson were together, they slept in the same bed. In the Gardner interview Jordan claimed that physical contact started in early May with Jackson simply hugging him. But he contradicted himself later in the interview when he said that on a trip to Florida, which took place in April, Jackson grabbed his butt and put his tongue in his ear.

Jordan claimed that the physical contact between them “increased gradually” as time went by. First he claimed it was just a hug, then a brief kiss on the cheek, then he claimed there was kissing on the lips, first briefly and then for longer periods of time. Then, Jordan claimed, Jackson put his tongue in his mouth. Jordan claimed he told Jackson he did not like that and in response Jackson started to cry and said “*there was nothing wrong with it*” [3] and that “*just because most people believe something is wrong, doesn't make it so*” [3]. Jordan claimed that Jackson told him that other boys would kiss him with an open mouth and would let him put his tongue in their mouth. Jordan also alleged that Jackson emotionally blackmailed him, by saying that if Jordan wouldn't let him do these things it meant he didn't love him as much as another friend who would do.

Jordan claimed that “*the next step was when Michael Jackson rubbed up against me in bed. The next step was when we would lie on top of each other with erections*” [3]. In the Gardner

The Michael Jackson Allegations

interview he added: *“By the way, he never put his tongue in my mouth again once I told him not to.”* [4]

Jordan claimed in the Gardner interview that on a trip to Florida in April, 1993 Jackson kissed him, grabbed his butt and put his tongue in his ear. He also claimed that *“he was walking to the bathroom to take a shower, and he looked at me before he closed the door and he said, ‘I wish I didn’t have to do this,’ and he shut the door, implying that he wished he could be so free as to be able to change in front of me.”* [4] Jordan also claimed that when he told Jackson that he didn’t like that he put his tongue in his ear and grabbed his butt, Jackson once again started crying and tried to make him feel guilty and said that “Tommy” (a cousin or a young friend of Jackson whose name is concealed in the transcript of the Gardner interview to protect his privacy) would let him do that. *“By the way, he never did those either”* [4], Jordan added.

In May, 1993 Jordan, his mother, his sister and Jackson went to Monaco. As the story goes, Jordan and Jackson were suffering from colds and stayed in the room all day while the boy’s mother and sister went shopping. Jordan alleged that he and Jackson took a bath together and this was the first time they saw each other naked. He claimed Jackson named certain under-aged friends of his who masturbated in front of him. Then, Jordan claimed, Jackson masturbated in front of him. Jordan alleged that Jackson told him he would do it for him when he was ready. He also claimed that while they were in bed, Jackson put his hand underneath his underpants and masturbated him to a climax.

Jordan alleged that then Jackson masturbated him many times both with his hand and with his mouth until the end of their association. He also claimed that one time Jackson had him suck one of his nipples and twist the other while Jackson masturbated.

Jordan volunteered to psychoanalyze Jackson’s interaction with other children and to give his “expert” opinion about “Tommy”, who at the time appeared in the media publicly defending Jackson against the allegations:

“Who do you think is lying?”

“Tommy.”

“Why do you say that?”

“Because in public, when he’s [Jackson] with Tommy, they’re very close together physically and verbally and relationship-wise. And if one were to observe things in public, how they acted to each other, one would come to that conclusion, that it was more than just a friendly relationship.” [4]

The boy claimed that Jackson told him not to tell anyone and what they were doing was a secret. In his interview with Dr. Gardner he claimed that Jackson told him that if anybody found out about it, Jackson would go to jail and Jordan would go to a juvenile hall. When asked if he believed that, Jordan answered, *“Well, I didn’t really believe it at the time, and I definitely don’t now. But at the time I didn’t really believe it but I said, okay, whatever, and just went along with it.”* [4]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

It is not known what Dr. Gardner concluded from the interview because his analysis was not leaked with the interview. (Dr. Gardner died on May 25, 2003.) What we know is that the Chandlers and their civil lawyer, Larry Feldman took the tape to psychologist, Dr. Stanley Katz for evaluation with whom Feldman worked together since 1987. It is peculiar that they had another psychologist evaluate the interview instead of relying on the one who conducted it. Dr. Katz was formerly involved in the highly controversial McMartin preschool trial. He was the Director of Training and Professional Education at the Children's Institute International (CII). Kee McFarlane, who initially interviewed the McMartin children, worked under him. On cross-examination at Jackson's 2005 trial, Dr. Katz testified that he did the assessments of the McMartin children. [5] The CII's role in the McMartin case has been widely criticized in professional circles. Their interviewing techniques are considered coercive and manipulative which may lead the children make false allegations about sexual abuse. [6]

Besides his involvement in the McMartin case and the Jordan Chandler case Dr. Katz was also the psychologist who evaluated Jackson's 2003 accuser, Gavin Arvizo. [More about Gavin Arvizo and his allegations in our section about the [The 2005 Allegations](#).]

Before Jordan went to his father on July 11, he had always denied that Jackson ever molested him or touched him in any sexual way, although Evan had already pressured him for a long time to corroborate his preconceived idea that the boy's relationship with Jackson was sexual. These details of alleged sexual acts only emerged after Jordan got under his father's control.

Jordan Chandler never repeated his allegations in a court and was never cross-examined about them. The interview he gave to Dr. Gardner contains remarkably similar trains of thought to that of Evan Chandler's in the taped phone conversation he had with David Schwartz on July 8, 1993 [[Taped phone conversations between Evan Chandler and David Schwartz](#)]. For example, in that conversation Evan says:

*"MR. CHANDLER: But it could have been used to advantage, and in some ways **Michael is using his age and experience and his money and his power to great advantage to Jordy.**" [7]*

and

*"MR. CHANDLER: It was the saddest thing I [tape irregularity]. I mean, how do you do that? 13 years old. There's no — you know, and a [tape irregularity] just come into it? I ask you this: If Michael Jackson were just some 34-year-old person, would this be happening? No. **He's got power, he's got money, he's got seduction.** [tape irregularity] happening [tape irregularity] they've been seduced away from the family by power and by money." [7]*

and

*"MR. CHANDLER: **He could be the same person without the power and the money, and they wouldn't even be talking to him.** You know it and I know it. **So for power and money and his image, June and Jordy have broken up the family,** and even though [tape irregularity] a lot better, because I've sat down*

The Michael Jackson Allegations

and talked to him, and I've told him long before it came down to going this far – “ [7]

From the Dr. Gardner interview with Jordan:

“You still wanted to go on the tour?”

“Yes, at the time.”

“Why is that?”

“Because I was having fun. At the time, the things Michael was doing to me, they didn't affect me. Like, I didn't think anything was totally wrong with what he was doing since he was my friend, and he kept on telling me that he would never hurt me. But presently I see that he was obviously lying.”

“You're saying you didn't realize it could hurt you? Is that what you're – – “

“I didn't see anything wrong with it.”

“Do you see the wrong in it now?”

“Of course.”

“What is wrong as you see it?”

“Because he's a grown-up and he's using his experience, of his age in manipulating and coercing younger people who don't have as much experience as him, and don't have the ability to say no to someone powerful like that. He's using his power, his experience, his age – his overwhelmingness – to get what he wants.” [4]

When asked what, in his opinion, was wrong with what allegedly was done to him, Jordan was unable to relate to the alleged experience emotionally:

“When you say it could have hurt you, how could it have hurt you?”

“Everybody thinks what he was doing could hurt, otherwise it wouldn't be a crime.”

“Okay, how could it hurt? As you see it, how could it hurt you?”

“Because – that's a touchy subject, I guess. It separates you from any other people.”

“How?”

“I don't know.”

“Just your own guess.”

The Michael Jackson Allegations

“It could make me depressed or something, I don’t know.”

“Well, this is important. You say it’s a crime. Why is it a crime?”

“Because, like I said before, he’s using his experience, power, age – - ”

“How could this have left you? If this had gone on and not been interrupted, how could you have ended up?”

“According to his pattern, I believe he would have left me and, sort of dumped me, I guess you could call it. And I would be, sort of, a vegetable.” [4]

Jordan’s idea that what allegedly happened to him is wrong because it “separates you from any other people” is very similar to his father’s opinion, as related to us in his brother’s book, *All That Glitters*, which quotes Evan as saying:

*“And it wasn’t just the sex part. Everyone made a big deal about the sex – the press, the cops, the DA. That was important, sure, but it wasn’t the main thing for me. It was what Michael did to him to get to that point. **He took over his mind and isolated him from his family and friends and everyone he cared for.** He made him his own little slave. On the outside it looked like he was showing Jordie the time of his life, but on the inside he was robbing him of his individuality, his soul. **That was the real crime, and that’s what I wanted Michael to pay for.**” [8; page 109]*

or

“Even if there was no sex, Jordie’s personality had been seriously altered. As he morphed day by day into a pint-sized clone of Michael, he withdrew further and further from his family and friends.” [8; page 49]

Keep in mind in the same book, it is claimed that after Jordan “confessed” to his father on July 16 by answering with an almost inaudible “yes” to the question did Jackson touch his penis, they supposedly never talked about the allegations again [details in the chapter [How Did The Allegations of the Chandlers Emerge?](#)], yet Jordan’s train of thought, opinions, choice of words in this interview are remarkably similar to those of his father’s.

(It is also remarkable that Jordan talks about a “pattern”, when there was no pattern at all as there was no other accuser. However, literature by specialists on psychology/psychiatry and criminalistics often refer to patterns of criminals. Would a 13-year-old use such terms and have such concepts without adult coaching?)

Continuing with the Dr. Gardner interview, Jordan goes on to say a couple of questions later the best thing that happened to him in his life was when he told his father what Jackson had allegedly done to him, “because once I told him, I knew that Michael would never be able to do that to me again. And when something horrible ends, it’s most likely the best thing in your life” [4]. Take note that just a couple of sentences before Jordan’s concern was that Jackson would have “left him” and “dumped” him. He also wanted to go on tour with Jackson and said that the alleged molestation did not affect him.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

In the interview Dr. Gardner asks Jordan if he ever had any homosexual attractions or feelings, but the boy firmly states he is only interested in girls and he does not seem to be confused about his sexuality. When asked by Dr. Gardner if he had a girlfriend, he is described as smiling and answers that he was *“in the process of chasing after one”* [4]. In *All That Glitters* it is even stated that Jordan at the time only cared about his girlfriend and that he seemed to be *“the least affected”* by the whole case. Ray Chandler quoted his brother, Evan telling his ex-wife, June:

“Jordie’s into his girlfriend. That’s all he cares about. I don’t even think about it day to day because it’s so speculative, you know, the news and their comments. I’m only interested in the facts and what actually happens. Quite frankly, I’m beginning to think that Jordie will be the least affected by all this. He seems very strong. He’ll be very scared if it goes to court, but that’s probably the main emotion he’ll feel.” [8; page 198-199]

In the interview, Jordan claims he went along with the alleged sexual acts because he was overwhelmed by Jackson and he was under his spell. However, at another point in the interview he says he was not in awe of Jackson at all and that to him the star was *“just like, a regular person”* [4].

Dr. Gardner also asked Jordan if he had any fears. Perhaps not understanding that Dr. Gardner referred to the type of fear that is common in many children who suffered with sexual abuse, Jordan replied that he was only afraid of cross-examination.

“What about fears? Any fears of any kind?”

“No.”

“Sometimes people, after experiences of this kind, develop different kinds of fears. You have no fears?”

“Maybe of cross-examination but that’s all. I mean I have nothing to hide, it’s just the thought of it.” [4]

In the interview Dr. Gardner also asks Jordan about his relationship with his mother, June Chandler. The psychiatrist tries to find out if Jordan feels resentment toward her for *“facilitating”* the alleged abuse. Jordan, however, says he does not feel resentment toward her and says his mother was under Jackson’s spell just like he was. Dr. Gardner pressed him further on the issue:

“What about trust of your mother? Do you think any trust of your mother has been affected?”

“Well, not because she, as people would say, she wanted to pimp me out. More because of maybe, I tried to tell her one time and she didn’t believe me.”

“When was that? Do you remember?”

“No.”

The Michael Jackson Allegations

“How do you feel about that?”

“I feel that if there’s any remote, itty-bitty thing in your mind that your kid may be getting hurt, you should put an army together, you know, if there’s a suspicion as strong as that, that my Dad had carried out this far. She should have at least listened to what I had to say.” [4]

Keep in mind that Jordan was still under his father’s control when this interview was conducted.

Besides the strangeness of Jordan saying that his main problem with his mother was NOT that she allegedly tried to “pimp him out” (“as people would say”), but that she would not listen to him, this is yet another contradiction in the Chandler story. Here Jordan claims he tried to tell his mother about the alleged abuse, but she did not listen. However, in Ray Chandler’s book, *All That Glitters* we read that Jordan was very secretive about the alleged abuse and despite of repeated questions by his father or others (like Jackson’s private investigator, Anthony Pellicano on July 9, 1993) he would not disclose it. This conversation between the boy and his father took place at the end of May, 1993, according to the book:

“I’ll be there in a minute,” Evan said, and as Jordie turned to leave, he added, “Hey, Jordie, are you and Michael doin’ it?”

“That’s disgusting!” Jordie reacted. “I’m not into that.”

“Just kidding.”

Evan explained it this way. “It was crude, but I was so anxious, I decided on the spur of the moment to say it because I figured it would elicit an unplanned response.”

Jordie’s repulsion brought Evan great relief.” [8; page 46]

In our article entitled [**How Did The Allegations of the Chandlers Emerge?**](#) you can read in detail about the Chandlers’ version of how Jordan allegedly “confessed” about the abuse: his father basically threatened and blackmailed him into it, despite of Jordan denying any wrongdoing by Jackson initially. Even according to their own story, it was not a voluntary disclosure by the boy or something he was eager to do – on the contrary.

As you can read in the above referenced article, according Ray Chandler’s book on August 6, 1993 – three weeks after his alleged “confession” to his father – Jordan was still unwilling to disclose his alleged abuse to his mother. In actuality, based on the same book, on August 10 June Chandler took out the boy to lunch and told him that if he would confirm Evan’s allegations against Jackson then she would help them punish him. Yet Jordan was still not willing to tell her that Jackson had allegedly molested him. The confirmation would finally come the next morning, according to the book, when Jordan called his mother and told her about his allegations on the phone – with Evan standing next to him. June then requested to talk to the boy alone, but Evan refused to let them. Before that the book portrays the boy as being firmly against telling it to his mother and it also claims that he did not want his father to tell it to her either.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

In the interview with Dr. Gardner Jordan's answers often sound mechanical, rehearsed and at times he uses expressions and concepts that sound very unusual from a 13-year-old.

Like mentioned earlier in this chapter, in Ray Chandler's book Evan Chandler stated that he believed out of the whole family the allegations affected Jordan the least. The same book also recalls Jordan's behaviour as he emerged from Dr. Mathis Abrams' office on August 17, 1993, after he first told the story of his alleged sexual abuse.

Ten minutes after noon, Jordie finally emerged. "Hey, Dad, can we get something to eat?" His favorite question.

Evan was startled. He expected Jordie to come out heavy-hearted, but the boy seemed exuberated, almost whimsical. "Are you okay?" Evan asked, wrapping his arms around the boy.

"Yeah, Pops. Let's go, I'm starved." [8; page 121]

Sources:

[1] Dimond Misleading the Public, Katz not first to hear allegations? Bullet #113

<https://site2.mjeol.com/2005/09/14/part-2-tab-reporter-gets-the-ax-amidst-criticism-mb283/>

[2] Interview with Geraldine Hughes by Deborah L. Kunesch

<http://www.reflectionsonthedance.com/Interview-with-Geraldine-Hughes.html>

[3] Declaration by Jordan Chandler on December 28, 1993 as leaked in February 2003

<http://www.thesmokinggun.com/file/jacko-original-child-abuse-allegations>

[4] Dr. Richard Gardner's interview with Jordan Chandler as leaked in February 2003

<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/j-chandler-gardner-interview.pdf>

[5] Dr. Stanley Katz's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (March 30, 2005)

[6] See for example:

- Learning From the McMartin Hoax (1989): http://www.ipt-forensics.com/journal/volume1/j1_2_7.htm

- Suggestive interviewing in the McMartin Preschool and Kelly Michaels daycare abuse cases: A case study (5 May, 2005): http://digitalcommons.utep.edu/cgi/viewcontent.cgi?article=1014&context=james_wood

[7] Taped phone conversation between Evan Chandler and David Schwartz (July 8, 1993)

https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/plugin-schwartz_chandler.pdf

[8] Raymond Chandler – All That Glitters: The Crime and the Cover-Up (Windsong Press Ltd, September 2004)

The Prosecution's Hunt For Other Victims

In 1993, to substantiate the case against Michael Jackson, police officers interviewed 40-60 children (according to some sources, up to 100) who had either spent time with Jackson or at his Neverland Ranch. None of the children corroborated the accuser's story. They all told authorities that they had never been molested by the star and he had never done anything inappropriate to them.

Frustrated by the lack of corroborating victims, the police engaged in questionable tactics while interviewing the children to try to create support for the Chandler case. These parents and their children turned to Jackson's attorney, Bert Fields to complain about this harassment by the police. Fields wrote this letter to Los Angeles police chief, Willie Williams in 1993:

Dear Chief Williams:

I represent Michael Jackson. All my adult life I have been a staunch supporter of the LAPD. For years, I represented Jack Webb. Working with Jack, on Dragnet and Adam-12 I met many officers for who my respect and admiration continues to this day. Your comparative handful of officers, who risk their lives every day to protect the rest of us deserve our unqualified appreciation.

Sometimes, however, even a dedicated police officer, when engaged in a significant investigation, loses sight of the importance of fairness and respecting the rights of the accused.

In the current investigation of Michael Jackson, that has occurred, officers investigating the matter have entered the homes of minors and have subjected them to high-pressure interrogation, sometimes in the absence of their parents. I am advised that your officers have told frightened youngsters outrageous lies, such as "we have nude photos of you" in order to push them into making accusations against Mr. Jackson. There are, of course, no such photos of these youngsters and they have no truthful accusations to make. But your officers appear ready to employ any device to generate potential evidence against Mr. Jackson.

In addition, your officers have told parents that their children have been molested, even though the children in question have unequivocally denied this. They have also referred to Mr. Jackson as a "pedophile", even though he has not been charged, much less convicted.

And harassing minors and their parents is not all. The search conducted at Mr. Jackson's residence resulted in the removal of many items of his personal property, including his address book, which includes the names and addresses of potential witnesses. We have asked for either the return of such records or that they be copied at our expense. This has been refused, in order to hamper the defense in conducting its own investigations of the case.

These tactics are not merely inappropriate, they are disgraceful....

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Even the New York police, not known for their gentility, refrained from conducting this kind of overzealous campaign against Woody Allen, who was accused of a similar offense. Why is the LAPD not according Michael Jackson the same degree of balance and fairness?

I urge you to put an end to these abuses. Investigate these accusations as thoroughly as possible, but do it in a manner consistent with honest, common decency, and the high standards that once made me proud of the LAPD.

Sincerely,

Bertram Fields [1]

A tape recording of the 1993 interrogation of actor, Corey Feldman that the television show *Celebrity Justice* leaked during Jackson's 2005 criminal case serves as an example of how such interrogations were conducted. Feldman, who had been friends with Jackson since he was a teenager, is interviewed by Sergeant Deborah Linden and despite repeatedly telling her that Jackson had never done anything inappropriate to him, she continues to suggest that something must have happened and for over an hour pressures him to say something incriminating about the singer. [2]

In actuality, Feldman tells Linden that he had been molested as a child, only not by Michael Jackson. He even names his molester (although the name of that person was not disclosed by *Celebrity Justice*) a fact the investigator completely ignores. She seems only interested in trying to get incriminating statements about Michael Jackson. [2] Feldman was 22 years old at the time of the interview, but many children went through similar interrogations, sometimes in the absence of their parents.

Using highly questionable interrogation methods, the police was able to pressure one young boy, 13-year-old Jason Francia (the son of a former maid of Jackson), into claiming that Jackson had improperly touched him while tickling him. The boy initially denied any wrongdoing by the star but when interrogators pressured him, leading him to give the answers they obviously wanted to hear, he gave in. When Jackson's attorney, Thomas Mesereau asked Jason Francia during Jackson's 2005 trial why he went back and forth with his claims in his 1993-94 police interviews, he said: "*I was trying to figure out how to get out of there*"[3], referring to the high-pressured interrogation of the police. You will find details about Jason Francia, the improper police interviews that led to his allegations and his 2005 testimony in a later chapter [[Jason Francia](#)].

During a press conference broadcast live throughout the United States and the world after Jackson's arrest in November 2003, District Attorney, Thomas Sneddon called for victims of Jackson to come forward. The prosecution even set up a website for alleged victims to contact them. Furthermore, both in 1993 and in 2003-04, they sent officers all around the world to interview children who had been in contact with Jackson and both times they found nothing (except for Jason Francia's above mentioned, questionably obtained story about alleged improper tickling).

While the prosecution struggled to find credible corroborating "victims" for their case, a great number of kids and their parents came forward in support of Jackson. In addition to

The Michael Jackson Allegations

stating to investigators that Jackson had never done anything inappropriate to them, many of these children lent Jackson support by defending him in public.

This made the prosecution desperate enough to rely on third party “witnesses” instead of the alleged victims themselves during Jackson’s 2005 trial, when they introduced their so called “prior bad acts” evidence. They called former Jackson employees on the stand who had an axe to grind against the entertainer, who first made allegations against Jackson in the tabloid media instead of contacting authorities, and who all had financial motives to accuse him. This will be discussed in detail in the next chapter.

Meanwhile the media, to inflame sensationalism, promised, and delivered huge amounts of money to people willing to make slanderous claims about Jackson. This will be discussed in detail in a later chapter entitled **The Media’s Role In The Allegations Against Michael Jackson**.

Source:

[1] Letter by Bertram Fields, Michael Jackson’s attorney to Los Angeles police chief, Willie Williams in 1993

[2] Tape of Corey Feldman’s police interrogation as published by *Celebrity Justice* in 2004 or 2005 (December, 1993)

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=rdITa9Ulx2A>

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=3F0I7q94HEQ>

[3] Jason Francia’s testimony at Michael Jackson’s 2005 trial (April 4-5, 2005)

<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

The Prosecution's Witnesses

Ralph Chacon, Kassim Abdool and Adrian McManus

The so called “Neverland 5” was a group of five former employees of Jackson: *Kassim Abdool, Ralph Chacon, Adrian McManus, Sandy Domz* and *Melanie Bagnall* who sued Jackson in the 90s alleging wrongful termination. Three of these five people – Abdool, Chacon and McManus – testified for the prosecution at the Jackson’s 2005 trial in support of their “prior bad acts” case. They claimed that during their employment at Neverland (1990/1991 to 1994) they witnessed Jackson behave inappropriately with children. Former security guard, Chacon claimed he witnessed Jackson sexually molesting Jordan Chandler on one occasion [1]. Former security guard, Abdool, who worked directly with Chacon on the same shift, and described himself as Chacon’s friend, did not make that same claim, but he supported Chacon’s allegations by claiming he, too witnessed some of the improprieties Chacon claimed to have witnessed [2]. Former maid, McManus claimed that she witnessed Jackson behave inappropriately with Jordan Chandler, Brett Barnes and Macaulay Culkin [3]. None of these people ever reported or even mentioned what they had allegedly seen at the time that the alleged molestations and improprieties supposedly occurred. **These stories first surfaced in the spring of 1994, more than half a year after the Chandler scandal went public.**

In actuality, on December 7, 1993 Adrian McManus testified under oath in a deposition for the Chandler civil case that she never observed any inappropriate behavior or any form of sexual behavior by Jackson towards Jordan Chandler or any other child. She even said she trusted Jackson so much that she would have no problem with leaving her son alone with him. When Jackson’s attorney, Thomas Mesereau confronted her with her 1993 deposition in 2005, McManus simply claimed that she did not tell the truth in that 1993 deposition [3].



Ralph Chacon in 2005

Chacon and Abdool first made allegations against Jackson when they were subpoenaed by the prosecution to appear in front of the two Grand Juries which were convened to examine the allegations against Jackson in the spring of 1994. Abdool appeared before the Los Angeles Grand Jury and Chacon appeared before the Santa Barbara Grand Jury. Conveniently, this was also the first time they claimed to have confided in each other about what they had allegedly observed, although they worked on the same shift and they were supposedly friends. Prior to this time they never mentioned to anyone that they witnessed any wrongdoing in regards to Jackson. In fact, on January 13, 1994 Abdool signed a statement for Jackson’s representatives that stated he had never seen Jackson touch any child in a sexually inappropriate manner or in any way that could be construed as sexual [2].

When Chacon and Abdool changed their stories and first came up with claims of improprieties and child molestation, Chacon was deposed by District Attorney,

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Thomas Sneddon and Detective Russ Birchim for the Chandler case. At the time, Chacon asked Birchim for money to help him relocate his wife. Birchim delivered the money and the gun permit that Chacon had also requested [3]. Jackson's lawyer, Thomas Mesereau asked Chacon about it during Jackson's 2005 trial. First Chacon said he did not remember it but when Mesereau showed him a transcript of his deposition, he slowly acknowledged his prior testimony, stating it "*probably*" happened. When questioned by Sneddon on redirect examination Chacon suddenly remembered everything clearly. However, Sneddon quickly cut him off, stating "*it's not important*".

Q. You indicated that you may have asked Sergeant or now Commander Birchim for money for your wife –

A. Yes, sir.

Q. — do you recall? Do you remember why that was?

A. Yes, sir.

Q. Why was that?

A. Well, my wife's sister-in-law had just died, and –

Q. That's all right, I'll withdraw the question. That's okay. It's not important.
[1]

At the trial Chacon disclosed that towards the end of his employment by Jackson he had conflicts with the star's personal bodyguards, called the Office of Special Services because, according to him, they interfered with his work. Chacon admitted that he and Abdool were upset and dissatisfied because they found out that a new security staff for Jackson was paid more than they were. [1]

During his testimony it was also revealed that in 1994 Chacon was in financial difficulties, owing money on a lost lawsuit. Although documents were shown to prove this, Chacon claimed he did not remember that ruling. [1] Jackson's lawyer, Thomas Mesereau also revealed that Chacon owed money on back child support and was missing payments on his rent, but had bragged to his landlady, Linda Allen, that with a lawsuit against Jackson he would win millions and would even be able to drive around in a 450 Mercedes. Chacon denied these claims. [1]

Shortly after that time, Abdool and Chacon (McManus joined later) went to a civil attorney, *Michael Ring*, who on their behalf, on December 2, 1994, filed a civil lawsuit against Jackson and other employees of the star demanding \$16 million in damages (eventually all five people of the "Neverland 5" group). They claimed that during their employment they were harassed and intimidated, which resulted in emotional distress and various medical problems that made them "*emotionally disabled*" and unable to work. They also claimed that they were wrongfully terminated by Jackson. Jackson counter-sued and eventually Chacon and McManus were found liable for stealing from Jackson's property [1] [2] [3].

At that civil trial the Neverland 5 and their attorney were sanctioned \$66,000 for lying during their depositions and on the stand and for discovery violations (ie. for hiding evidence from

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Jackson's lawyers). Judge Zel Canter, who presided over the civil trial, left the bench after stating he was disgusted [4]. The jury rejected the wrongful termination lawsuit against Jackson and ordered the Neverland 5 to pay him damages. The court also imposed attorneys fees and costs of \$1.4 million against plaintiffs. As of the time of their testimony in 2005 none of them paid the damages to Jackson. According to his testimony, after the verdict in the civil trial Chacon filed for bankruptcy. [1] [2] [3]

During the 2005 trial, while on the stand, Chacon denied he knew anything about the amount of money his lawyer demanded from Jackson at the civil trial. However, documents from a deposition of Chacon at the time showed that not only did he know of the \$16 million demand from the entertainer, but at one point Chacon even said that \$16 million was not enough. Later, on re-cross examination Chacon admitted he knew how much money was demanded in the lawsuit. He also said in a deposition that Jackson should compensate him for the rest of his life [1].

Before their lawsuit in the 90s, under the direction of their attorney, Michael Ring the Neverland 5 contacted a tabloid broker, Gary Morgan from the *Splash News and Picture Agency* to sell slanderous stories about Jackson and children and also about Jackson and his then wife, Lisa Marie Presley. Morgan arranged interviews with magazines, such as *The Star* and TV programs, such as *Inside Edition* [1] [2] [3]. According to McManus' 2005 testimony, \$32,000 or more was received for their stories and almost all of it went to Ring, to finance their civil lawsuit, from which they hoped to get millions of dollars [3]. Chacon admitted that before they went to *The Star* they also talked to a certain journalist, Victor Gutierrez [1]. Abdool also talked about this connection, stating that he met Gutierrez once and they had a two, three hours conversation [2]. McManus testified that Gutierrez "was going to try to help us in our lawsuit" [3]. You will be able to learn more about why this connection is significant in the later chapter entitled **Victor Gutierrez and his role in the allegations against Michael Jackson**.

On the stand Abdool claimed that he, Chacon and McManus did not discuss and harmonize their stories in advance that they were selling to tabloids. However, this was contradicted by Chacon's testimony in which he admitted they made drafts about their stories in Ring's office about what they were going to tell tabloids [2] [3].

Besides making money, another purpose for these interviews and the Neverland 5's claims of having witnessed Jackson in improper situations with children: putting pressure on him and trying to make him settle the case. Although at Jackson's 2005 trial Chacon claimed not to have known anything about such tactics, he admitted it would not surprise him if that was the case.

Q. BY MR. MESEREAU: At the time you and Mr. Abdool and Ms. McManus and your lawyer went to a tabloid to give a story about Mr. Jackson, do you know whether or not your lawyer was trying to negotiate money from Mr. Jackson?

A. No, sir.

Q. Do you know whether or not your lawyer was trying to pressure Mr. Jackson by threatening bad publicity?

The Michael Jackson Allegations

A. No, sir.

Q. Did you ever hear of anything like that going on?

A. No, sir.

Q. Okay. So if that went on, you'd be shocked, true?

A. Probably not, sir.

Q. Probably not?

A. I guess not, no. [1]

One of Chacon's complaints in the 1995 lawsuit against Jackson was that Jackson caused him emotional distress because he *"stared at him all the time"* [1]. Because of that he claimed he was entitled to damages. When his claim was found to be false Jackson's attorney, Tom Mesereau asked him why he said that if it was not true. Chacon's answer was: *"I guess just to say it"* [1].



Adrian McManus in 2005

During the civil trial in the 1990s, another former employee of Jackson's, Francine Orosco testified that McManus asked her to say she witnessed a male employee of Jackson sexually harass McManus. Orosco also testified that she visited McManus at home during their employment and McManus showed her a room filled with watches, posters, clocks, sunglasses, T-shirts and laundry baskets filled with Michael Jackson's clothes and other items she stole from Neverland. It was also found that McManus stole a drawing Jackson made of Elvis Presley and sold it for \$1000 to Gary Morgan from *Splash* [3].

It also emerged that earlier McManus and her husband were ordered to pay \$17,000 each in another lawsuit, in which it was ascertained that they stole money from an estate that was set-up for minor relatives of McManus. They willfully and maliciously defrauded Shane and Megan McManus, a nephew and a niece of Adrian McManus, out of their money. They were sued by Rosalie Hill, the children's guardian ad litem. Judge Richard A. St. John found that the the money was held in the trust for the benefit of those two children and McManus and her husband dissipated those funds [3] [4].

Sources:

[1] Ralph Chacon's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (April 7, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[2] Kassim Abdool's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (April 25, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[3] Adrian McManus' testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (April 7-8, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

The Michael Jackson Allegations

[4] Supplemental Brief In Support Of Opposition To District Attorney's Motion For Admission Of Alleged Prior Offenses (March 25, 2005)

<http://www.sbscpublicaccess.org/docs/ctdocs/032505supppp1108.pdf>

Phillip and Stella LeMarque



Phillip LeMarque in 2005

Another “prior bad acts” witness of the prosecution in 2005 was Phillip LeMarque. LeMarque and his wife, Stella Marcroft worked for Jackson at Neverland for about ten months beginning in 1991. Marcroft was a cook and her husband was in charge of serving the food to guests. After they left Neverland they opened a restaurant in Encino, but it went bankrupt and at the time when the Chandler allegations went public they were heavily in debt. Later in the 1990s they went into the pornographic website business.

At Jackson’s 2005 trial, LeMarque claimed that on one occasion he witnessed Jackson put his hand into Macaulay Culkin’s pants. Though LeMarque claimed he was so shocked by the sight that he almost dropped the French fries he was about to serve, he never bothered to report to authorities what he had allegedly witnessed. In actuality, even after the Chandler allegations went public in 1993 he and his wife did not turn to authorities but tried to sell their story to tabloids.

They met with private investigator and tabloid broker Paul Barresi whom LeMarque said was an old friend of his wife. Barresi then negotiated about their story with tabloids as did their lawyer friend Arnold Kessler. The police was informed about the LeMarques by Barresi behind the couple’s back (Barresi had his own selfish reasons to report the story to authorities as you will see in the later chapter **Is it true that the FBI had evidence of Michael Jackson paying “hush money” to dozens of young boys?**), the LeMarques themselves never went to authorities to report their story. They got contacted by authorities only after Barresi reported them without their consent.

At first the LeMarques claimed they did not discuss the price of their story with Barresi but later admitted they did. LeMarque tried to distance himself from the money negotiations by saying he and his wife just listened to what Barresi had to offer. However, Barresi taped their conversations and it came out that when Barresi offered them \$100,000 for a story the LeMarques tried to up it to \$500,000.

Q. You upped the price to 500 from \$100,000 at one point?

A. Yeah, to see if we were going to do it. [1]

and

Q. Did you have a discussion with Paul Baressi where you said, “We don’t want 100,000. We want 500,000”? Yes or no.

A. Yes. [1]

During the testimony LeMarque said he stopped negotiating with Barresi because he realized he was “sleazy” [1]. Jackson’s lawyer, Thomas Mesereau asked him why he thought that and LeMarque said he thought so because Barresi secretly taped their conversations. However, on

The Michael Jackson Allegations

cross-examination he contradicted himself by saying he learned that Barresi taped them only a couple of days before his testimony at the 2005 trial [1]. He also said he learned that from the news, although earlier in his testimony he claimed he did not follow the news regarding the allegations which Mesereau pointed out to him when he asked: *"I thought you didn't follow the news about the case"* [1].

Barresi then allegedly went to various media outlets and sold the LeMarques' story, but Phillip LeMarque claimed they had nothing to do with that; that Barresi acted on his own, without their consent. However, the LeMarques' lawyer Arnold Kessler also contacted tabloids at the time trying to sell the LeMarques' story. Again, LeMarque claimed on the stand that Kessler acted on his own, without their consent. LeMarque also claimed on the stand that he was not aware of the tabloid articles that were published in 1993 about their story, quoting them. As he sat there in 2005 he claimed that he had never even heard about them [1].

LeMarque gave a written statement to the police on September 10, 1993 about what he allegedly witnessed. On further recross examination, Mesereau asked him if he gave this statement to the police after he had already talked to Barresi about selling stories to tabloids. At first he said he did not think so, then that he was not sure and eventually he admitted that he gave the statement *"probably after"* they had already talked to Barresi [1]. It indeed was after they talked to Barresi as Barresi conducted his interview with them on August 28, 1993.

In a 1994 documentary entitled *Tabloid Truth: The Michael Jackson Scandal* even Barresi himself expressed doubt about the credibility of the couple and revealed that the couple first turned to him trying to sell their story for money [2]. They only talked to authorities after Barresi sent them the tape he made of their conversation.

The final blow to LeMarques' credibility and testimony came about a month later, when Jackson's defense presented their side of the case and called Macaulay Culkin who testified that Jackson never molested him and never touched him in any improper way:

Q. You heard about some of the allegations about whether or not Mr. Jackson improperly ever touched you, right?

A. Yes.

Q. Did Mr. Jackson ever molest you?

A. Never.

Q. Did Mr. Jackson ever improperly touch you?

A. Absolutely not.

Q. Has Mr. Jackson ever touched you in any sexual type of way?

A. No.

Q. Has he ever touched you in any offensive way?

The Michael Jackson Allegations

A. No.

Q. What do you think of these allegations?

A. I think they're absolutely ridiculous.

Q. When did you first learn that these prosecutors were claiming that you were improperly touched?

A. When did I first learn that?

Q. Yes.

A. I — somebody called me up and said, "You should probably check out CNN, because they're saying something about you."

Q. And did you check it out?

A. Yes, I did.

Q. And what did you learn?

A. I learned that it was a former cook had done something to me, and there was something about a maid or something like that. It was just one of those things where I just couldn't believe it. I couldn't believe that, first of all, these people were saying these things or — let alone that it was out there and people were thinking that kind of thing about me. And at the same time it was amazing to me that they — that nobody approached me and even asked me whether or not the allegations were true. They kind of just were — threw it out there just like — they didn't even — they didn't even double-check it basically. I mean, even if they assumed that they knew the answer, what got me was that they didn't even ask.

Q. Now, are you saying these prosecutors never tried to reach you to ask you your position on this?

A. No, they didn't.

Q. Do you know if any police officer from Santa Barbara has ever tried to call you to see what the truth is?

A. No. [3]

Sources:

[1] Phillip LeMarque's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (April 8, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[2] Tabliod Truth – The Michael Jackson Scandal (documentary by Frontline, February 1994)
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=BWoX4gd4JW0>
(Barresi talks about the LeMarques between 31:50-33:00 and 34:40-38:45)

The Michael Jackson Allegations

[3] Macaulay Culkin's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (May 11, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

Bob Jones and Stacy Brown



Bob Jones with Michael Jackson

Bob Jones and Stacy Brown also testified for the prosecution about “prior bad acts” in the 2005 case.

Bob Jones was in charge of public relations for Michael Jackson between 1987 and 2004. He started to work on a book about Jackson entitled *The Man Behind The Mask* with journalist, Stacy Brown as a co-writer in January, 2004, just about two months after Jackson’s arrest in the Gavin Arvizo case. When Jackson learned of this, he fired him on June 9, 2004 [1] [2].

According to Stacy Brown’s testimony, when he and Jones started to write the book, Jones told him that he was broke and needed money [2]. Brown also told Jones was upset because of the way he was terminated, in a letter written by Michael Jackson’s brother, Randy, rather than face-to-face [2]. Both Jones and Brown admitted that the more sensationalist a book is the easier it is to promote and sell it [1] [2]. In 2004, while Jackson was preparing for his trial, the hot topic about him was, of course, the allegations of child molestation. Under these circumstances Jones and Brown included innuendo in their book in that direction, even though, as he admitted on the stand in 2005, Jones never witnessed Jackson molest anyone, and neither did Brown.

At the time of the trial the book was not published yet but the manuscript contained an allegation of the improper touching of Jordan Chandler by Michael Jackson and because of this, Jones and Brown were called to testify. The allegation was that Jones witnessed Jackson lick the top of Jordan’s head on an airplane flight back to the USA from Europe, where Jackson and the Chandlers (June and Jordan Chandler and Jordan’s younger sister) attended the World Music Awards in Monaco in 1993 [1].

However, when testifying under oath Jones admitted that he did not remember ever witnessing such an incident and he did not remember Jackson ever licking Jordan’s head: *“I don’t recall ever seeing any head licking, and I made that as adamant as I could”*, said Jones on the stand [1].

This made prosecutor Gordon Auchincloss, who did the questioning, argumentative with the witness and he made attempts to impeach him. Remember, Jones was the prosecution’s own witness.

On cross-examination Jackson’s lawyer, Tom Mesereau showed that in an interview Jones had with the prosecutors on April 7, 2005 (four days before his court testimony) Jones was asked: *“Um, did you see Mr Jackson engage in any head licking in the World Music Awards?”*, and Jones’ reaction was: *“No, no, no”* [1]. And then he was asked: *“Um, did you see Mr. Jackson engage in any head licking of anybody?”* and he answered: *“Never”* [1]. About the alleged head licking on the plane Jones said: *“I just don’t remember and I would be lying to say that I did”* [1].

The Michael Jackson Allegations

During his testimony Jones admitted that on the plane Jordan's mother, June Chandler was seated so that she could see Jordan and Jackson [1]. I have to note that the Chandlers never made any allegation about any head licking. June Chandler testified in 2005 and she never claimed to have witnessed such an incident, nor did Jordan Chandler claim any such incident.

At the trial only this one aspect of the book was discussed, but Jones admitting under oath that it was a lie gives us an idea about the general credibility of that book. Despite of that the book went on to be published later on and its claims were often referenced in the media.

Sources:

[1] Bob Jones' testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (April 11, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[2] Stacy Brown's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (April 11, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[Note: There was one another former employee of Jackson who was used by the prosecution as a "prior bad acts" witness in 2005: maid Blanca Francia. Her allegations include allegations about Wade Robson, therefore she is discussed in detail [in the document where we are discussing Robson's posthumus allegations against Jackson](#).

Allegations made by a Filipino couple, Mariano "Mark" and Ofelia "Faye" Quindoy, who worked for Jackson between 1989 and 1990, are discussed in the chapter [**The Media's Role In The Allegations Against Michael Jackson**](#) – "Prosecution witnesses sponsored by tabloids".]

Did Jordan Chandler's description of Michael Jackson's penis match the photographs taken of the star's genitalia by the police?

On December 20, 1993 Michael Jackson was subjected to a humiliating strip search in which his genitalia and buttocks were photographed and videofilmed. Authorities wanted to compare the photos with the descriptions his accuser, Jordan Chandler gave to the police.

Later District Attorney Thomas Sneddon claimed that Jordan's description was a match. On May 25 2005, about a week before the end of Michael Jackson's four month long trial, Sneddon attempted to introduce Jordan Chandler's description and drawing as well as the photographs of Jackson's genitalia. In the Motion Sneddon claimed:

"The photographs reveal a mark on the right side of Defendant's penis at about the same relative location as the dark blemish located by Jordan Chandler on his drawing of Defendant's erect penis. I believe the discoloration Chandler identified in his drawing was not something he could have or would have guessed about, or could have seen accidentally. I believe Chandler's graphic representation of the discolored area on Defendant's penis is substantially corroborated by the photographs taken by Santa Barbara Sheriff's detectives at a later time."

[...]

"Jordan Chandler's knowledge on December 1, 1993 is relevant because it could only have been acquired in the course of a close and intimate relationship with Defendant." [1]

This one mark is all Sneddon's motion mentions – nothing about any other features in either Jordan's description or on the photos. It is because out of the whole description he could find only one mark as "matching" (according to his own assessment at least) and even that only as being "about" and "relatively" at the same location?

In the same declaration Sneddon stated that his assessments and conclusions are based on his belief:

"I declare under penalty of perjury that the foregoing is true and correct except for those statements made on information and belief, and to those statements, I believe them to be true." [1]

The timing of Sneddon's move – it seemed to have been a last minute, desperate attempt to try to prejudice the jury after both the Arvizo case and the "prior bad acts" case against Jackson fell apart – and the fact that Jordan Chandler refused to testify in 2005, so he could not be cross-examined, made it very unlikely that Judge Rodney Melville would allow the introduction of this material, and indeed he did not.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Initial media reports after the 1993 strip search (for example, Reuters, USA Today in January 1994), citing law enforcement sources, stated that the boy's description *did not match* the photographs taken of Jackson's genitalia. The claim that the photos matched the description spread through the media only later – particularly after an interview Sneddon gave to *Vanity Fair's* Maureen Orth in September 1995 where he claimed the photographs matched Jordan's description [2].

Interestingly, Dr. Richard Strick, the doctor who was present at the strip search from the authorities' side, indicated in an interview with Fox News in October 2009 that he did not come to a conclusion on his own, but rather someone else told him later that it was a match.

“The genitalia were very oddly colored with dark skin and light skin and I was told later that the deposition and the photos that were taken absolutely matched what the child had described” [3].

(Emphasis added.)

Based on his statement it seems Dr. Strick did not actually see Jordan's description and drawing; he was only told that there was a match. This is odd; as a medical professional, hired by the authorities to be present at the strip search, one would expect that he would have been asked to make the determination. It is unknown who told Dr. Strick that there was a match but all claims of this nature seem to point to Sneddon as a source. Sneddon, however, cannot be considered an unbiased source given his decade long malice against Jackson. At Jackson's 2005 trial, for example, he made many claims in his motions which then were proven to be false on the stand – often by his own witnesses. Sneddon's motions were often clearly deceptive.

Putting aside why Dr. Strick was not involved in making a determination and who exactly later told him that the description was a match, the fact that Jackson was not arrested after the strip search and indicted by any of the two Grand Juries which were convened against him, indicates that, despite Sneddon's claims, there was no match.

There are further indications that there was no match. In early January 1994, Larry Feldman, the civil attorney representing Jordan Chandler, filed a motion with the Civil Court that contained a “multiple choice request”. On January 5, 1994 the Los Angeles Times reported:

“Feldman said he filed a motion in court that is a “multiple choice” request: Jackson may provide copies of the police photographs, submit to a second search, or the court may bar the photographs from the civil trial as evidence.” [4]

So Jordan Chandler's attorney sought to get the photographs barred from the civil trial as evidence. Feldman said he filed the motion because both Jackson's attorneys and the Los Angeles County District Attorney's office refused to give him copies of the photographs. However, it is a logical expectation that if Feldman was certain that his client was telling the truth then he would have been certain that the photographs would support and not harm his case. Instead of giving the option of barring the photographs from the court, if Feldman was confident in his client's story, he should have fought to have them introduced.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

This action refutes the notion that Jackson settled the civil case out of court with the Chandlers because the photographs matched Jordan's description. In actuality, Jordan Chandler's attorney requested that the photographs be barred from the civil court.

Another indication that the Jordan Chandler description and photographs were a mismatch rather than a match is the fact that when Michael Jackson's mother, Katherine Jackson was called to testify in front of the Los Angeles County Grand Jury in the spring of 1994, investigators sought information from her as to whether her son had altered the appearance of his genitalia. On March 16, 1994 the Los Angeles Times wrote:

*"Jackson's mother has frequently given interviews and made public appearances to defend her son, but a source close to the investigation said she may be questioned about Jackson's physical appearance. Investigators have been attempting to determine whether Jackson has done anything to alter his appearance so that **it does not match a description provided to them by the alleged victim, who turned 14 in January.**" [5]*

(Emphasis added.)

Shortly before Jackson's trial in 2005, on January 6, 2005 The Smoking Gun website, which seemed to be close to the prosecution (they reference claims in supposedly sealed prosecution documents – and that always with a pro-prosecution bias), published an article in which they claimed to have reviewed an affidavit by former Santa Barbara Sheriff's Department Deputy Deborah Linden, which "was filed in 1993 to secure court permission to photograph Jackson's private parts" [6].

According to the article, based on Linden's affidavit:

"With Los Angeles Police Department detectives weighing his claims, Chandler gave them a roadmap to Jackson's below-the-waist geography, which, he said, includes distinctive "splotches" on his buttocks and one on his penis, "which is a light color similar to the color of his face." The boy's information was so precise, he even pinpointed where the splotch fell while Jackson's penis was erect, the length of the performer's pubic hair, and that he was circumcised." [6]

If this is indeed what Jordan said, then his description may have been "precise" (as in detailed), but it certainly was not accurate.

We know by now for a fact that Jackson was not circumcised as per his autopsy, released in early 2010 [7]. However, it makes sense that if someone were trying to guess whether a particular American male was circumcised or uncircumcised, the more likely option would be "circumcised", since the majority of American men are, regardless of religion, especially in older generations, like Jackson who was born in the 1950s [8]. It is also worth noting that Jordan's father Evan Chandler was Jewish and Jordan himself is most likely circumcised. Michael Jackson, however, was not. (After Jackson's autopsy was published this article was deleted from The Smoking Gun website's archives, but it still can be found on the Wayback Machine website which is specialized in archiving old websites and Internet articles.)

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Some pro-prosecution journalists tried to excuse Jordan's failure to accurately describe Jackson's penis by suggesting that perhaps Jordan did not notice the difference between a fully erect uncircumcised penis and a circumcised one. However, the allegations of Jordan Chandler describe not only one occasion of alleged molestation, but a very intense series of sexual contacts, seeing each other naked many times (including in the bath) and many masturbation sessions in front of each other. Jordan's uncle, Ray Chandler claims in his book, *All That Glitters*, that his nephew saw Jackson's genitalia many times, "from every possible angle":

"The problem was not Jordie's memory: he had seen Michael's genitalia so many times and from every possible angle that he had a precise mental picture. The problem was trying to explain the details." [9; page 210]

If this was true, then Jordan certainly would have been able to tell that Jackson was uncircumcised, but he got the description wrong.

It has to be noted that Jordan apparently gave two descriptions. Sneddon's Motion is confusing on this issue because although it refers to two dates for the description (September 1 and December 1), it does not explicitly state that there were two descriptions. However, Ray Chandler's book, *All That Glitters*, states that there was one description given in September to the DA (more precisely, based on Sneddon's Motion, to Los Angeles District Attorney Deputy, Lauren Weis) and one in December in the office of Larry Feldman, Jordan Chandler's civil attorney. In this regard, Ray Chandler claims in his book in the chapter entitled "December 14":

"It took several hours for Jordie to provide a description that Feldman could understand. There were numerous distinctive markings and discolorations on Michael's privates, and it was difficult for the boy to explain exactly where they were located, what size they were, and what shape they took.

*The problem was not Jordie's memory: he had seen Michael's genitalia so many times and from every possible angle that he had a precise mental picture. The problem was trying to explain the details. But they pressed on and **eventually arrived at** a description that turned out to be an accurate match to the photographs taken by the Santa Barbara authorities a few days later." [9; page 210]*

(Emphasis added.)

Notice how Ray Chandler talks about "numerous distinctive markings and discolorations" that Jordan described, but in Sneddon's 2005 motion Sneddon pointed out only one as, according to his own assessment, being "at about the same relative location" as where Jordan put a marking on his drawing. Whatever happened to the rest of the description?

Like many others, Ray Chandler too references Maureen Orth's above mentioned 1995 interview with Sneddon, and as such Sneddon himself as the source of the claim that the description they "eventually arrived at" was accurate. Neither Sneddon's Motion or Ray Chandler's book explains why a second description was needed and if there are differences between the two. It has to be noted that between September and December, on November 26,

The Michael Jackson Allegations

the offices of Jackson's dermatologist, Dr. Arnold Klein and plastic surgeon, Dr. Steve Hoefflin were raided by the police and they confiscated medical records of the star.

Jordan Chandler's description and drawing was no more than an educated guess. Educated because he and his family knew that Jackson suffered from the skin disease, vitiligo. The entertainer announced that to the world in February, 1993 in an interview conducted by Oprah Winfrey. One of the areas vitiligo affects the most is the genital area [10]. All of the Chandlers could also see discoloration on Jackson's arms, hands and face.



Michael Jackson's vitiligo and how it looked was no secret to those who were around him

Additionally, Jordan's uncle, Ray Chandler, in *All That Glitters*, describes an event on the weekend starting with May 28, 1993, when Jackson stayed in the house of Jordan's father, Evan Chandler. Evan apparently drugged the singer [for details see the chapter [Evan Chandler's "Suspensions"](#)]. In the story it is stated that Evan gave Jackson an injection into his gluteus [9; page 47], so Evan would have seen at least what Jackson's buttocks looked like.

Among the documents which Victor Gutierrez presents in his book, entitled *Michael Jackson Was My Lover*, and which documents apparently were given to him by either the Chandlers or by the Chandlers' maid, *Norma Salinas*, there is a drawing which Gutierrez claims Jordan gave to his father [more about Gutierrez, his role in the allegations against Jackson and his possible connection with the Chandlers in the later chapter entitled [Victor Gutierrez and his role in the allegations against Michael Jackson](#)].

The Michael Jackson Allegations


10/24/93 1:45 p

Mike (circumcised)
short pubic

BWH - not circumcised
but penis had cut & say
look, look. But in reality because
different name.

Low - bloaky-pink ~~white~~ / brown
not white but pink

Body oil stunk



my theory -
ase blotches
shades of
brown - so
how could all
be so pale
Orietta blue

Brown patches on ass
left glut

Bleaching cream
Orietta

Brett's - a lot of
gluts

Vaseline in ass
is a way to bleed when
showering

Brett's so cute, he's like a little
Get me exam of Brett

One of Jordan Chandler's alleged descriptions of Jackson's private parts from Victor Gutierrez's book Michael Jackson Was My Lover [11]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

The drawing is dated October 24, 1993, and is probably not the actual drawing and description Jordan gave in December, but it appears to be some kind of draft or instructional rehearsal for that.

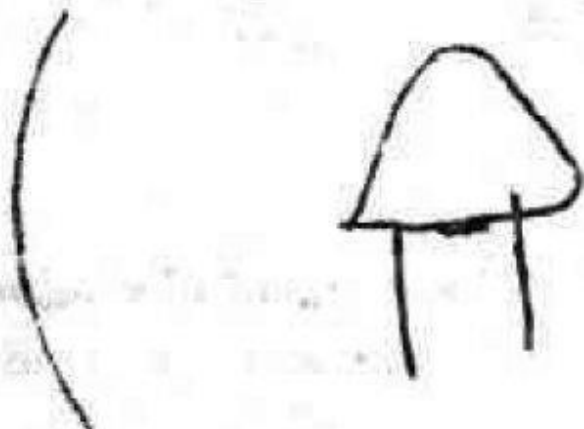
On the drawing you can see random notes of an alleged *“cow-blotchy-pink/brown/not white but pink”* skin. On the top you see *“Mike circumcised / short pubic”*, in the middle you can read *“body oil stink”* and below that *“brown patch on ass / left glut”* and further below *“bleaching cream / Orietta”*. In the little box on the right you can read *“my theory: / ass blotched / shades of / brown – so / how is MJ(?) p. V / be selective / Orietta bleach”*.

The rest of the text on the drawing is a graphic fantasy of alleged sexual acts involving Brett Barnes. Brett Barnes has always stated emphatically that Jackson never molested him and never touched him in any inappropriate way whatsoever. In 2005 he testified in support of the entertainer [12].

As discussed above, in reality Jackson was uncircumcised, but this diagram evidences that the Chandlers’ guess in 1993 was indeed, like The Smoking Gun article/Linden affidavit stated, that the singer was circumcised.

During the 2005 trial, the same drawing circulated in the media and on the Internet, only in a heavily edited fashion. It is not clear who edited it, but the fantasies involving Brett Barnes and the claim about Jackson’s penis being circumcised had been removed. Ray Chandler too fully avoids mentioning the inaccurate circumcision issue in his book that was published in 2004. You can see this redacted version of the description on the next page.

Low - blotchy-pink ~~white~~ / brown
Body oil stink ^{not} white but pink



my theory -
as blotches
shades of
brown - so
how could it
be white like
Ornette black

Brown patchiness
left glut

Bleaching cream
Ornette

The description that Jordie gave to his father about Jackson's
genitalia on 24 October 1993 at 11.45pm.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

It was claimed the diagram was given to Evan Chandler by Jordan, so we are to believe that these notes were the words and writings of a 13-year-old.

However, based on the instructions (eg. “*be selective*”) and notes like “*my theory*” it rather seems to be an instructional brainstorming session speculating what Jackson’s private parts looked like. Why would they need to theorize on paper about it if Jordan definitively knew?

Remember that in his book Ray Chandler wrote that in May 1993 Evan injected Jackson in his gluteus. This puts notes like this: “*my theory: / ass blotched / shades of / brown – so / how is MJ(?) p. V / be selective / Orietta bleach*”, into perspective.

Additionally, consider the references to an “Orietta”. Jackson had a personal assistant named Orietta Murdock whom he fired in 1992 and who then sued the star for unfair dismissal. She no longer worked for Jackson when Jackson spent time with the Chandler family. Why would Jordan Chandler make references to her while describing Jackson’s private parts? Did the Chandlers use information from this disgruntled ex-employee to create their “theory” about Jackson’s skin?

The Chandlers only had to know that Jackson had vitiligo and also conclude, from Evan’s knowledge of how Jackson’s buttocks looked like, that there were discolorations on the lower parts of his body and probably on his private parts. In *All That Glitters* the following conversation is quoted from November 25, 1993 between Larry Feldman, the attorney who represented Jordan in his civil lawsuit against Jackson, and Evan Chandler:

“Oh, yeah, Lauren Weis* told me today that this disease Michael says he’s got, vitiligo, that it’s capable of changing anywhere you look, so that anything Jordie says is irrelevant. It can change very quickly with this disease.”

“Shit, these guys seem to have an answer for everything.”

“No, that’s good for us!”

“Why?”

“Because if he’s right, he’s right. And if he’s wrong, we’ve got an explanation!”

“Ha!”

“Yeah, it’s a no-loser for us.”

“That’s very good.”

“Good? It’s terrific! You stick with the teeth, kid. I’m sticking’ with the law.” [9; page 202-203]

(Emphasis added.)

The Michael Jackson Allegations

(* The Lauren Weis, who is claimed to have told Larry Feldman that anything Jordan says about the blemishes is irrelevant because they are subject to changes, is the same Lauren Weis to whom Jordan gave his original description in September. She was the Los Angeles Deputy District Attorney at the time. In *All That Glitters* she is also described as a good friend of Richard Hirsch, the attorney who represented Evan Chandler against the extortion charges filed by Jackson [9; page 165].)

In the chapter entitled “December 14” Ray Chandler writes:

“Back in September, Jordie had given a detailed description of Michael’s penis and testicles to the DA. Feldman was aware of this, but had yet to discuss it with his young client. If the description matched the police photos it was one more giant straw on the camels back that was Michael’s defense. And the poor beast was already swayback.

On the other hand, it had been medically established that the markings of vitiligo were subject to change. So if Jordie’s description was wrong, Larry would be able to say the markings had shifted over the months. Either way, Larry’s case was solid as a rock and he didn’t need it. But since the DA was making a big deal over it, Larry had to be sure what, exactly, Jordie had seen.”[9; page 206]

(Emphasis added.)

(The Chandlers claimed the molestations happened in April/May-June, 1993, but Jackson’s genitalia was photographed by the authorities more than half a year later, at the end of December 1993.)

As you can see, the Chandlers cynically played on the fact that vitiligo markings are subject to change and they were preparing excuses for themselves to explain why their description did not match the photographs. However, both the Chandlers and Sneddon failed to acknowledge that if vitiligo markings were subject to change then they are inadequate to prove Jackson’s guilt, especially considering the fact the Chandlers got the circumcision issue completely wrong.

It seems that Sneddon, like the Chandlers, tried to have it both ways: if there was something in that drawing that remotely guessed a location of a marking right (at least according to Sneddon’s own assessment) it would have been used against Jackson, while every other detail would have been ignored and/or explained away by the fact that vitiligo markings were subject to change. As Larry Feldman put it: *“It’s a no-loser for us”*.

Sources:

[1] Plaintiff’s motion to admit evidence that Jordan Chandler had knowledge of, and accurately described Defendant’s distinctively-blemished lower torso and penis in 1994; Declaration of Thomas W. Sneddon, Jr; Memorandum of points and authorities (May 25, 2005)
<http://www.sbcppublicaccess.org/docs/ctdocs/052505pltmotchandler.pdf>

[2] Maureen Orth – The Jackson Jive (Vanity Fair, September 1995)

The Michael Jackson Allegations

[3] Craig Rivera's interview with Dr. Richard Strick (Fox News, October 2009)
<http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=gHrJTgKR1o>

[4] LOS ANGELES : Boy's Lawyer Seeks Photos of Michael Jackson's Body (Los Angeles Times, January 5, 1994)
http://articles.latimes.com/1994-01-05/local/me-8514_1_michael-jackson

[5] Jim Newton – Grand Jury Calls Michael Jackson's Mother to Testify (Los Angeles Times, March 16, 1994)
http://articles.latimes.com/1994-03-16/local/me-34715_1_grand-jury

[6] The case against Michael Jackson – The Telltale "Splotch" (January 6, 2005)
After Jackson's autopsy had been released to the public (which among others stated that the singer was not circumcised) The Smoking Gun deleted the article from their website. For a secondary source see:
<http://web.archive.org/web/20090630025648/http://www.thesmokinggun.com/michaeljackson/010605jacksonsplootch.html>

[7] Michael Jackson's autopsy report as released in 2010
http://www.autopsyfiles.org/reports/Celebs/jackson,%20michael_report.pdf (page 18)

[8] Cat Saunders – Circumcision in America (originally published in The New Times in October 2001)
http://www.dr.cat.org/articles_interviews/html/firstcut.html

[9] Raymond Chandler – All That Glitters: The Crime and the Cover-Up (Windsong Press Ltd, September, 2004)

[10] Vitiligo Skin Disorder
<http://www.curevitiligooil.com/Vitiligo-Skin-Disorder.html>

[11] Victor Gutierrez – Michael Jackson Was My Lover (Alamo Square Dist Inc, 1996)

[12] Brett Barnes' testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (May 5, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

The Settlement

A frequently asked question regarding the child molestation allegations against Michael Jackson is:

“If he was innocent why did he settle the first case out of court?”

To understand his possible reasons we have to understand the legal circumstances preceding and surrounding the settlement.

Michael Jackson and his accuser, Jordan Chandler, reached an out of court settlement on January 25, 1994. The settlement was illegally leaked to Court TV’s Diane Dimond in 2003, so we know the amount paid into a trust for Jordan Chandler was \$15,331,250 [1; page 5]. (Note: Either Dimond or the person who leaked the document to her omitted the parts after the third paragraph. It is not known who leaked the confidential settlement to Dimond, however, Ray Chandler’s book, *All That Glitters*, calls Dimond Evan Chandler’s “closest ally” at one point [2; page 194]).

As you can see the document emphasizes that it is in no way an admission of guilt by Michael Jackson. On page 4 it states:

“This Confidential Settlement shall not be considered as an admission by Jackson that he has acted wrongfully with respect to the Minor, [blocked] or [blocked], or any other person or at all, or that the Minor, [blocked] or [blocked] have any rights whatsoever against Jackson. Jackson specifically disclaims any liability to, and denies any wrongful act against, the Minor, [blocked] or [blocked] or any other persons. The Parties acknowledge that Jackson is a public figure and that his name, image and likeness have commercial value and are an important element of his earning capacity. The Parties acknowledge that Jackson claims that he has elected to settle the claims in the Action in view of the impact the Action has had and could have in the future on his earnings and potential income.”[1; page 4]

One of the myths regarding this settlement is that “Michael Jackson bought his way out of a criminal indictment“. The fact is, however, the settlement resolved the civil proceedings, not the criminal. In fact, under American law one is not allowed to settle a criminal case. The criminal proceedings proceeded after this settlement and nothing in the settlement prevented the Chandlers from testifying against Jackson in a criminal court. Los Angeles district attorney, Gil Garcetti said right after the Chandler settlement in January 1994:

“The criminal investigation of singer Michael Jackson is ongoing and will not be affected by the announcement of the civil case settlement,” Garcetti said. “The district attorney’s office is taking Mr. [Larry] Feldman [the Chandlers’ attorney] at his word that the alleged victim will be allowed to testify and that there has been no agreement in the civil matter that will affect cooperation in the criminal investigation.” [3]

The Chandlers could have taken the settlement money AND testified against Michael Jackson in a criminal case. They eventually chose not to but it was not because they were

The Michael Jackson Allegations

forbidden to do so by the settlement. They could have done so, however after the Chandlers received their settlement money, which was their goal from the beginning, they were unwilling to co-operate with the authorities investigating the criminal proceedings and were unwilling to testify in a criminal court. The criminal case was convened before two Grand Juries (one in Los Angeles and one in Santa Barbara) in February-April of 1994. After seven months of investigation, multiple house searches, interviews of dozens of children and other witnesses, police officers traveling all around the world to find corroborating victims and evidence, strip searching Jackson's body, both Grand Juries determined that they had not seen sufficient evidence to indict Jackson. The prosecution claimed they were not really seeking indictment, that these were only "investigating Grand Juries", however the fact remains two Grand Juries found that the prosecution had not discovered incriminating evidence during the investigations sufficient to secure an indictment.

The criminal proceedings were never the Chandler's priority. Less than a month after psychiatrist, Dr. Mathis Abrams reported Jordan Chandler's claims to the authorities on August 17, 1993, an act that automatically kick-started the criminal investigation, the Chandlers filed a civil lawsuit against Jackson accusing him of sexual battery, battery, seduction, willful misconduct, intentional infliction of emotional distress, fraud and negligence. They demanded a recovery of \$30 million. (Before taking Jordan to Dr. Abrams the Chandlers had already requested \$20 million, which Jackson refused to comply with. Details in the former chapter [The Chandlers' Monetary Demands](#).)

Normally, civil complaints are only filed after criminal proceedings are completed and justice has been served. One would naturally expect the parents of a molested child to pursue justice and not money when they have the chance to do so. Only a criminal trial can result in jail time for the alleged perpetrator. At the end of a civil trial, the only restitution available is monetary.

Moreover, in his book *All That Glitters* the accuser's uncle Ray Chandler reveals that what the Chandlers really wanted was a "highly profitable settlement" from the very beginning. They filed their civil lawsuit with a settlement in mind. Ray Chandler describes a meeting between the boy's mother June Chandler, her then-husband David Schwartz and the boy's biological father Evan Chandler in civil attorney Larry Feldman's office on September 8, 1993 as follows:

*"By the conclusion of the meeting, June and Dave, like Evan before them, had no doubts about switching from Gloria Allred to Larry Feldman. **The choice came down to either waging an all-out media campaign to pressure the DA to seek a Grand Jury indictment, or conducting subtle, behind-the-scenes negotiations toward a quick, quiet and highly profitable settlement.**" [2; page 168]*

(Emphasis added.)

Once again: this was before they even filed their civil lawsuit, which Larry Feldman did a couple of days later, now we know, with a settlement in mind. In actuality, according to Ray Chandler's book and other sources as well (such as Mary A. Fischer's article "*Was Michael Jackson Framed?*", GQ, October 1994), during that meeting Evan Chandler and David Schwartz had a physical fight over the settlement money they planned to ask for. The

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Chandlers reasoning for aiming at a settlement rather than a trial was that they wanted to avoid the trauma of a high profile trial. I will address this claim later in this document.

Moreover, contrary to what Ray Chandler claims above, it did not have to be a choice between a settlement or a criminal indictment. Like said before, they could have taken the settlement money AND opted to testify at a criminal trial if they had wanted to. The settlement did not and could not forbid them to do so.

It is important to emphasize that it was the Chandler family who demanded a settlement from the very beginning and it was not Michael Jackson who sought it. In actuality, since early August of 1993 Evan Chandler demanded money from the star which Jackson refused to comply with and that is what resulted in the Chandlers going public with their allegations. Had Jackson wanted to “hush” the accuser he could have paid them off before they turned to authorities and to the public because the Chandlers admittedly wanted nothing more than being “paid off”. Details in the earlier chapter entitled **The Chandlers’ Monetary Demands**.

Between September 1993 and January 1994 the disagreement between Jackson’s attorneys and Larry Feldman, the civil attorney representing the Chandlers was in regard to which proceedings should precede the other. Jackson’s attorneys wanted the criminal proceedings to go before the civil proceedings and losing this fight was basically what lead to the settlement.

In 2005, Jordan’s uncle, Ray Chandler in an article he wrote for his now defunct website (atgbook.net) claimed that Jackson’s attorneys tried to postpone the the *civil* lawsuit for six years, until the criminal statue of limitations on child abuse expired. This is all he said, leaving the impression that Jackson’s side just wanted to hinder the civil process. However that is a misleading half-truth. In actuality, Jackson’s attorneys attempted to postpone the civil lawsuit *to allow the criminal proceedings to be held ahead of the civil proceedings*. They did not try to hinder the *criminal* proceedings, in fact they tried to get them heard ahead of the civil proceedings.

The reason being if the civil trial is held before the criminal trial it can give the prosecution in the criminal trial a major advantage because they have the opportunity to monitor the civil trial and study the defense’s strategy. They can then, therefore, adjust their claims and strategy in kind. Furthermore, unlike in a criminal proceeding, where the defendant can constitutionally refuse to be deposed without consequence, a defendant in a civil trial cannot refuse to submit to a deposition free of consequence. The prosecution then can use the testimony from the civil deposition in the criminal trial and adjust their claims in kind.

In addition, the burden of proof, or the rules for admissibility of hearsay evidence in a civil trial are more relaxed than in a criminal trial. Jackson’s attorneys were certainly aware that a civil trial was riskier for a defendant, even if the defendant is innocent. And they knew that if Jackson lost the civil trial it could prejudice the jury in an upcoming criminal trial.

There are many precedents where civil proceedings have been frozen to allow the criminal trial ahead, preserving a defendant’s right to a fair trial and preventing that right from being violated. According to precedent cases:

“When both criminal and civil proceedings arise out of the same or related transactions, the defendant is entitled to a Stay of Discovery and trial in the civil action until the criminal matter has been fully resolved.” [4; page 116-

The Michael Jackson Allegations

117, Cases cited: Campbell v. Eastland (1962), Perez v. McQuire (1964), Paul Harrigan & Sons, Inc. v. Enterprise Animal Oil Co. (1953)]

However, in regards to the case against Michael Jackson, all such attempts by Jackson's lawyers to stay the civil proceeding were dismissed by *Superior Court* Judge David M. Rothman. Apparently, the Chandlers' trump card was Jordan's age. Here is what Geraldine Hughes (the legal secretary of Barry Rothman, the attorney who represented the Chandlers before Larry Feldman took over) writes in her book entitled *Redemption*:

"Michael Jackson lost all four motions. It was obvious from a legal standpoint of view that the scales of justice were not pointing in Michael Jackson's favor. Instead, it was weighing heavily in favor of the 13-year old boy. Michael Jackson's attorneys were applying precedent laws which were applied in a similar sexual battery case. Pacers Inc. v. Superior Court specifically held that it is improper invasion of the defendant's constitutional rights not to stay civil proceedings where a criminal investigation is ongoing. But Mr. Feldman's trump card was, "a child's memory is developing," and their inability to, "remember like an adult." This law was designed to protect a small child's ability to recall for prolonged periods of time after being a victim and/or witness to a crime. This case, however, involved a 13-year old boy, who was soon to be turning 14 years old." [4; page 124]

Using this reasoning, Feldman filed a Motion for Trial Preference for the civil proceedings. *"This is a special request to have the trial heard within 120 days after the motion is granted"* [2; page 121]. In this regard, Hughes writes:

"Mr. Feldman filed a declaration by Dr. Evan Chandler in support of the Motion for Trial Preference which had one statement: that the child was under the age of 14. That was it! Dr. Chandler did not state anything else in his declaration, which is a written statement under oath declaring statements of truth. I have never seen a declaration concerning an important case this short in my entire legal career. A declarant will usually attest to several facts, especially concerning an important case like this one. They will also declare that said facts are true and correct and state their willingness to be called to competently testify under penalty of perjury. Is it possible that the information that Dr. Chandler declared was the only information he could competently testify under penalty of perjury?" [4; page 122]

Under extremely unfavorable conditions, Jackson and his attorneys might have found themselves in a position where they would have had to fight and defend Jackson on two fronts at the same time – in both a civil and criminal trial. On top of that they would have to prepare for a civil trial within 120 days, while the police for the criminal proceedings had seized all of Jackson's personal records and refused to provide copies or even a list of what they took. *"The District Attorney's office was operating, with the blessings of the Court, in violation of Michael Jackson's constitutional rights, and the Court was weighing heavily in favor of the 13-year old boy [4; page 133]."*

After all motions to push the civil proceedings behind the criminal had been denied, the Jackson team was left between a rock and a hard place. The start of the civil trial was set for March, 1994.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

The Chandlers' motion papers accused Jackson and his attorneys of applying "delay tactics", but they knew well that those "delay tactics" were all about getting the criminal proceedings heard ahead of the civil proceedings. Ray Chandler, in his book, *All That Glitters*, quotes a conversation that took place between Jordan Chandler's father, Evan Chandler and their civil attorney, Larry Feldman and it proves that they were the ones utilizing delay tactics with regards to the criminal proceedings:

"Later in the afternoon, after everyone had consumed their holiday repast, Larry Feldman called Evan with news they could all be thankful for. "Hey, Evan, you gotta hear this one. Howard Weitzman demoted Fields again. They definitely don't want your deposition, or June's deposition. They don't want to preserve anything. If they're gonna make a deal they don't want anything on the record about Jackson."

No shit! Larry, these guys are in a real mess."

*"Yeah, they fucked this up unbelievably. What could be better? But I'm going forward. We're going to push on. So far there ain't a button I've missed. **The only thing we gotta do is keep the criminal behind us. I don't want them going first.**"*

Larry had said it before, but it hadn't registered in Evan's brain till now.

"You mean if they indict, the criminal case automatically goes before us?"

"Yeah."

"Jesus Christ!"

"Right! So we don't want that." [2; page 201-202]

It must be reiterated that only a criminal trial can send an alleged perpetrator to jail; a civil trial can only result in a monetary award.

The California law that allowed the Chandlers to push the civil trial ahead of the criminal trial was changed eventually – according to Santa Barbara District Attorney, Thomas Sneddon directly because of what happened in the Chandler case. Because of this change, today an accuser in a sexual assault case cannot pursue a civil lawsuit right away. The new law restricts a civil trial from preceding a criminal trial. It is for this reason that Jackson's 2003 accuser, Gavin Arvizo, could not use the same strategy as what the Chandlers did in 1993. He had no choice but to begin a criminal trial first.

"The prosecutor in the Michael Jackson case praised a law that can halt civil lawsuits during related criminal cases, saying it would prevent a scenario where the singer's accuser accepted a settlement and then refused to testify in the criminal trial.

The state law was passed because another child backed out of a 1993 molestation case against Jackson after the singer reportedly paid him a multimillion settlement, Santa Barbara District Attorney Tom Sneddon said.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

“It is an irony. The history of the law is that the L.A. district attorney’s office carried the legislation as a direct result of the civil settlement in the first investigation,” Sneddon told The Associated Press in an interview.” [5]

The hostile media campaign against Michael Jackson might have also contributed to a decision to settle. Tabloid shows paid people for sensational stories that supported the allegations. [For more about the media’s role in the allegations see the chapter entitled [The Media’s Role In The Allegations Against Michael Jackson](#).] Several of those people were to be used by the Chandlers in the civil case, which has a much lower burden of proof than a criminal trial. The combined stress of a legal proceeding and the media backlash led to a dependency on painkillers for which Michael Jackson eventually sought professional help. Business partners and advisers urged him to put the matter out of his mind and get on with his life and business.

It has sometimes been suggested in the media that Jackson settled because the strip search in December 1993 supported his accuser’s claims. This does not hold water and is addressed in the previous chapter. As shown in that chapter, in actuality, Chandler’s lawyer sought to get the photographs of Jackson’s genitalia barred from the civil trial.

While Jackson’s motives for the settlement are often questioned, it is a much less frequently asked question (although it would be similarly valid to ask): why did the accuser’s family so aggressively push for settlement while doing everything to avoid a criminal trial?

The Chandlers themselves claim they settled because they wanted to move on with their lives and not subject Jordan to media spotlight and scrutiny that would have been unavoidable in a high profile case and trial such as this. They also claimed they received several death threats from Michael Jackson fans and since Los Angeles District Attorney, Gil Garcetti refused to put the family to the Witness Protection Program, they were afraid for their lives. At first this seems reasonable, however Evan Chandler did not seem to be concerned about media spotlight and possible fan reaction when in his taped phone conversation with David Schwartz, the boy’s step father, in July, 1993 he said of his attorney, Barry Rothman:

*“[T]his attorney I found... I mean, I interviewed several, and I picked the nastiest son of a bitch I could find, **and all he wants to do is get this out in the public as fast as he can, as big as he can** and humiliate as many people as he can, and he’s got a bad [tape irregularity] ...” [6]*

Ray Chandler tries to excuse this quote in his book by claiming that when Evan said Rothman wanted to “*get this out in the public as fast as he can, as big as he can*” he actually meant going to court, not to the media. The same claim is made about when on the same tapes Evan says of Rothman:

*“He is nasty, he is mean, he is very smart [tape irregularity], and **he’s hungry for the publicity** [tape irregularity] better for him.” [6]*

However, there are some additional facts to consider regarding the Chandler’s intentions with publicity.

The Chandlers did not seem to be concerned about media spotlight, possible fan reaction, threats and Jordan not being able to move on with his life when within days after the

The Michael Jackson Allegations

settlement they were shopping a book they have written about the allegations. Publisher Judith Regan:

"I received a call from Jordan's uncle. He wanted to do a book in which he would describe in detail the allegation of molestation against Michael Jackson. So I asked him how he proposed to do this given the fact that the Chandlers had actually signed a confidentiality agreement and taken \$20mln. And he said that Jordan's father had given him all the information he needed for the book and he believed he was outside the bounds of the Confidentiality agreement because he would be the author. At the time I had the impression that the Chandlers were brazen opportunists and I found the entire proposal by the uncle to be distasteful. They enter a Confidentiality agreement and before the ink is even dry they are shopping a deal that violates this agreement?"[7]

That Ray Chandler was indeed shopping a book "within days" after the settlement was signed, is confirmed by none other than Ray Chandler himself in a Motion he filed with the Santa Barbara Court on October 25, 2004. [More about why this Motion was filed in the chapter entitled [Ray Chandler's Subpoena in 2004](#)]. In support of his argument that he should be protected by the Shield Law Ray Chandler disclosed in that Motion:

"Within days after Jordan Chandler's civil lawsuit against Michael Jackson was settled in January, 1994, Raymond Chandler traveled to New York City to seek a publisher for the purpose of putting the information he had gathered in the form of a non-fiction book for dissemination to the public. Such intent on the part of Raymond Chandler is evidenced by an article that appeared in the New York Post revealing his contact with a publisher one day after it occurred." [8; page 6]

Ray Chandler, in making his argument that he should be protected by the Shield Law states in the Motion that he traveled to Los Angeles "within two days after the Michael Jackson child molestation scandal became public in August of 1993" [8; page 6] and from late August through December of 1993 lived in the Los Angeles home of Evan and Jordan Chandler **with the intent of gathering information about the molestation allegations and then publicly disseminating that information** [8; Declaration of Raymond Chandler; page 1].

Ray Chandler eventually published his book in 2004 at the height of the media frenzy caused by the Arvizo allegations (which will address in detail in [The 2005 Allegations](#) section of this document). Ray Chandler made his rounds in the media, giving interviews and appearing in documentaries heavily biased against Jackson. Obviously not concerned about media spotlight and not afraid of possible threats by Jackson fans.

The boy's father Evan Chandler did not seem to be concerned about media spotlight, possible fan reaction, threats and Jordan not being able to move on with his life when he filed another lawsuit against Michael Jackson in 1996, this time for \$60 million and a record deal so that he could release an album about the alleged sexual molestation of his son, titled "EVANstory". According to the lawsuit, "This album will include such songs as: "D.A. Reprised": "You Have No Defense (For My Love)"; "Duck Butter Blues"; "Truth"; and other songs". [9]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

The lawsuit got thrown out of Court in 2000. I will detail it in the next chapter.

Sources:

[1] Out of court settlement between Michael Jackson and Jordan Chandler (January 25, 1994) as leaked to and/or by Court TV's Diane Dimond in 2003

<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/1993civilsettlementagreement.pdf>

[2] Raymond Chandler – All That Glitters: The Crime and the Cover-Up (Windsong Press Ltd, September 2004)

[3] Jackson Settles Abuse Suit but Insists He Is Innocent : Courts: Singer will reportedly pay \$15 million to \$24 million to teen-ager. Criminal investigation will proceed. (Los Angeles Times, January 26, 1994)

http://articles.latimes.com/1994-01-26/news/mn-15478_1_michael-jackson

[4] Geraldine Hughes – Redemption: The Truth Behind the Michael Jackson Child Molestation Allegations (Hughes Publishing, January 2004)

[5] Linda Deutsch – Prosecutor says law won't allow Jackson to pay off accuser before trial (Boston.com/Associated Press, November 20, 2003)

http://www.boston.com/news/daily/20/jackson_case.htm

The original article is no longer available, for a secondary source see:

<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2017/06/www-boston-com-sneddon-2003.pdf>

[6] Taped phone conversation between Evan Chandler and David Schwartz (July 8, 1993)

https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/plugin-schwartz_chandler.pdf

[7] Judith Regan on Michael Jackson Molestation Allegations on SIRIUS XM

http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=yQYeNfHVBtM&feature=player_embedded

[8] Notice of motion and motion of third party Raymond Chandler to quash subpoenas and/or in camera review; authorities; declaration of Raymond Chandler (October 25, 2004)

<http://www.sbcpubliaccess.org/docs/ctdocs/102504nommot3rdpty.pdf>

[9] Evan Chandler files another lawsuit against Michael Jackson on May 7, 1996 demanding \$60 million and a record deal (Court TV Online, Legal Documents)

<http://web.archive.org/web/20070916092707/http://www.courtvtv.com/archive/legaldocs/newsmakers/jackson.html>

Evan Chandler's 1996 lawsuit against Michael Jackson

The lawsuit arising from Jordan Chandler's molestation allegations was not the only lawsuit the Chandlers filed against Michael Jackson. On May 7, 1996 Jordan's father, Evan Chandler filed a lawsuit claiming the entertainer violated the Confidentiality Agreement portion of their 1994 settlement.

On June 14, 1995 Jackson gave an interview to *Prime Time Live* a television program hosted by Diane Sawyer where he was asked, amongst other questions, about the allegations. During the interview Jackson maintained his innocence and according to Evan Chandler's lawsuit, this was a violation of the settlement. Chandler not only sued Jackson but also Jackson's then-wife, Lisa Marie Presley, who participated in the interview, the ABC television network, which aired the program and Diane Sawyer. Additionally, he sued several other companies besides ABC, like the Walt Disney Company, which owns ABC, Jackson's record label, Sony Music Corporation, Warner Tamerlane Publishing and all companies owned by Jackson.



Evan Chandler

Ray Chandler's book, *All That Glitters*, speaks about this lawsuit:

"Evan poured himself into the battle, working night and day to help his lawyers build their case. He became obsessed and put his entire life on hold, neglecting his health and his family in his quest to clear his name.

Evan rationalized his actions by believing that the lawsuits were a temporary detour, and that once they were over, life would be better than it had ever been — that he would have all the time in the world to spend with his children.

But life did not become better than it had ever been. It became much worse. Evan lost the lawsuits, his health and his family. The last two through no one's fault but his own. But whatever faults Evan may have, whatever demons possess him, one thing he has never been and will never be, is an extortionist." [1; page 248]

Michael Jackson did not explicitly call Evan Chandler an extortionist in the *Prime Time Live* interview (and he did not name his accuser or any of his family members). However, Jackson's innocence would seem to implicitly suggest that Evan Chandler was an extortionist. In regard to Evan's monetary demands of Jackson, please read the chapter entitled **The Chandlers' Monetary Demands** and decide for yourself if Evan Chandler was an extortionist.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Besides the *Prime Time Live* interview, Jackson's 1995 album, *HIStory: Past, Present and Future, Book I* (in short *HIStory*) also hit a nerve with Evan. In his lawsuit he alleged that the album's lyrics made "derogatory, harmful, malicious" [2] statements against him and his son.

Jackson does not specifically name Evan or Jordan in his lyrics rather he mentions being falsely accused in the song *This Time Around*; he devotes a song, *D.S.*, to criticizing District Attorney, Tom Sneddon; he criticizes greed in the song *Money*, and a segment of the media in the song *Tabloid Junkie*.

In his lawsuit Evan also indicated the line, "jew me, sue me" in the song *They Don't Care About Us* was directed towards him since he was Jewish. However, listening to the song and the context in which the words were used, that does not seem to be the case. (Evan's lawsuit quotes Jackson's lyrics out of context and very imprecisely.)

It is undeniable that some of the songs on *HIStory* and their lyrics were influenced by the allegations and it is also natural that, like any artist, Jackson would process and vent his life experiences in his creative work. However, the claim that what Jackson expressed in his album violated the settlement and its Confidentiality Agreement did not find support in the Court system.

Before I continue with the 1996 lawsuit let's take a moment for discussing Evan Chandler's neglect of his family that even his loyal brother Ray Chandler referred to in his book. In 1998 Evan's second wife Nathalie Chandler sued Evan for his abandonment of his two younger children. In the lawsuit Nathalie complained that Evan refused to work and did not provide for his minor children, nor was he available to them and was content with living off of the money of his son, Jordan. She also stated that Evan cut himself off from any other family members who disagreed with his behavior.

"[Evan Chandler's two younger children] kept asking petitioner why respondent [Evan Chandler] and their brother Jordan do not love them anymore and refuse to see them or talk to them when the children call. They haven't seen their father or their brother for an extremely long time for such young children. As a result of respondent's deliberate and cruel abandonment of his two minor children, both children have been in therapy on a regular basis since September, 1997 and [Jordan's younger brother] now openly states that he does not want to have anything to do with his father and he does not trust his father anymore. Although custody and visitation are not an issue in this matter, the children's need for therapy has created a further need for financial assistance. If respondent does not want to see or talk to his children, he should at least cover the expenses of therapy resulting from his blatant abandonment of them." [3]

and

"Evan is not a person who has a lot of friends. Since he decided to live with and off of his son Jordan, he has become either a nomad or a recluse. He does nothing to provide for his own living, or that of his minor children. He

The Michael Jackson Allegations

apparently is satisfied to allow his 18 year old son to support him and has purposely cut himself off from any other family members who disagree with his behavior." [3]

This puts the portrayal of Evan Chandler in the media or in Ray Chandler's book as the concerned father, the only responsible adult in Jordan's life, the only person who cared about his well-being, into a perspective. Out of all of his children Evan only seemed to care about the millionaire Jordan. After the settlement with Jackson he closed his dental practice, refused to work and provide for his other two children – or even to visit them - and decided to live off of Jordan's money. Later, in 2005, Evan even filed a lawsuit against Jordan to try to get access to his trust fund. The 1994 settlement money went to Jordan's trust fund (except for 1.5-1.5 million dollars that directly went to the parents) and that may explain why Evan chose to file another lawsuit against Jackson, this time on his own behalf, in 1996.

In his lawsuit Evan Chandler claimed that Jackson, Lisa Marie Presley, ABC, Sony and others earned in excess of \$60 million from album sales and the income of the *Prime Time Live* interview, and since their actions were allegedly in violation of the Confidentiality Agreement they were actually indebted to him for that sum. He claimed Jackson "*commercially exploited*"[2] the allegations on his album and because of that Evan personally suffered damages.

Evan's lawsuit claims:

"As a direct and proximate result of Defendant Jackson's, and others' material breach of the Agreement as herein alleged for commercial exploitation and financial enrichment, Plaintiff [Evan Chandler] demands all economic benefits gained by Defendant Jackson and other Defendants from the commercial exploitation of the facts of the "Underlying Action" in an amount in excess of \$60,000,000.00." [2]

The lawsuit alleged that because of Jackson's and others' conduct Evan suffered "*severe and extreme emotional distress*":

"The conduct of Defendant Jackson and others as herein described was done with the intent to cause, or with reckless disregard to cause, Plaintiff severe and extreme emotional distress. Such extreme and outrageous conduct exceeds all bounds of decency, and is of a nature which was and is specifically calculated to cause, and did cause Plaintiff to suffer extreme and severe emotional distress. Plaintiff is therefore entitled to recover damages according to proof." [2]

and

"As a direct proximate result of the above-described words, Plaintiff has suffered the following special damages: Plaintiff has suffered loss of his reputation, shame, mortification, emotional distress, and injury to his feelings, while suffering and continuing to suffer general and special damages as set forth herein." [2]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

For the alleged trauma Evan demanded an additional \$750 000 in damages, above the \$60 million:

“As a further direct and proximate result of Defendants’ conduct as herein alleged, Plaintiff has suffered panic, trauma, humiliation, disgrace, worry, anxiety, mental anguish, physical and emotional distress, all to his damage in a sum in excess of \$750,000.00.” [2]

Evan also demanded that the Defendants compensate him for his legal costs.

Besides the monetary demands the lawsuit demanded an Order allowing Evan to release an album about the alleged molestation of his son, entitled *EVANstory*:

“As an additional direct and proximate result of Defendant Jackson’s and others’ material breach of the agreement as herein alleged, and because of the need to repair the reputation of the Plaintiff, Plaintiff seeks the equitable remedy of an order to allow him to publish and cause to be distributed to the public for sale a certain musical composition entitled “EVANstory.” This album will include such songs as: “D.A. Reprised”: “You Have No Defense (For My Love)””; “Duck Butter Blues”; “Truth”; and other songs.” [2]

Remember that the Chandlers claimed that they refused to testify against Jackson in a criminal court in 1994 because they wanted to protect their privacy and because they wanted to move on with their lives and not subject Jordan to the media spotlight and scrutiny that would have been unavoidable in a high profile case. They also claimed they received several death threats from Michael Jackson fans and since Los Angeles District Attorney, Gil Garcetti refused to put the family in the Witness Protection Program, they were afraid for their lives. However, Evan Chandler was actually seeking media spotlight when he requested a Court Order to allow a release of an album about the alleged molestation of his son, in lieu of going to criminal court, testifying and subjecting himself and Jordan to cross-examination.

More evidence that the Chandlers were not shy of publicity at all – in actuality, they played the media for their benefit and they were seeking the publicity – can be found in the court documents of this 1996 lawsuit. Among them there is a motion filed by the lawyers of Jackson’s ex-wife Lisa Marie Presley. In it Presley’s lawyers complain:

"Based on speculative and unfounded "conspiracy" allegations, plaintiff Evan Chandler has improperly dragged defendant Lisa Marie Presley into this lawsuit that is really between Chandler and Presley's former husband, defendant Michael Jackson alone. Chandler's recent actions prove that his reason for improperly suing Presley is, pure and simple, publicity, for himself and his counsel. Two weeks ago, Chandler took Presley's deposition, and secretly called the media to tell them when and where Ms. Presley would be deposed. When they arrived at the deposition, Ms Presley and her counsel were unexpectedly besieged by the press. Chandler's counsel also went on the air in a nationwide tabloid news program to publicize the Presley deposition. It would not be surprising if counsel had been paid for that. The deposition included questions about such private issues as Ms. Presley's marriage to Jackson. Yet when asked to make the transcript confidential, Chandler's

The Michael Jackson Allegations

counsel refused, showing that Chandler intends - unless stopped by this Court - to further improperly publicize Ms. Presley's private life.

It is bad enough that Chandler has improperly sued Ms. Presley. He should not now be able to exploit Ms. Presley's role in these legal proceeding for the publicity benefit of himself and his counsel. By this motion, Presley is asking this Court to limit the harm already caused to her by Chandler's lawsuit by prohibiting the dissemination and disclosure of her deposition testimony, or the video tape of her testimony, to non-parties to this lawsuit (such as the media)."
[4]

and

"On March 7 and 8, 1997, pursuant to this Court's order, Chandler deposed Presley for two days. When Presley and her counsel arrived at the deposition site, they were confronted at the door by reporters and television cameras. Chandler's counsel did not deny that he had called the media to cover the deposition. Chandler's counsel made all the arrangements for the deposition, and never told anyone he had invited the media. Also, apparently before the deposition, Chandler's counsel gave a private interview to a nationwide tabloid news program about the deposition. Right after the deposition, a major network broadcast the interview, along with clips of Ms. Presley and her counsel entering the deposition room, on the tabloid show. Chandler's counsel obviously carefully orchestrated this media blitz to exploit Ms. Presley's fame for the private benefit of himself and his client.

During the deposition Chandler's counsel delved into Presley's private life, including her marriage to and relationship with Jackson. Because the deposition covered such private topics, and in light of the TV cameras outside, Presley's counsel asked counsel for Chandler to agree to keep the deposition transcript and video tape confidential. Chandler's counsel refused as to both the transcript and the video tape. He even refused to agree to confidentiality during the time it would take Presley to file, and for this Court to hear, a motion for protective order." [4]

Additionally, in 1998 Evan's brother, Ray Chandler made his rounds in the media concerning the allegations in the civil lawsuit discussed in this chapter [5; page 8-9].

Also consider the lawsuit alleging that Jackson breached the Confidentiality Agreement in tandem with the fact that Evan's brother, Ray Chandler was shopping a book about the allegations immediately after a settlement was signed. (More about that in the next chapter.)

Evan Chandler's lawsuit was thrown out of court in 2000. His complaint can be read in its entirety [here](#).

Sources:

[1] Raymond Chandler – All That Glitters: The Crime and the Cover-Up (Windsong Press Ltd, September, 2004)

The Michael Jackson Allegations

[2] Evan Chandler's lawsuit against Michael Jackson filed on May 7, 1996

<http://web.archive.org/web/20070916092707/http://www.courtstv.com/archive/legaldocs/newsmakers/jackson.html>

[3] Nathalie Chandler's lawsuit against Evan Chandler in 1998.

[4] Motion by Lisa Marie Presley in the 1996 lawsuit Evan Chandler vs. Michael Joseph Jackson and others.

Case number: SM097360

[5] Notice of motion and motion of third party Raymond Chandler to quash subpoenas and/or in camera review; authorities; declaration of Raymond Chandler (October 25, 2004)

<http://www.sbscpubliaccess.org/docs/ctdocs/102504nommot3rdpty.pdf>

Ray Chandler's Subpoena in 2004

The 1994 settlement between Michael Jackson and the Chandler family forbade the signing parties from speaking to the media and/or publicly about the allegations. However, book publisher, Judith Regan disclosed to SiriusXM radio the fact that Evan's brother, Raymond Chandler was shopping a book to her shortly after the settlement was signed:

"I received a call from Jordan's uncle. He wanted to do a book in which he would describe in detail the allegation of molestation against Michael Jackson. So I asked him how he proposed to do this given the fact that the Chandlers had actually signed a confidentiality agreement and taken \$20mln. And he said that Jordan's father had given him all the information he needed for the book and he believed he was outside the bounds of the Confidentiality agreement because he would be the author. At the time I had the impression that the Chandlers were brazen opportunists and I found the entire proposal by the uncle to be distasteful. They enter a Confidentiality agreement and before the ink is even dry they are shopping a deal that violates this agreement?"[1]



Evan's brother, Raymond Chandler

That Ray Chandler was indeed shopping a book "within days" after the settlement was signed, is confirmed by none other than Ray Chandler himself in a Motion he filed with the Santa Barbara Court on October 25, 2004. The Motion was filed in response to a subpoena filed by Jackson's defense which will be discussed in detail below. In it, Ray Chandler argued that his intent had always been to disseminate the information he gathered from his brother and nephew, which made him an investigative journalist and therefore afforded him the protection of the Shield

Law, which would prevent him from being compelled to present his alleged evidence in court. *"The California Shield Law provides legal protection for journalists seeking to maintain the confidentiality of an unnamed source or unpublished information obtained during newsgathering."*[2]

In support of his claim that he should be protected by the Shield Law Ray Chandler disclosed in that Motion [3; page 8]:

"Within days after Jordan Chandler's civil lawsuit against Michael Jackson was settled in January, 1994, Raymond Chandler traveled to New York City to seek a publisher for the purpose of putting the information he had gathered in the form of a non-fiction book for dissemination to the public. Such intent on the part of Raymond Chandler is evidenced by an article that appeared in the New York Post revealing his contact with a publisher one day after it occurred." [3]

In the article attached to the Motion the publisher named is indeed Judith Regan [3; page 41].

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Ray Chandler, in making his claim that he should be protected by the Shield Law states in the Motion that he traveled to Los Angeles “*within two days after the Michael Jackson child molestation scandal became public in August of 1993*” [3; page 8] and from late August through December of 1993 lived in the Los Angeles home of Evan and Jordan Chandler with the intent of gathering information about the molestation allegations and then publicly disseminating that information [3; page 13].

Ray Chandler’s Motion makes it clear that from the very beginning of the child molestation scandal the Chandlers planned to publish a book about it. Please take note of this fact when you consider the Chandlers’ arguments as to why they did not want to testify against Jackson in a criminal court. They claimed they wanted to move on with their lives and not subject Jordan to media spotlight and the scrutiny that would have been unavoidable in a high profile case. They also claimed they received several death threats from Michael Jackson fans and since Los Angeles District Attorney, Gil Garcetti refused to put the family into the Witness Protection Program, they were afraid for their lives.

However, it seems the Chandlers were alright with being in the media spotlight to promote their book and discuss the allegations contained in that book (as opposed to moving on with their lives). They even were apparently willing to accept the risk of potentially being threatened by Michael Jackson fans because of that book and the allegations contained therein, although it was unacceptable to testify in a criminal court and subject themselves to cross-examination about these very allegations.

Ray Chandler eventually published his book entitled *All That Glitters* in September of 2004 at the height of the media frenzy caused by the Arvizo allegations lodged against Jackson. The book quotes Evan excessively and relies heavily on his account of the events which allegedly occurred in 1993 and in the following years. Ray Chandler also made his rounds in the media in 2003-2005, giving superficial interviews where no hardball questions were asked and appearing in documentaries heavily biased against Jackson. Additionally, he set-up what is now a defunct website specifically about the Chandlers’ allegations against Jackson.

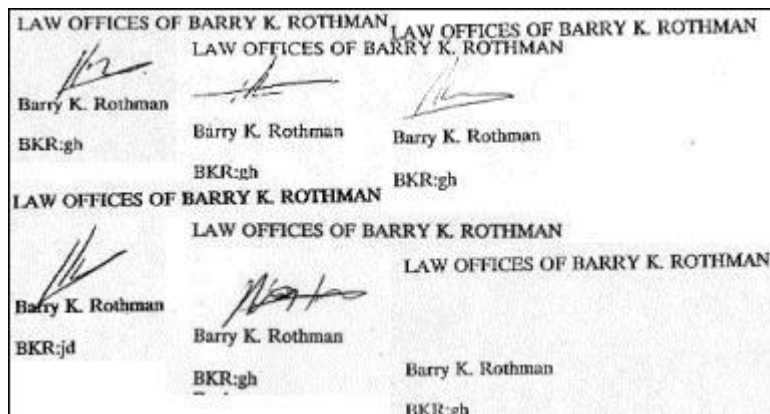
The website claimed to have published documents which would “prove” Jackson’s guilt but in reality, the documents only re-stated the Chandlers’ and their legal representatives’ allegations, allegations which were never cross-examined or proven.

Additionally, according to Geraldine Hughes, who was employed as a legal secretary for Barry Rothman, the Chandlers’ attorney during the 1993 allegations, some of the documents on Ray Chandler’s website even appeared to be forgeries. Case in point, correspondence between Rothman and other parties appearing on the website bear the signature of the parties and initials of the secretary who typed them. However, Geraldine Hughes stated to the MJEOL website that although they bear her initials as the typist, she never typed some of those documents. Additionally, she stated some signatures bore little resemblance to Rothman’s and one document was posted unsigned. Hughes told to MJEOL:

“When I review the documents that he [Ray Chandler] has on his website, I am convinced that several of the documents, even though they bear my initials as the typist, I DID NOT TYPE THAT PARTICULAR DOCUMENT. Several of these documents have been manufactured and are not even bearing the correct signature of my attorney Barry Rothman.” [4]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Here are the signatures as they appeared on the documents published on Ray Chandler's website:



In addition to Ray Chandler being very active in the media before and during Jackson's 2005 trial, he also appeared in several interviews in and around 1998 in connection with a lawsuit his brother, Evan brought against Jackson regarding the 1995 Diane Sawyer interview [for details see the previous chapter].

It should be noted that the only Chandler ever to testify in a court and be subjected to cross-examination regarding their allegations against Michael Jackson was Jordan's mother, June Chandler. On April 11, 2005 June Chandler testified as a prosecution witness in regards to the time her son spent with Jackson in 1993. June Chandler was asked about the details of the legal proceedings afterwards but during the trial she never testified that she witnessed molestation or any inappropriate touching. She also told the court that she had not seen Jordan for 11 years. (Jordan legally emancipated himself from both of his parents in 1995.)

The rest of the Chandler family, including Jordan himself, never testified against Jackson in a court of law and were never cross-examined. As discussed in detail in the chapter about [The Settlement](#), only a civil case can be settled out of court and no settlement can prohibit any party from testifying in a criminal court. In actuality, in 1994 the criminal investigation went on even after the settlement and the prosecution tried hard to convince the Chandlers to testify in a criminal court and though they could have they were unwilling. In actuality, Santa Barbara District Attorney, Thomas Sneddon even extended the statute of limitations in the Chandler case, so Jordan Chandler could have decided to testify against Jackson in a criminal court basically at any time he had wanted, but he was unwilling. [5]

During the 2005 People vs. Jackson trial, the prosecution once again attempted to get Jordan Chandler to testify on the stand in support of their case but Jordan, just as his uncle, Ray Chandler, once again declined. Instead of presenting evidence and testifying for the prosecution against Jackson in court, Ray Chandler chose to write a book, give interviews to the media and post questionable documents on his website; all this, despite being given the opportunity to testify against Jackson in a court of law.

Court documents from 2004 reveal that on September 19, 2004, just a week after Ray Chandler released his book to the public, he was served with a Subpoena Duces Tecum (a request for the production of evidence) and a Trial Subpoena (a demand for personal appearance at trial and the production of documents) by Jackson's defense. Since Ray Chandler alleged in his book, in television interviews and on his website that he had evidence

The Michael Jackson Allegations

of Jackson's guilt, the entertainer's defense wanted him to appear before the court, produce that evidence and subject himself to cross-examination. However, Ray Chandler, rather than take this opportunity to help finally convict a person he alleged had molested his nephew, instead fought tooth and nail against the subpoena.

An objection was filed with the Santa Barbara Court by Ray Chandler's lawyers, Herb Fox and Peter Bezek, on October 25, 2004 [6]. The document objects to the Subpoena Duces Tecum filed by Jackson's defense on September 19, 2004. The subpoena requested that Ray Chandler produce "*all documents constituting, evidencing, concerning, discussing or mentioning*" the alleged relationship between Michael Jackson and Jordan Chandler; all documents of communication between Ray Chandler and any other person discussing Michael Jackson; all documents of communication between Ray Chandler and enforcement agency, governmental entity, police personnel, Sheriff's personnel, Child Protective Services where Michael Jackson or Jordan Chandler has been mentioned; all documents of communication between Ray Chandler and Jordan Chandler, and between Ray Chandler and Evan Chandler concerning the allegations against Michael Jackson; all documents and interview recordings concerning or relating to Ray Chandler's book, *All That Glitters*; and all documents concerning the printing, distribution, promotion or sale of the book. Additionally there were two requests made about Ray Chandler's assumed connection to a public relations agency, Tellem Worldwide, which also had the Santa Barbara District Attorney's office among their clients. [6]

Ray Chandler objected to all of these requests based on the following arguments: the request is either "*overboard and burdensome*", or the "*documents are public documents readily available to the Defendant*", or "*to the extent that any of these documents are unpublished they are protected from compelled production by the journalists' Shield Law*", or producing the documents "*will not reasonably lead to the discovery of admissible evidence*" or are "*irrelevant to the issues in this case*" or the request is "*an invasion of privacy*". [6]

In his Motion Ray Chandler admitted that the majority of his documents are magazine articles and court pleadings. To the point where Ray Chandler was requested to provide all documents of communication between him and any enforcement agency, governmental entity, police personnel, Sheriff's personnel, Child Protective Services where Michael Jackson or Jordan Chandler has been mentioned, the Motion answered: "*Raymond Chandler objects to producing these documents on the ground that they are not relevant to the subject matter at hand in that none of these documents contain any information regarding any claims of child molestation or defenses to such claims.*" [6]

Ray Chandler's lawyers also argue that the the Court has not yet ruled on the admissibility of the 1993 allegations, therefore "*it is not yet known*" if Chandler's book, tapes and the documents upon which the book is based are relevant to the instant criminal prosecution. [3]

Although the Court had indeed not yet ruled on the admissibility of the 1993 allegations at the time, the prosecutors were working in the direction of trying to get those allegations introduced, including contacting Jordan Chandler in September of 2004. Jordan not only told them he was not interested in testifying against Jackson, according to Jackson's FBI files released after the singer's death in 2009, he also advised the prosecutors that "*he would legally fight any attempt*" to make him testify against Jackson [7]. Additionally, Jackson's attorney, Thomas Mesereau stated in an interview that had Jordan Chandler come in to testify

The Michael Jackson Allegations

in 2005, he had witnesses prepared to testify that Jordan privately admitted to them that Jackson never molested or touched him inappropriately [8].

We do not know whether Ray Chandler knew about this or not but had the Chandlers wanted the 1993 allegations introduced in 2005 and discussed in court in detail, they could have had them introduced simply by agreeing to testify. Of course, at this time they would have also been subject to cross-examination for the first time.

In actuality, even with Jordan's and Ray's refusal to testify, the 1993 allegations eventually *were* introduced to court in 2005 through the so called "prior bad acts" provision. However, Ray Chandler did not testify and did not subject himself, his claims or his alleged evidence to cross-examination even then. (Nor did Jordan Chandler testify.)

In the 70 paged long Motion, Ray Chandler's lawyers also request, should the Court decline to grant their Motion to quash the Subpoena Duces Tecum, that the Court review the documents (which according to them "*include several thousand pages of newspaper and magazine clippings, copies of deposition transcripts and court pleadings, and approximately six to eight hours of tape recordings*" [3]) in camera "*to determine which documents, if any, should be provided to the Defendant for review and copying*" [3]. In camera literally means "in chambers" and it "*refers to a hearing or inspection of documents that takes places in private, often in a Judge's chambers*" [9]. It allows the judge to review the documents in private, with the exclusion of spectators and jurors, before determining its admissibility in open court.

In answer to Ray Chandler's objection to the subpoena, in an Opposition filed on November 5, 2004, Jackson's defense argued that Ray Chandler was not a journalist since he was not engaged "*in any news gathering activities as a reporter, editor, publisher or person connected with or employed upon a newspaper, magazine, or other periodical publication*". Therefore, it was argued, "*he is not entitled to protection under the Shield law*", and that he is a witness to the 1993-94 events who cannot withhold unpublished information [10]. On November 8, 2004 Ray Chandler's lawyers filed a Reply in which Ray Chandler stated he was the owner of Windsong Press, the company which published his book, *All That Glitters* and therefore again, protected by the Shield Law. He also stated he was not an eyewitness to the alleged crimes in 1993 [11]. Eventually the Judge decided that Chandler was indeed protected by the Shield law and so he did not have to present his documents in court and did not have to testify.

From our point of view whether Ray Chandler technically was really a journalist or not and entitled to be protected by the Shield law is a side issue. The more important point is the fact that Ray Chandler was not at all willing to testify against Jackson, to present his alleged evidence against him in a court of law or do anything at all to help convict the alleged molester of his nephew. In actuality, he vehemently fought against repeating his allegations in a court of law and having this alleged evidence subjected to cross-examination. Instead he chose to make those allegations in a book, on his website and in media interviews he gave.

This also demonstrates that, ironically, it was Jackson's defense who fought to bring Ray Chandler and his alleged evidence to court.

Sources:

The Michael Jackson Allegations

[1] Judith Regan on Michael Jackson Molestation Allegations on SIRIUS XM
http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=yQYeNfHVBtM&feature=player_embedded

[2] Protecting Unpublished Information and Confidential Sources (thefirstamendment.org)
<http://www.thefirstamendment.org/shieldlaw.html>

[3] Notice of motion and motion of third party Raymond Chandler to quash subpoenas and/or in camera review; authorities; declaration of Raymond Chandler (October 25, 2004)
<http://www.sbscpublicaccess.org/docs/ctdocs/102504nommot3rdpty.pdf>

[4] Hughes Responds to Ray Chandler – MJEOL Bullet #197
<http://site2.mjeol.com/mjeol-bullet/hughes-responds-to-ray-chandler-mjeol-bullet-197.html>

[5] Broadcast News (BN) February 15, 2001
“Sneddon tells the New York Daily News the case against Jackson was never closed and it can be re-opened at any time. He says the statute of limitations hasn’t run out because Jackson was living out of the country for so much time.”

[6] Verified objections by non party Raymond Chandler to Defendant’s Subpoena Duces Tecum (October 25, 2004)
<http://www.sbscpublicaccess.org/docs/ctdocs/102504verobjsnonpty.pdf>

[7] Jackson’s FBI files as released in 2009
<http://vault.fbi.gov/Michael%20Jackson/Michael%20Jackson%20305%20File%20Part%201%20of%201/view>
(page 4)

[8] Michael Jackson was Innocent – Tom Mesereau talks about how Jordan Chandler Lies
http://www.youtube.com/watch?v=-eSC997_HH0

[9] In camera (The Lectric Law Library)
<http://www.lectlaw.com/def/i018.htm>

[10] Mr. Jackson’s opposition to motion to quash Chandler subpoena and declaration of counsel (November 5, 2004)
<http://www.sbscpublicaccess.org/docs/ctdocs/110504mjoppmotchandsub.pdf>

[11] Third party, Raymond Chandler’s reply to defendant’s opposition to motion to quash (November 8, 2004)
<http://www.sbscpublicaccess.org/docs/ctdocs/1108043rdptyrcrpdftopp.pdf>

Jason Francia

As discussed in the chapter **The Prosecution's Hunt For Other Victims** despite an extensive and costly investigation, the prosecution still struggled to find corroborating victims to support the Chandlers' allegations. In 1993 police officers interviewed 40-60 children who had either spent time with Jackson or at his Neverland Ranch. None of the children corroborated the accuser's story. They all told authorities that they had never been molested by the star and he had never done anything inappropriate to them.



Jason Francia at Jackson's 2005 trial

In desperation, the prosecution engaged in questionable tactics, which are detailed in the above mentioned article, but that still did not result in the discovery of more alleged victims, with the exception of one boy: Jason Francia. He was the only young man whom the prosecution was able to put on the stand in support of the Arvizo allegations at Jackson's 2005 trial as well.

Jason Francia is the son of Blanca Francia, a maid who worked for Jackson between 1986 and 1991 – and who was among those ex-employees of Jackson who made money of these allegations by selling stories to tabloids after the Chandler allegations broke in 1993.

When the police first interviewed Jason Francia in 1993, the only boy claiming abuse by Jackson was the original accuser, Jordan Chandler. The police interviewed dozens of children but could not find any other child willing to corroborate the Chandlers' claims, despite the investigators engaging in questionable methods. This is how they got to Blanca Francia's then 13-year-old son, Jason, on November 4, 1993 and then again on March 24, 1994. It was the police who initiated the contact, Blanca and Jason Francia never turned to authorities.

To the police, Jason Francia initially denied that Jackson had ever done anything inappropriate to him. He said: *"I'll just say this out flat. I don't remember him trying anything with me except for the tickling"* [1]. When the police pressured him to "remember" wrongdoings by Jackson, he maintained: *"If I don't remember, I don't remember"* [1].

At Jackson's 2005 trial, Jason claimed that he initially denied impropriety because of embarrassment. However, audio tapes and the police transcripts of his 1993-94 interviews reveal how investigators pressured and lead him to create allegations against the star. In a *Motion in opposition to the DA's Motion For Admission Of Alleged Prior Offenses*, Jackson's defense classified these interviews as *"textbook examples of improperly suggestive interrogations"* [2].

What classify as "improperly suggestive interrogations" in cases like this?

A paper written by Kenneth E. Blackstone, a member of the *American College of Forensic Examiners International* and an expert of sexual offense investigation explains how interviewing methods can make a child's testimony tainted and unreliable, leading to false allegations. On page 11-12 of his paper *The Fallibility of Forensic Interviewing*, Blackstone

The Michael Jackson Allegations

lists nine factors which raise suspicion of improper interrogations techniques that can lead to false allegations. Those factors are:

- *Absence of spontaneous recall;*
- *Interviewer bias against defendant – a preconceived idea of what the child should be disclosing;*
- *Repeated leading questions;*
- *Multiple interviews;*
- *Incessant questioning;*
- *Vilification of defendant;*
- *Ongoing contact with peers and references to their statements;*
- *Use of threats, bribes and cajoling; and*
- *Failure to videotape or otherwise document the initial interview sessions. [3]*

Eight of those nine factors (1-8) can be observed in the interrogations of Jason Francia.

For example, on November 4, 1993, in a police interview, Francia told investigators he did not remember Jackson ever putting his hand anywhere that made him feel uncomfortable. Detective Vincent Neglia was not satisfied with that answer and made it very clear what answer he would be satisfied with, by suggesting to the boy that his memories were wrong and blatantly suggesting what he should “remember”:

“Det. Neglia: Okay, but what I am getting at is that maybe I am not being obvious enough. What I am saying is maybe he put his hands someplace on you where he shouldn’t have. Maybe he put his hands on you someplace that made you feel uncomfortable. And that’s why you are not remembering. It’s like there is a little bit of “Oh, I can’t remember that guy’s name and I don’t remember his last name, and I just don’t remember that. No I don’t want to remember that, no I can’t remember.” It’s a little of bit of a different kind of not remembering, one is because you are choosing not to, and one is that you just can’t call back the uh, the event. And I think of what you doing is tickling and all this stuff, is trying forcing yourself not to remember. And you also kind of got to the one where you’re saying that fourth time at the party you said something like, “That was the time.” What time was it Jason: What was the time?” [2]

At other times during the interviews investigators lied to the boy and said that other boys, such as Macaulay Culkin, had been molested by Jackson and the only way they could rescue them was if Jason said incriminating things about Jackson.

“Det. Neglia: I realize how hard this is. I realize how painful it is to think of these things you tried so hard not to think about but you are doing fine. And you are also helping the kid that he is bothering now.

Jason Francia: What do you mean he’s bothering?

Det. Birchim: He’s doing the same thing.

Jason Francia: Macaulay Culkin.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Det. Neglia: Only he's getting a lot more into it. Like your mother pulled you out of there. Macaulay's mother is not going to pull him out of there. They are feeding him.

Det. Birchim: He's doing worse stuff.

Det. Neglia: It's much worse with him." [2]

They claimed Corey Feldman had drug problems because Jackson molested him:

"Det. Neglia: He's a junkie now, he gets arrested, he doesn't act or anything. He gets high. He packs his nose with cocaine and he's going to die by the time he is 22 years old.

Jason Francia: How old is he?

Det. Neglia: About 21. But that's the kind of life he is living, and it's got to do with being exposed to people like this, and having nobody to protect them and to take them out.

Det. Birchim: Like you had your mom.

Det. Neglia: Like your mom pulled you out, and you're, you're candid, and you're (sic) honesty with us is going to help us. To pull the next kid out, it might even be too late for Macaulay (sic) already. But these kids that he's traveling with are on tour right now. Maybe we can pull them out of it... " [2]

Both Culkin and Feldman stated very firmly to authorities and the public alike that Jackson never molested them and never touched them in an inappropriate way.

The investigators referred to Jackson as a "molester"[1] in their interviews with Francia, even though they did not have any evidence against him. They also used derogatory profanity against Jackson, for example, saying: "he makes great music, he's a great guy, bullshit" [1]. At one point, after the investigators told Francia what *they* thought Jackson did to him, the boy said "Well, I'll have to work on that" [1]. In one of the interviews Francia said: "They [the interrogators] made me come out with a lot more stuff I didn't want to say. They kept pushing. I wanted to get up and hit them in the head" [1]. In the second interview, on March 24, 1994 Francia indicated he was aware of the fact that another boy (Jordan Chandler) had sued Jackson for money [1].

In his 1993-94 interviews, after initially denying any wrongdoing by Jackson, Jason Francia gave in to the pressure. In 2005, while under cross-examination by Jackson's lawyer, *Thomas Mesereau*, he admitted that he said things in those interviews because he "was trying to figure out how to get out of there" [1]:

Q. Remember telling the police, "You guys are pushy"?

A. Yeah. I remember telling the police that.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Q. Okay. And after they kept pushing you, you finally said, “You know, I think he did tickle me,” right?

A. No.

Q. Do you remember that? Do you remember at first saying you didn’t know, and then after –

A. Yeah, I remember saying at first, “I don’t know.”

Q. And after telling the police, “You guys are pushy,” you eventually finally said, “Yes, he tickled me,” right?

A. I believe that’s how it went.

Q. Okay. You kind of went back and forth during the interview, didn’t you? One second you’d say, “He tickled me,” and the next second you’d say you’re not sure, right?

A. I was trying to figure out how to get out of there.

Q. I understand. And you remember exactly how you felt in 1993 during the interview, right?

A. The feeling of, yeah, crying and crappiness. [1]

(Emphasis added.)

It was also revealed that after the police’s first interrogation of Jason Francia in 1993 he was sent for therapy with a counselor by the name of Mike Craft. District Attorney Thomas Sneddon was present at least one time in Craft’s office while Jason was there, though Jason could not explain what communication went on between the two men and why Sneddon was there at all. According to an article in *USA Today* on February 7, 1994, the therapist Jason Francia was sent to was arranged and paid for by the county Sheriff’s office after the boy’s mother expressed concern that Sheriff Deputies had called and met with her son while she was not present [4].

There had never been charges filed against Jackson based on Jason Francia’s claims, although the prosecution was obviously desperate to find another alleged victim besides Jordan Chandler.

However, Jason’s mother, Blanca Francia, taking a page out of the Chandlers’ playbook, hired civil lawyers and at the end of 1994 threatened Jackson with a civil lawsuit. In actuality, Blanca Francia talked about wanting to sue Jackson for money at least as early as March, 1994 – while the criminal investigation was still ongoing (for details see the later chapter entitled **Is it true that the FBI had evidence of Michael Jackson paying “hush money” to dozens of young boys?** under the “*Document 2*” segment). With the Chandler case behind him and a plan to release a new album in 1995, Jackson settled with the Francias out of court. As testified to during Jackson’s 2005 trial, two settlements were signed with the

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Francias – one with Blanca and another one with Jason Francia. Reportedly Jackson paid them \$2.4 million.

It must be noted that only a criminal trial can send a perpetrator to jail; a civil trial can only result in a monetary award, so, like the Chandler settlement, this was not a case of Jackson buying his way out of a criminal indictment. Two Grand Juries had already decided in the spring of 1994 not to indict Jackson. However, a civil trial could have resulted in a long, drawn out court process with lots of negative publicity for Jackson, which, regardless of the lack of credibility of the allegations and the outcome, would have affected Jackson's ability to promote a new album, that he planned to release in 1995. To put the \$2.4 million he paid out to the Francias into a perspective: Jackson's record label, Sony Music spent \$30 million on the promotion of Jackson's double album released in 1995, entitled *HIStory*. The first video of the album, *Scream*, cost \$7 million and a teaser that was shot for the album in Budapest, Hungary cost \$4 million. Even if Jackson had won the civil trial against the Francias, it probably would have cost him more than \$2.4 million in lawyer fees and lost earnings as it would have put his projects on hold for several years or at least would have heavily compromised them.

The language in both the settlements with Blanca and with Jason Francia emphasized that there was no admission of any wrongdoing on Jackson's part. The fact that both Jason and Blanca Francia were called to testify at Jackson's 2005 trial is a clear indication that such settlements of civil lawsuits do not and cannot prohibit anyone testifying at a criminal court. Francia's allegations *were* heard in Court during the 2005 proceedings and they were not found credible.

During Jackson's 2005 trial, Jason alleged the first act of impropriety occurred in 1987, at Jackson's Century City condo, in Los Angeles, when Jason was about seven years old. According to his story, while his mother was cleaning the condo, he and Jackson watched cartoons on the television and Jackson supposedly started to tickle him which resulted in a "tickle contest" between the two. Jason claimed that while tickling him Jackson's hand moved down to his crotch and he touched his genital area above his clothes.

A second act of impropriety was described, similar to the first one, occurring in the same place, again while watching cartoons, one and a half years later, this time when Jason was about eight, eight and a half years old. Jason again claimed, while watching cartoons, Jackson moved behind him and began "spooning" him. Jason claimed he started to tickle him and while doing so Jackson again touched his genitalia above his clothes. He claimed the contact with his genital area lasted at least about four, five minutes.

A third act of impropriety was claimed to have happened at Neverland in the arcade when Jason was about ten and a half years old. He claimed while playing a video game, Jackson again started to tickle him and somehow they ended up on the couch in a "spooning" position. Jason claimed that this time Jackson put his hand in his shorts and touched his testicles. He alleged this lasted about three to four minutes. At this point Jason felt the need to voluntarily emphasize: *"It took a lot of counseling to get over, just to let you know."* [1] (Note: Jason Francia was put into therapy by the prosecution in 1993/1994, like mentioned above.)

Jason further alleged that every time Jackson tickled him, the star put a hundred dollar bill in his pants. Jason claimed he never told his mother about the alleged abuse: *"I don't even think*

The Michael Jackson Allegations

to this day she knows”[1], he said on the stand in 2005, even though his mother hired civil lawyers and threatened to sue Jackson over the allegations in 1994.

During the 2005 trial, Jason’s Francia’s testimony was not considered credible by the jury, and the improper police interrogations those led to his allegations were not the only reason. Other than the alleged impropriety, Jason Francia did not seem to know or remember anything on the stand and was caught in several contradictions and lies. At the very least, this young man seemed to have an *extremely* bad, unreliable and ever-changing memory.

At age of 24, he sat on the stand and claimed he did not know if he ever signed a settlement with Jackson. He claimed he had not heard about the payment his mother received from the tabloid TV show *Hard Copy* until two days before his testimony and that he never discussed it with his mother.

At first, he claimed he never told his mother he was improperly touched but then admitted he did, claiming he was “*mistaken*” earlier. He claimed he never told the lawyers who represented him in 1994, Terry Cannon and Kris Kallman, that he was improperly touched, but later on in the testimony he said he did not know if he ever told them, and even later he said he did tell them.

In one of the 1993-94 interrogations Francia claimed that during a tickling episode he blacked-out and because of that he did not remember anything besides the tickling. In 2005, when Mesereau asked him if he had a black-out how could he have told the police that his mother was not in the room, he answered: “*I blocked it out. I didn’t blank it out*” [1]. Please note, Jackson’s condo was a small apartment and the alleged improprieties occurred while Blanca Francia was present, cleaning up and able to walk in on them at any time.

When the police asked Jason in 1993-94 if anything inappropriate had ever happened to him at Neverland he said “*I was around too many people*” and when they pressured him about the third account of tickling in the arcade, the incident where he now alleged Jackson put his hand in his pants – at the time initially Jason said he did not know if Jackson touched him inappropriately while tickling him. In actuality, he said he was not sure if Jackson even tickled him at all [1].

Mesereau pointed out that in an interview with the police in October, 2004 Jason claimed that this third tickling incident lasted more than ten seconds but he did not remember how long. At the trial, only a couple of months later, Jason suddenly remembered that it lasted for three to four minutes.

As for the money Jason allegedly received from Jackson after alleged acts of improper touching, when Jason Francia was initially interviewed by the police in 1993-94, he claimed that Jackson promised him money each time he read a book or achieved a good grade, because Francia had difficulties in school and with learning (in 2005 on the stand he admitted he still had problems with reading). This story later somehow evolved into Jackson putting money in his pants after each tickling.

During the trial, when asked if Attorney, Terry Cannon still represented him, Jason said “*I don’t think so, no*”[1] but later said he did not know if Cannon represented him. Mesereau reminded him that Cannon was present at a meeting Jason had with the prosecutors on December 6, 2004. At that meeting Jason did not want the interview to be tape-recorded.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

When Mesereau asked him why, at first he claimed to not remember that he made that request. Then when presented with documents that showed he indeed did, he could not testify what his reason was: *"I don't know"* [1] and *"Tape-recording is weird. I don't know. No, I don't"* [1]. Documents also showed that he requested Cannon to be present at the interview but Jason said he did not remember why Cannon was there and whether he asked him to be there or not.

During the trial, when asked whether any criminal charges had ever been filed against Jackson based on his claims (there had never been), Jason answered: *"I don't know much. I don't watch the news."* [1]

Mesereau asked Jason about another meeting which the prosecutors held on November 19, 2004 when his mother was interviewed in the DA's office. Again, Jason first claimed to not know anything about it: *"I don't know. Me and my mother don't talk about that stuff much."* [1] However, when Mesereau pointed out to him that he was present at that meeting, Francia all of a sudden remembered: *"Now I remember, yes."* [1] In actuality, not only was Jason present, but he too was interviewed by the prosecutors and he asked that the interview not be tape-recorded on that occasion as well. Again, Francia did not remember any of this: he did not remember that an interview by the prosecutors that lasted for about an hour, took place *at all*, although it happened only a couple of months before his testimony at Jackson's trial!

So not surprisingly, Jason Francia did not make a good impression on the jury at Jackson's trial. Jury foreman, Paul Rodriguez told Nancy Grace in an interview after the verdict.

GRACE: Mr. Rodriguez, did you believe the boy that came in that is now a youth minister that stated Jackson molested him in the past?*

RODRIGUEZ: Well, we got a little problem with that because he had no idea where some of his money came from, and he didn't want to talk to his mother. And so those kind of things that we kind of didn't focus on, but it did keep — we kept that in the back of our minds.

GRACE: So would it be safe to say you did not believe him?

RODRIGUEZ: Yes, we had a hard time believing him...

[...]

GRACE: Yes. What about the one kid that became a youth minister, who stated plainly Jackson molested his — fondled his genitals?*

RODRIGUEZ: Again, like you said earlier, you know, about his scenario or his testimony, it was hard to buy the whole story, when he acted like he knew nothing about it. I mean, he acted so much like the mother of the other accuser, you know, he just didn't seem that credible. He didn't seem to convince us, like we wanted to be convinced. And he just — he was leaving too many little loopholes in his statements. [5]

(* The prosecution and the media constantly tried to make Jason Francia look more credible by emphasizing that he used to be a youth minister.)

The Michael Jackson Allegations

It is very telling that Rodriguez put Francia's testimony on par with that of "*the mother of the other accuser*", Janet Arvizo, which was widely regarded, even by pro-prosecution journalists, as a disastrous testimony for the prosecution. [More about the Arvizos in the [The 2005 Allegations](#) segment of this document.]

Sources:

[1] Jason Francia's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (April 4-5, 2005)

<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[2] Supplemental Brief In Support Of Opposition To District Attorney's Motion For Admission Of Alleged Prior Offenses (March 25, 2005)

<http://www.sbscpublicaccess.org/docs/ctdocs/032505suppopp1108.pdf>

[3] Kenneth E. Blackstone – The Fallibility of Forensic Interviewing

http://www.blackstonepolygraph.com/articles/Fallibility_of_Forensic_Interviewing.pdf - the original link is not active any more, for a secondary link see:

https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/fallibility_of_forensic_interviewing.pdf

[4] Officials desperate to nail Michael Jackson (USA Today, February 7, 1994)

[5] Nancy Grace's interview with jury foreman, Paul Rodriguez (CNN.com, June 13, 2005)

<http://transcripts.cnn.com/TRANSCRIPTS/0506/13/ng.01.html>

Victor Gutierrez and his role in the allegations against Michael Jackson



Victor Gutierrez in front of a Michael Jackson This Is It poster

There were numerous journalists reporting on the Michael Jackson cases and among them there were those who were molding it, often in ethically questionable ways [for details see the next chapter entitled [The Media's Role In The Allegations Against Michael Jackson](#)]. There is one journalist, however, who stands out as someone who influenced the media's reporting and possibly even the formation of allegations against Jackson more than anyone else. His name is Victor Gutierrez.

The name Gutierrez might not sound familiar but many of the more popular journalists reporting on the Jackson case used Gutierrez as their source, apparently without vetting the “information” he provided. Diane Dimond called him one of her best sources and said of him *“I have never had a doubt about this person, ever”* [1]. He was also used as a consultant in documentaries televised about the Jackson cases, programs that were full of untrue claims, claims very biased against the entertainer.

Gutierrez not only acted as a source for other journalists but was also in contact with many people who later appeared as prosecution witnesses on the stand at Jackson's 2005 trial. Additionally, according to journalist Maureen Orth, the prosecution in Jackson's case relied on Gutierrez's book, *Michael Jackson Was My Lover* (discussed below) and believed it to be accurate information: *“The sources close to the prosecution I interviewed for this article were all familiar with the book and believed it was an essentially accurate portrayal of Jackson's relationship with Jordie Chandler”* [2], Orth wrote in her article published in the April 2003 issue of *Vanity Fair*, in which she too seems to give much credit to Gutierrez and his salacious stories.

The first time the wider public heard Gutierrez's name in connection with the Michael Jackson case was on January 9, 1995 when Diane Dimond announced on KABC-AM radio's popular morning show that the police had reopened their investigation against Jackson because of an alleged 27 minute video tape, captured by one of the star's security cameras, supposedly depicting acts of molestation. Dimond painted a very vivid picture of what was on the tape, despite the fact that she had not seen it herself, attributing the story to one of her *“best sources”*.

Though Gutierrez was not named on that particular show, he was revealed later that day as her source on Dimond's television show, *Hard Copy*, where Gutierrez himself made an appearance. Dimond aired the story on *Hard Copy* despite receiving a letter immediately after her appearance on KABC-AM from Jackson's lawyer, Howard Weitzman stating that what she had alleged was not true.

Indeed, the whole story turned out to be a total fabrication. The alleged tape did not exist and as such, was never produced. In fact, the only person who had ever claimed to have seen it,

The Michael Jackson Allegations

was Gutierrez. The boy whom Gutierrez claimed was being molested on the tape was Jermaine Jackson's son and Michael Jackson's nephew, Jeremy Jackson. Jeremy's mother, Margaret Maldonado recalled the story in her 1995 book entitled *Jackson Family Values*:

"I received a telephone call from a writer named Ruth Robinson. I had known Ruth for quite a while and respected her integrity. It made what she had to tell me all the more difficult to hear. 'I wanted to warn you, Margaret,' she said. 'There's a story going around that there is a videotape of Michael molesting one of your sons and that you have the tape.' If anyone else had said those words, I would have hung up the phone. Given the long relationship I had with Ruth, however, I gave her the courtesy of a response. I told her that it wasn't true, of course, and that I wanted the story stopped in its tracks. She had been in contact with someone who worked at the National Enquirer who had alerted her that a story was being written for that paper. Ruth cross-connected me with the woman and I vehemently denied the story. Moreover, I told her that if the story ran, I would own the National Enquirer before the lawsuits I brought were finished.

To its credit, the National Enquirer never ran the piece. Hard Copy, however, decided it would. Hard Copy correspondent Diane Dimond had reported that authorities were reopening the child molestation case against Michael. She had also made the allegations on L.A. radio station KABC-AM on a morning talk show hosted by Roger Barkley and Ken Minyard. Dimond's claims were based on the word of a freelance writer named Victor Gutierrez. The story was an outrageous lie. Not one part of it was true. I'd never met the man. There was no tape. Michael never paid me for my silence. He had never molested Jeremy. Period." [3]

Jackson sued both Dimond and Gutierrez and while Dimond (with a little help from Santa Barbara District Attorney, Thomas Sneddon) escaped unscathed, Gutierrez was ordered to pay Jackson \$2.7 million in damages. He never paid and instead fled the country and later filed bankruptcy.

Not only was Gutierrez unable to produce the alleged tape, but his claims were proven to be untrue. For example, he claimed that he had met Margaret Maldonado in a hotel room for that he had paid with his credit card, but the hotel had no record of him ever staying there. A private investigator, Eric Mason, revealed in a declaration that a journalist, Ken Wells, told him the following about an encounter he had with Gutierrez and his lawyer while the case was already going on:

"Mr. Wells told me that on July 2, 1997, Mr. Gutierrez and his attorney, Mr. Goldman came to Mr. Wells's home unannounced to discuss production of the supposed photographs. During their discussions on July 2, 1997, Mr. Gutierrez told Wells about all of Mr. Gutierrez's connections in the tabloid business, and that he had sold many stories, some of which had been "B.S." and simply made up. According to Mr. Wells, Gutierrez said that money in the tabloid business was easy, even for false stories. Mr. Wells told me that he asked Mr. Gutierrez about the videotape issue in this case. According to Mr. Wells, Mr. Gutierrez said that "The judge told me to produce the tape and I couldn't produce it." Wells asked Gutierrez whether he ever had or saw the tape and, according to

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Wells, Gutierrez smiled and said "Well, you know how that is. You know how these things are." Wells told me that he believed Gutierrez was telling him, without saying so explicitly, that he had lied about the existence of the tape.

Throughout the meeting on July 2, 1997, Mr. Wells told me that Mr. Goldman and Mr. Gutierrez requested that Mr. Wells get the supposed photographs of Mr. Jackson, with Mr. Gutierrez saying that he needed the photographs to help him with this case, and even if the pictures were fake, he could still make money selling them. " [4]

Besides his lies in the media, Gutierrez also published a book in 1996 entitled *Michael Jackson Was My Lover*. The book contains graphic descriptions of alleged sexual acts between Jackson and his 1993 accuser, Jordan Chandler. It also contains graphic sexual descriptions of alleged sexual acts between Jackson and other boys – boys, who have always stated, in no uncertain terms, that the singer never molested or touched them in any sexually inappropriate way. Because of its pedophiliac content, major publishers in the United States were unwilling to publish the book. The minor publisher/distributor which did has since become bankrupt.

Gutierrez claimed that he based his book on Jordan's diary, however the Chandlers say that Jordan never kept a diary. A diary in which Jordan documented his abuse would have been very important evidence in any investigation against Jackson but no such evidence was ever produced. Again, the only person who ever claimed to have seen the diary was Gutierrez, a man with a very questionable credibility, yet his book was believed by the prosecutors, at least according to Maureen Orth.

It is pretty clear that rather than Jordan's diary, the graphic sexual content in Gutierrez's book was based on Gutierrez's own perverted fantasies. Quite disturbingly, Gutierrez does not disapprove of the alleged abuse but instead celebrates it as a consensual love story, a wonderful "relationship"; it is no wonder since in the foreword of the book, amongst the credits he thanks NAMBLA (North American Man-Boy Love Association), an infamous pedophile organization [5]. Gutierrez, citing unnamed "experts", advocates pedophilia in his book as something that is not harmful to children but misunderstood by society, and he uses the Chandler allegations in support of his point. For example, he writes:

"The cliché of pedophiles as old men who kidnap children in sacks is as erroneous as thinking that all homosexual men attack other male pedestrians on the street. Psychiatrists report that there are pedophile rapists and murderers, just as there are homosexuals and heterosexuals who commit these crimes. These same experts indicate that sexual relations between adults and minors are sometimes loving and do not have a negative effect on the youngster's life. What better example than Jordie? He was more harshly affected by the legal procedures associated with his case than by his relationship with Jackson." [5]

The Michael Jackson Allegations



Snapshot of the credit list of NBC Dateline's Inside The Jackson Case program with Victor Gutierrez listed as a consulting producer (though his name is misspelled)

When Michael Jackson was accused of molesting Gavin Arvizo [more about that case in the [The 2005 Allegations](#) section], Gutierrez, perhaps sensing another opportunity to further his agenda, became very active in the media. He assisted in the making of slanderous documentaries about Jackson. Apparently the people who employed him as an expert on the allegations against Jackson did not find his history, the fact that he was Court ordered to pay Jackson \$2.7 million for lying about him, the pedophilia theme of his book or his apparent association with NAMBLA

problematic.

In a September 2006 British *GQ* article about Gutierrez it is claimed he was even engaged to work on Martin Bashir's Jackson documentary [6].

As revealing as his book was an interview with Gutierrez that appeared in a German newspaper, *Tageszeitung*, in April 2005 while Jackson was on trial. According to a 2010 article in the German *Spiegel* magazine, *Tageszeitung* actively advocated pedophilia in a series of articles in the late 70s and early 80s.

"During this time, no other newspaper offered pedophiles quite as much a forum as the alternative, left-leaning Tageszeitung, which shows how socially acceptable this violation of taboos had become in the leftist community. In several series, including one titled 'I Love Boys,' and in lengthy interviews, men were given the opportunity to describe how beautiful and liberating sex with preadolescent boys supposedly was. 'There was a great deal of uncertainty as to how far people could go,' says Gitti Hentschel, the co-founder and, from 1979 to 1985, editor of Tageszeitung. Those who, like Hentschel, were openly opposed to promoting pedophilia were described as 'prudish' — as opposed to freedom of expression. 'There is no such thing as censorship in the Tageszeitung,' was the response." [7].

The newspaper's journalist met with Gutierrez at a Hollywood hotel. The article is entitled *"Es war Liebe!"* (*"It Was Love!"*), referring to the alleged "relationship" between Michael Jackson and Jordan Chandler. It starts with the lie that Gutierrez's book was based on Jordan's diary and then details about Gutierrez's life are presented. He grew up in Chile and became a journalist, later traveling to the USA in 1984, where he worked as a photographer at the Olympic Games in Los Angeles. Afterwards, he did not return to his country, instead he found a job with a Spanish-language newspaper. Then:

"In 1986 he reports from a conference of the North American Man Boy Love Association. The so called NAMBLA was founded at the end of the 70s. At the beginning, the 'Support Group for Relationships Between Generations' was promoted prominently by Gore Vidal and Allen Ginsberg, then it was quickly isolated from the rest of the gay movement. At the conference Gutierrez hears

The Michael Jackson Allegations

for the first time: “Michael is one of us.” A pedophile. “Jackson was treated like an idol there, as a hope for social acceptance.”*

*Gutierrez quits his job at the newspaper, talks to employees of Jackson, interviews the first boys. Soon he runs out of money for the research. He sells his car, saves money on food. He learns: there are different type of pedophiles, pedophilia is as old as the human race, **not every game they play is a horrible crime.** Victor Gutierrez says: **“In the the five months of their relationship Michael Jackson and Jordie Chandler were happy. It was love.”** [8]*

(Emphasis added.)

[* Note: To be clear, Jackson has never been a member of NAMBLA and never had any association with them. What members express here is wishful thinking.]

To the question why aren't there more boys accusing Jackson, Gutierrez again gives a revealing insight into his “philosophy”:

“They are all afraid”, says Gutierrez. Not of Michael and his power but of public opinion. “It is about homosexuality”, Gutierrez opines, “nobody wants to be the gay Jackson boy”. His theory: if Madonna had an affair or a love relationship with a minor boy it would be a much smaller scandal. At the schoolyard the boy would be a hero. As Jackson’s lover he is a faggot.

“In a hundred years maybe such relationships will be accepted by society”, says Gutierrez. The story reminds him of Oscar Wild and his young lover, Bosi. As Gutierrez, who is a heterosexual himself, was looking for a publisher for his book in 1995, he hears people say that he glamorizes pedophiles.” [8]*

(Emphasis added.)

[* Note: In different interviews over the years Gutierrez has made conflicting statements about his own sexuality.]

While in this article Gutierrez does not protest against the claim that he “glamorizes pedophiles” and the journalist never challenges Gutierrez’s portrayal of pedophilia as some kind of consensual love relationship, in English language publications Gutierrez is more cautious.

In the September 2006 issue of the British *GQ Magazine*, in an article that is based on Gutierrez’s version of the events and thus clearly biased for him and against Jackson, the story of Gutierrez’s visit to the NAMBLA conference is rehashed but without naming the organization:

“Gutierrez began his investigation in 1986 when he went undercover with the LAPD. While attending a secret conference held by a suspect organization in LA, Gutierrez heard many references to Michael Jackson. So far as the world knew at the time, “Wacko Jacko” was just an eccentric. The fact he liked the

The Michael Jackson Allegations

company of young boys seemed no more suspicious back then than his hanging out with a chimp called Bubbles.” [6]

While in the *Tageszeitung* article it was suggested that he was there as a reporter, in *GQ* it is claimed he went there “*undercover with the LAPD*”. It is very unlikely that the LAPD would engage untrained outsiders for undercover operations over their own trained officers. In actuality, it is very unlikely Gutierrez would have been present at a NAMBLA conference as an outsider (let alone as a reporter) because the organization is very cautious about who they let in and very secretive about the exact whereabouts of their annual conferences. [9] [10] Only members and people who NAMBLA trusts receive an invitation.

In the 2006 *GQ* Magazine article it is also claimed that “*after the first phase of his research*” [6] Gutierrez sent a copy of his book to the LAPD, but they took no action “*because I was a nobody, just a Latino reporter in LA*” [6]. Take note of the fact that just a couple of paragraphs earlier in the same article it is claimed that Gutierrez was at that NAMBLA conference in 1986 “*undercover with the LAPD*”, which contradicts the claim that the LAPD would ignore information coming from him because he was “*a nobody, just a Latino reporter in LA*”.

(Please keep in mind that he visited a NAMBLA conference in 1986 is simply based on Gutierrez’s own words. It is possible that he made it up, like he did so many other things, but if he indeed visited a NAMBLA conference it seems unlikely that he was there as an outsider and did not have some sort of connection with the group.)

The *GQ* article’s main subject is a film that Gutierrez planned to make of his book with the help of Randy Barbato and Fenton Bailey, founders of the *World of Wonder* production company. Based on what is said by the two producers in the article, like the book, the film would have also served the agenda of portraying alleged child molestation as a consensual, romantic relationship.

“Despite the explosive nature of the events it describes, the script is actually a model of amorous propriety. “We wanted to capture the intoxicating feeling of the first love which was what it was for Jordie”, says Bailey.

[...]

Central to the film, and the most controversial element in it, is the presentation of Jordie as a willing, even eager, participant in a relationship with a man he had worshipped since the age of four. “The only way the general public can view somebody like Jordie is as a victim,” says Bailey. “The fact that he might have entered into the relationship with Michael Jackson of his own volition is, for many people, tremendously problematic.” [6]

Earlier in the article Barbato is quoted as saying:

“In America we are up against the ‘eek’ factor. The Europeans don’t have that kind of squeamishness. America can deal with the sanitized version of the story, but our story is based on the tabloid version.” [6]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Barbato also acknowledges that their movie “goes outside of any of the acceptable norms”:

“However, the producer remains understandably cautious about the ultimate success of his undertaking. “Indie movies have gone mainstream in the States,” says Barbato. “They’ve become a genre. But this project is independent in the true sense of the word. It goes outside any of the acceptable norms.” [6]

After Gutierrez visited the conference of the “suspect organization” in 1986, the 2006 GQ article states, he started to “*strike up friendships*” with some of Jackson’s employees:

“For the next five years Gutierrez tracked down as many of Jackson’s current and former associates as he could. Being Latino himself helped – it was relatively easy for him to strike up friendships with Jackson’s El Salvadorean maid, Blanca Francia, who left Jackson’s employment in 1991, and the star’s Costa Rican PA (personal assistant), Orietta Murdock, who sued him for unfair dismissal in 1992.” [6]

Again we read that after that NAMBLA conference, where pedophiles express the wish that Jackson become one of them, a celebrity poster boy as a “*hope for social acceptance*” [8] of pedophilia, Gutierrez goes on a mission and strikes up friendships with some of Jackson’s employees. The same employees who would later make allegations against the star.

There are also facts to consider about a possible connection between Gutierrez and Jackson’s first accusers, the Chandler family. According to the 2006 GQ article, Gutierrez became interested in the Chandlers when he saw Jordan, his mother and sister in Jackson’s company at several events during that time, including the 1993 World Music Awards in Monaco.

“A pariah in the celebrity-sucking world of freelance entertainment journalism, Gutierrez was forced to give up his writing and for a while supported himself by selling satellite dishes. Then, in 1993, his interest was reawakened when he heard about a boy called Jordie Chandler with whom Jackson was appearing at huge media events, such as the World Music Awards in Monaco.” [6]

As I have shown in other articles the Chandler accusations did not originate from Jordan Chandler himself. It was his father, Evan Chandler who first had the preconceived idea that the friendship between his son and Jackson was sexual; it was Evan Chandler who pressured and threatened the boy into corroborating his idea. [For details see the chapters [Evan Chandler’s “Suspensions”](#) and [How Did The Allegations of the Chandlers Emerge?](#)]

Remarkably, like Gutierrez, Evan Chandler spoke of supposed child molestation as if it was a consensual romance. In Ray Chandler’s book, *All That Glitters*, they even feel the need to explain in a footnote why the alleged “relationship” between Jordan and Jackson is described as a love story:

“Evan and Monique’s belief at the time, that Jordie and Michael were “in love,” is significant to the problem of understanding sexual molestation in older children. It did not occur to them that the thirteen-year-old was not a willing participant.” [11; page 45]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

In a secretly taped phone conversation between Evan Chandler and David Schwartz that took place on July 8, 1993 (see [Taped phone conversations between Evan Chandler and David Schwartz](#)), so **before** Jordan allegedly “confessed” to Evan about the alleged molestation (see [How Did The Allegations of the Chandlers Emerge?](#)), Evan claims that it were other people who convinced him of the harmfulness of the friendship between Jackson and Jordan. Whether one of these people was Victor Gutierrez or not is difficult to tell, however there are additional facts to consider about a possible connection between Victor Gutierrez and Evan Chandler.

In his book, Gutierrez presents legal correspondence, letters belonging to the Chandlers and private photographs of Jordan, his room and the Chandler’s house. Gutierrez befriended the Chandlers’ maid, Norma Salinas, so those documents could have been provided by her. However, Gutierrez’s book also contains stories, with varying details, identical to entries that appear in Ray Chandler’s *All That Glitters*, a book which was published almost ten years after Gutierrez’s publication.

Another inference to the possibility of a connection between the Chandlers and Gutierrez is the fact that a drawing allegedly made in October of 1993 by Jordan of Jackson’s private parts includes text that makes mention of the name “Orietta” twice. [More about that drawing in the earlier chapter entitled [Did Jordan Chandler’s description of Michael Jackson’s penis match the photographs taken of the star’s genitalia by the police?](#)] Jackson employed a personal assistant named Orietta Murdock whom he fired in 1992 and who sued the entertainer for unfair dismissal. Orietta Murdock, however, no longer worked for Jackson in 1993, when the star spent time with the Chandler family and her mention by the Chandlers in the context of that drawing is peculiar. As mentioned earlier in this chapter, Gutierrez boasted in an article in 2006 that between 1986 and 1991 he struck up friendships with employees of Jackson, such as Orietta Murdock, so could the Chandlers’ apparent connection with Murdock come through him?

If there was indeed a collaboration regarding the allegations in 1993 between the Chandlers and Gutierrez, the relationship must have turned sour later because in 2004 Ray Chandler, while making his rounds in the media and promoting his own book, called Gutierrez a “sleazebag” and stated that he did not endorse his book [12].

Despite of his very questionable credibility, apparently the investigators in the Jackson case took Gutierrez seriously. In a Los Angeles Times article dated August 28, 1993, it is claimed that Victor Gutierrez was among the first people whom the police interviewed in regards to the case against Jackson (the allegations were formally made on August 17, 1993): “*One of those interviewed was Victor Gutierrez, a Southern California free-lance journalist who has been working on a book about Jackson for several years. Gutierrez spoke to LAPD officers for two hours Thursday and was interviewed again Friday. He would not disclose what transpired during those sessions, but he told The Times that he has interviewed for his book some of the same youngsters being sought for questioning by the LAPD.*” [13]

Many of the witnesses who testified for the prosecution at Jackson’s 2005 trial, and on whom the prosecution’s “prior bad acts” case was mostly built, were people who had contact with Victor Gutierrez prior to selling their stories to the tabloids for money. Remember, Gutierrez is the man who told Ken Wells in 1997 that tabloid money was easy even with false, made-up stories.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Former security guard, Ralph Chacon testified he and other ex-employees of Jackson (whom the media often called the “Neverland 5”) spoke to Gutierrez before they went to sell their story to *The Star* magazine [14]. Former security guard, Kassim Abdool testified that he met Gutierrez once and they had a two, three hours conversation [15]. Former maid, Adrian McManus testified that Gutierrez “*was going to try to help us in our lawsuit*” [16]. Another prosecution witness was former maid, Blanca Francia, who is mentioned in the 2006 *GQ* article as one of the Jackson employees Gutierrez befriended shortly after his alleged visit to NAMBLA in 1986 [6]. In Gutierrez’s book there is a photo of the two together [5]. Other people whom Gutierrez befriended, such as as Orietta Murdock or the Chandlers’ El Salvadorean maid, Norma Salinas, did not testify but they made their rounds in the media selling salacious lies about Jackson to tabloids.

Michael Jackson was the most internationally famous victim of Gutierrez’s lies and manipulation, but he was not the only one. In late 2003 in his home country Chile, Gutierrez published an article in which he linked a politician of a right-wing political party to a pedophile ring. Gutierrez’s article gave a detailed description of what allegedly went on in the house of a businessman, Claudio Spiniak, who was arrested just a few days earlier for operating a pedophile ring. Gutierrez claimed that a senator of the *Alliance for Chile* (a coalition of right-wing political parties) participated in those pedophile orgies. He did not name the politician in his article but alleged that the senator’s name was given to authorities. Later in an interview conducted by Gutierrez for a TV program, a minor boy, a street child, claimed to have seen a well-known right-wing politician at Spiniak’s orgies. [17] The boy later retracted his claim and it was revealed that Gutierrez paid him 10,000 to 20,000 Chilean pesos. In February, 2004 Gutierrez’s lawyer acknowledged the payment but claimed it was only a “*humanitarian gesture*”, not something given in exchange for the interview and false accusations. Authorities could not find any link between the pedophile ring and any politician of the party accused by Gutierrez but the rumors were enough to tarnish the public image of the right-wing coalition and certain politicians. [18] [19]

In 2008 Gutierrez was sentenced to 61 days in jail and ordered to pay 30 million Chilean pesos (approximately \$60,000) to former Miss Universe, the ex-wife of Argentina’s former president, Carlos Menem, Cecilia Bolocco for slanderous claims he made about her private life. This was considered a precedent, the highest amount of compensation ever awarded in this type of case in Chile [20].

Victor Gutierrez, the man accredited by media journalists and the prosecution as being a reliable source of information on Michael Jackson, whose stories inspired many media articles and documentaries about the star, and to whom the very origin of the allegations against Jackson may be traced, is a man who has been convicted as a liar in a court of law, not once but at least twice and not in one but in two different countries.

Victor Gutierrez, a man who has expressed disturbing views about pedophilia, who has written a graphically sexual work of fiction, replete with pedophilic fantasies about an alleged mutual “relationship” between a man and a child; a man who had the audacity to thank NAMBLA in the foreword of this book; who by his own account, visited a NAMBLA conference in 1986, was directly involved in helping to shape and form the false allegations made against Jackson.

Sources:

The Michael Jackson Allegations

- [1] Interview with Diane Dimond on The Ken and Barkley Company morning show (KABC-AM Radio, January 9, 1995)
- [2] Maureen Orth – Losing His Grip (Vanity Fair, April 2003)
<http://www.vanityfair.com/fame/features/2003/04/orth200304>
- [3] Margaret Maldonado – Jackson Family Values: Memories of Madness (Newstar Pr, November 1995)
- [4] Declaration of Eric Mason (Michael Jackson vs. Diane Dimond, et al., Los Angeles Superior Court No. BC119778, October 16, 1997)
- [5] Victor Gutierrez – Michael Jackson Was My Lover (Alamo Square Dist Inc, 1996)
- [6] Robert Sandall – Michael Jackson Was My Lover (British GQ Magazine, September 2006)
- [7] Jan Fleischhauer and Wiebke Hollersen – The Sexual Revolution and Children, How the Left Took Things Too Far (Der Spiegel, July 2, 2010)
<http://www.spiegel.de/international/zeitgeist/the-sexual-revolution-and-children-how-the-left-took-things-too-far-a-702679-3.html>
- [8] “Es war Liebe!” (Die Tageszeitung, April 5, 2005)
<http://www.taz.de/1/archiv/?id=archivseite&dig=2005/04/05/a0170>
- [9] FBI Agent Robert Hamer’s undercover operation as described in Order Amending Opinion and Amended Opinion – USA v. David Cary Mayer, page 8.: *“He requested an invitation to NAMBLA’s 2002 conference but was denied because he had not been a member for a long enough period of time.”*
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/usa-vs-mayer.pdf>
- [10] Onell R. Soto – Little-known group promotes ‘benevolent’ sex (February 17, 2005)
Quote: *“The annual meetings, Polhemus said, were hush-hush affairs. Attendees were told to go to the host city, and the venue was not disclosed until the last minute. “They don’t want press and they don’t want the cops showing up,” he said.”*
<http://legacy.signonsandiego.com/news/metro/20050217-2208-manboy-daily.html>
- [11] Raymond Chandler – All That Glitters: The Crime and the Cover-Up (Windsong Press Ltd, September 2004)
- [12] Jacko: Accuser’s Uncle to Publish Exposé (FoxNews, September 8, 2004)
<http://www.foxnews.com/story/0,2933,131615,00.html>
- [13] Charles P. Wallace and Jim Newton – Jackson Back on Stage; Inquiry Continues (Los Angeles Times, August 28, 1993)
http://articles.latimes.com/1993-08-28/news/mn-28760_1_michael-jackson
- [14] Ralph Chacon’s testimony at Michael Jackson’s 2005 trial (April 7, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [15] Kassim Abdool’s testimony at Michael Jackson’s 2005 trial (April 25, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [16] Adrian McManus’ testimony at Michael Jackson’s 2005 trial (April 8, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [17] La prensa y el caso Spiniak (El Periodista, August 27, 2004)
<http://www.elperiodista.cl/newtenberg/1682/printer-63826.html>
- [18] Abogado confirma que Víctor Gutiérrez entregó dinero a L.Z. (Emol.com, February 11, 2004)
<http://www.emol.com/noticias/nacional/2004/02/11/138241/abogado-confirma-que-victor-gutierrez-entrego->

The Michael Jackson Allegations

[dinero-a-lz.html](#)

[19] Víctor Gutiérrez reconoce que pasó su billetito a menor del caso Spiniak (La Cuarta, February 12, 2004)
<http://www.lacuarta.cl/diario/2004/02/12/12.04.4a.CRO.GUTIERREZ.html>

[20] Millonaria sentencia a favor de Cecilia Bolocco remece a la farándula local (El Mercurio, October 30, 2008)
http://www.emol.com/mundografico/?F_ID=657315 - the original article is no longer available, for a secondary source see: <https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/www-emol-com-1-bolocco.pdf>

The Media's Role In The Allegations Against Michael Jackson

While the prosecution, both in 1993 and in 2005, struggled to find credible corroborating “victims” in support of their case against Michael Jackson, much of the media, rather than report impartial and factual events, corrupted the legal proceedings by offering monetary rewards to people who were willing to make up slanderous lies about Jackson and his relationship with children. In this article I will show you some examples of what is probably just the tip of the iceberg.

Those who were tempted, but resisted

During Jackson's 2005 trial, Fox News' Roger Friedman met with a family, the Newts, who told him that when Jackson's first scandal went public in 1993, the *National Enquirer* offered them \$200,000 to say that in the 1980s the then 11-year-old twin boys of the family had been molested or improperly touched by Jackson.

In the mid-80s the twin boys, Robert and Ronald Newt Jr. were aspiring child performers, managed by Michael Jackson's father, Joseph Jackson. The Newts explained that *the National Enquirer* had learned that in 1985 they spent two weeks in the Jackson's Encino family home as guests. They approached the family and offered the boys' father, Ronald Newt Sr. \$200,000 to say Michael Jackson was sexually inappropriate with his sons.

Robert Newt was 18 years old in 1993 when he and his father were contacted by a *National Enquirer* reporter, Jim Mitteager, whom they agreed to meet with at the Marriot Hotel in San Francisco. Mitteager wanted to pay them to lie.

“He said, ‘Say he grabbed you on the butt. Say he grabbed you and touched you in any kind of way,’” Newt said. “He told us he took all these people down. Now he was going to take Michael down. That he would really destroy him. He told us he took all these other famous people down. All the major people that had scandals against them. He said, ‘We take these people down. That’s what we do.’”

[...]

“My dad said these dudes are offering this money to take Michael Jackson down. And the guy [Mitteager] said, ‘Say he touched you. All you have to do is say it. But you might have to take the stand. You might have to go on ‘Oprah’ in front of all these people. You have to be prepared for this thing. Just say it. And we’ll give you money,’” Newt said.” [1]

According to Friedman, the Newts had evidence of their story, the contract that was given to them by Mitteager and signed by David Perel, who was the editor of the tabloid at the time. The Newts refused to sign the contract and told the tabloid that they were not willing to accuse Jackson of anything.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

“The contract, written as a letter, says it’s an agreement between the tabloid and the Newts for their exclusive story regarding “your relationship with and knowledge of Michael Jackson, and his sexuality, your knowledge of Michael Jackson’s sexual contact and attempts at sexual contact with Robert Newt and others.” [1]

According to Robert Newt, Mitteager knew nothing had happened but wanted them to lie nevertheless:

“He didn’t care! He was like, ‘Just say it and we’ll give you the money.’ And I was like, ‘He [Jackson] never touched me!’ Newt said. “He [Mitteager] was really fishing and really digging. Think about it — most people you say it to, ‘We’ll give you this money,’ even [if it’s not true]. And they’d take it.”

[...]

“He was trying to coach me — if I decided to take the money, what would happen. He said ‘You know, it’s going to be a huge scandal. You’ll probably have a lot of people not liking you. You’re going to be famous!’ But to me, you’d be ruined. And the truth is Michael didn’t do anything even close to trying to molest us.” [1]

Friedman had another piece of evidence, independent from the Newts, to back up their story: Mitteager had a habit of taping his conversations. After he died, his tapes were handed over to private investigator, Paul Barresi. Those tapes, according to Friedman, included Mitteager’s negotiations with the Newts.

The Newts’ story is not unique and could be considered the norm in the media’s handling of the allegations against Michael Jackson. In 1993, Jackson’s cousin, Tim Whitehead disclosed to Geraldo Riveira’s television show that he was offered \$100,000 by a tabloid to say Jackson was gay. In the same episode, television show actor Alfonso Ribeiro, who as a child in 1984 appeared in a Pepsi commercial with Jackson (and who is best known for his role as Carlton in the Will Smith sitcom, *The Fresh Prince of Bel Air*) told that his father “*was offered \$100,000 by a tabloid to say anything negative about Michael Jackson*” [2]. Whitehead and Ribeiro firmly stated that they never saw Jackson act sexually inappropriate with any child and they never felt uncomfortable around him. [2]

Not everyone resisted the temptation of the money being offered by the tabloids. Many of these people, however, were quickly ruled out as credible witnesses even by this prosecution’s low standard for credibility.

Daniel Kapon

In 2003, Daniel Kapon was 18 years old when he, accompanied by his mother, contacted the Santa Barbara Police Department and the Los Angeles Police Department claiming he had been sexually molested by Michael Jackson when he was a child. The young man was represented by Gloria Allred, an attorney who also represented the Chandlers for a short period of time in 1993. The claim was that Kapon had “repressed memories” of the molestation and therefore only recently recalled the abuse. The psychiatrist who helped Kapon “remember” was Dr. Carole Lieberman. Allred and Lieberman had filed earlier

The Michael Jackson Allegations

complaints against Jackson for the so called “baby dangling incident” and campaigned for Jackson’s children to be taken away from him. [3]

The police interviewed the boy but they did not find him credible. He described horrendously sadistic acts, kept changing his story and he claimed impossibilities. Most importantly, when the police contacted Kapon’s father, they learned the boy had never even met Michael Jackson.

On May 28, 2004 the police closed the investigation stating “*after an extensive investigation, which included hours of interviews with the person making the allegations, detectives concluded there was no evidence that any crime occurred. No charges will be sought*”. [4]

After the police closed their investigation, Kapon sold his story to the tabloid publication, *News of the World*. Reportedly, the tabloid paid him \$500,000 for an approximate half hour video tape where he described the alleged abuse in graphic detail [5]. On May 30, 2004 the paper printed the story of Kapon’s allegations, but failed to mention that the police had already investigated his claims and did not find them credible. The article was published two days after the police released the statement stating that the case had been closed, but at the end of the article, the journalist claimed that the investigation in Kapon’s case was actually ongoing [6].

Kapon also filed a civil complaint against Jackson. In his case, besides the allegations of sexual abuse, he claimed that a number of Jackson’s hit songs had been stolen from him, including songs on Jackson’s *Bad* album which was released in 1987. In 1987, Kapon was two years old. Kapon also claimed that he fathered the singer’s two eldest children; that his mother appeared in Jackson’s *Thriller* video and that Jackson was “*madly in love*” with her; that “*his mother married Jackson multiple times, and testified that the ceremonies were attended by Elizabeth Taylor, Celine Dion, Elton John, Paul McCartney, Beyonce Knowles and Diana Ross*” [7].

Daniel Kapon did not show up at start of the civil trial and the case was thrown out of court in January 2008.

Joseph Bartucci Jr.

Another accuser who, as it later turned out never even met Jackson, was a man called Joseph Bartucci Jr. Although he did not go to tabloids and “only” filed a civil lawsuit against Jackson, I will briefly discuss him in this article, because his case has similarities to Kapon’s in terms of absurdity.

In 2004 Bartucci filed a civil lawsuit against Jackson claiming the star had kidnapped and molested him in New Orleans between May 19 and May 27, 1984. Bartucci alleged that Jackson cut him, licked the blood off of his arm and proceeded to snort coke off of the laceration – all while raping him. Bartucci was 18 years old at the time of the alleged assault. As an explanation for why he waited until 2004, twenty years later to report this kidnapping, he too cited “repressed memories” that he claimed he only recalled when he heard that Thomas Sneddon was calling for alleged victims to come forward in November, 2003.

Jackson was not in New Orleans but in California at the time of the alleged assault, a fact that could be easily proven by the entertainer’s attorneys, so Judge Eldon Fallon tossed the

The Michael Jackson Allegations

lawsuit. It also emerged that Bartucci was, as Judge Fallon put it, a “*professional litigator*”. He had been involved in 18 civil and criminal suits over the previous 17 years and had also formally accused a minister of sexual abuse [8].

According to an article by The Smoking Gun website, in 1996 Bartucci was arrested for stalking a woman: “*According to court records, Bartucci took a plea to a reduced count of harassment and was fined, sentenced to probation, and hit with a 90-day suspended jail term.*” [9]

Terry George

Terry George never filed a lawsuit against Jackson and in fact never reported his allegations to authorities, but he was a frequent source for British tabloid stories in the wake of the 1993 Chandler scandal and has since been at their disposal whenever a tabloid story about Michael Jackson being inappropriate with children is required.

George, a disc jockey at the time, gained notoriety on August 29, 1993 when only six days after the Chandler case was first reported by the media, he appeared in British tabloids claiming that Jackson had been inappropriate with him in 1979, when Jackson was 20 and he was 13 years old.

George was a celebrity-obsessed teenager who regularly sought out celebrities, sneaked into their hotels to meet them, asked for their autographs and hoarded photos and taped interviews of them. As an adult George, who now amongst other businesses, runs a gay adult phone chat service, still likes to present himself as someone associated with celebrities. According to George, he met Michael Jackson in a hotel in February of 1979 while the Jacksons were on tour in the UK. He actually taped an interview with Michael and his brother, Randy, which was later aired on local radio stations. After the interview, George claimed, Michael Jackson asked for his telephone number and Jackson then regularly called him for about three months. George alleged that during these phone calls Jackson was once inappropriate with him, speaking about masturbation and masturbating while he was on the phone with him.

In the article it is claimed that the phone contact ended when George’s parents realized that he had run up a high telephone bill *calling* the US. (Please take note of the fact that it was George who was calling the US and also that even according to his own story, it was George who was stalking the star, not the other way around.) George then tried to reach Jackson from a phone box, but claimed that Jackson would not take his calls: according to one of the original 1993 tabloid articles, “*it became clear his superstar friend didn’t want to know*” [10].

George, however, kept stalking Jackson. According to the article, “*the final rejection came four years later when Terry tried to rekindle their friendship when Jackson came to London again. Terry tracked him down and was even photographed alongside his idol, but now the management were on hand to issue the polite brush-off.*” [10]

In the article George concludes that Jackson rejected him because he was no longer a child, however this contradicts the earlier claim that Jackson actually refused to take his phone calls four years earlier, when George was still 13.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

In a 2003 documentary entitled *Louis, Martin & Michael* and made by British broadcaster, Louis Theroux, George spoke about his alleged “friendship” with Jackson. George proudly recalled his phone conversations with Jackson as a happy and joyful experience. It is Theroux who brings up his 1993 tabloid allegation that Jackson was inappropriate with him on the phone. George is reluctant to talk about that and claims what was printed “*came out really without my authority*” [11]. When Theroux asks him if the story was true, George claims “*parts of it are true*” [11], but adds that papers twisted and sensationalized it. Then, after stating he did not want to talk about that because “*it is well documented in the papers*” [11], he tries to go back to discussing what a great “friendship” allegedly he had with Jackson. [11]

Unfortunately the contradiction between the story being “*well documented*” in the papers and the claim that papers twisted and sensationalized it, is not resolved in the interview and George makes no attempt to make it clear what parts of the story, according to his current position, are true and what parts are not.

In the Theroux interview, George also says that it is unfortunate that the focus of the media has been on this small detail of the story, when they had such a great “friendship” otherwise. We are to believe that when George went to the tabloid media with these claims, six days after the Chandler allegations became public, he did not know what impact this story would have and what people would focus on. In actuality, it is safe to say that this hook, the masturbation claim, is just what George needed to include in his story to be picked up and printed by the tabloid media at all and to lend George national and international notoriety. Why did he make his allegations in the tabloids, which are known to pay money for such claims, instead of contacting the prosecutors in the Chandler case?

In January 2005, on his website George criticized tabloids for rehashing his story from 1993 and claiming that he would be a prosecution witness at Jackson’s upcoming trial. Despite this criticism and George’s claim to Theroux that the original story had been released without his authority, sensationalized by the media and that the “small detail” about the alleged masturbation had received disproportionate attention, in February 2005, shortly after Jackson’s trial began, George appeared in Martin Bashir’s slanderous documentary entitled *Michael Jackson’s Secret World* and rehashed the original story that was printed in the tabloids in 1993, adding even more focus on the masturbation claim.

Although the tabloid articles in 1993 claimed that George was ready to help investigators in the Chandler case, he never did. Based on Jackson’s FBI files, the FBI monitored George’s claims in the tabloid media, but then the prosecution never used him. Either the prosecution did not consider him credible and/or he was not willing to repeat his claims under oath and subject himself to a cross-examination. In 2005, on his website, he vehemently denied media reports that claimed he would be a prosecution witness at Jackson’s upcoming trial. Instead of testifying at Jackson’s trial and subjecting himself to cross-examination, he chose to smear Jackson in the media and in Bashir’s documentary. His platform to make allegations against the star was always only the media and mainly the tabloids which are known to pay money for such allegations. George never testified about his claims under oath and was never cross-examined about them.

In 2009, in the wake of Michael Jackson’s death, George once again made his rounds in the British tabloids, now posing as a “friend” of the star and recounting stories with very questionable credibility. According to a June 28, 2009 *Mirror* article, George conveniently claimed that just before his death Jackson had called him to apologize and they made up. “*He*

The Michael Jackson Allegations

phoned me out of the blue and we both made our peace about what had happened in the past. I've forgiven him for what happened" [12]. Not surprisingly, he had no evidence for this alleged phone call and once again we are just supposed to take George's word for it.

George used the opportunity to make false statements in order to promote a website he set up in 2005, *Gone Too Soon*, curiously bearing the name of a Michael Jackson song, although it has no association with the star.

"Terry also revealed that Jacko had taken a strong interest in the website he'd founded, Gonetoosoon.org – where users post tributes to people who die young.

"He had been on the site and said he was touched to see some of the messages," he said. "It had left him very sad and emotional." [12]

No other child has ever claimed that Jackson masturbated while on the phone. Several recordings exist of private phone conversations Jackson had with children, as people often taped their telephone conversations with him without his knowledge and consent, but no tapes have shown that Jackson ever behaved inappropriately with children. On the contrary, all of his taped phone conversations with children are very innocent. Terry George could never present evidence for his claims either (consider that he often taped his conversations with celebrities), though there is plenty evidence of his opportunism.

Prosecution witnesses sponsored by tabloids

Although the likes of Kapon, Bartucci and George never made it on the stand, the prosecution did not shy away from using people who were previously paid money by tabloids. Most of the people called in support of the prosecution's "prior bad acts" allegations at Jackson's 2005 trial were these types of witnesses. *Blanca Francia, Ralph Chacon, Adrian McManus, Kassim Abdool* all had to admit on the stand that they were paid money by the tabloid media. *Phillip LeMarque* also admitted to have asked tabloids for \$100,000 and then \$500,000 for his story. Jackson's former public relations man, *Bob Jones* wrote a sensationalist book about the star – admittedly to make money because he was broke. On the stand he admitted that the salacious story about Jordan Chandler and Jackson that he included in the book (the reason why he was called to testify) was not true. This made prosecutor Gordon Auchincloss, who did his questioning, argumentative with the witness and he made attempts to impeach him. Remember, Jones was the prosecution's own witness.

There are former employees who did not appear at Jackson's trial as prosecution witnesses, but instead made their rounds in the media and were richly compensated for making slanderous claims. The "Hayvenhurst 5", as dubbed by the media, was a group of bodyguards (Leroy Thomas, Morris Williams, Donald Starks, Fred Hammond, Aaron White) who formerly worked at the Jackson family's Encino home. In November 1993 they went to Diane Dimond's televised news program, *Hard Copy* and claimed they were fired because they "*knew too much*" about Jackson's relationship with children. According to Mary A. Fischer's 1994 GQ Magazine article:

"Purporting to take the journalistic high road, Hard Copy's Diane Dimond told Frontline in early November of last year that her program was "pristinely clean on this. We paid no money for this story at all." But two weeks later, as

The Michael Jackson Allegations

a Hard Copy contract reveals, the show was negotiating a \$100,000 payment to five former Jackson security guards who were planning to file a \$10 million lawsuit alleging wrongful termination of their jobs.”[13]

The bodyguards never reported to authorities that they saw any inappropriate behavior by Jackson towards children. In fact, in depositions given to the police they admitted they never saw anything inappropriate. Their lawsuit was thrown out of court in July, 1995.

A Filipino couple, Mariano “Mark” and Ofelia “Faye” Quindoy, who worked for Jackson between 1989 and 1990, sold stories to the tabloid media in 1993 in the wake of the Chandler allegations, claiming that they quit, because they were so disturbed by what they witnessed Jackson do with children. However, they were not disturbed enough to report what they saw to the authorities. In actuality, a lawsuit they filed against Jackson claiming he owed them \$283,000 in overtime reveals that the real reason they left their employment with Jackson was because of disagreement about their wages and conflicts with other employees.

The Quindoys gave a television interview about a year before the Chandler scandal, in which they never mentioned any impropriety by Jackson towards children. In that interview they described Jackson as *“the shyest person in the world”* [2].

Additionally, in 1992 the couple was also interviewed by Allan Hall, a reporter from the British tabloid, *The Sun*. Hall also attested to the fact that at the time they had nothing bad to say about Jackson:

“The Sun drew up a contract for \$25,000 and I spent some time with them in Los Angeles doing the Life and Times with Michael Jackson... [They] didn’t have a bad word to say about the guy, not one bad thing... Nothing, absolutely nothing. That he was just a kind man with children.” [14]

Hall remarked:

“They are two people that I would not trust at all. And I think that they have really gone to town to do Michael Jackson down for the mighty dollar. Now they see money being offered around again and they want some more.” [14]

In 1993, the Quindoys’ own nephew, Glen Veneracion, a law student at the time, came forward and denounced his aunt and uncle as opportunists:

“I just feel bad that this is happening. I’m ashamed. I’m ashamed to be related to these people. I’m ashamed for the people in our country. It’s an embarrassment It really is.”

[...]

“What disturbs me the most out of all of this is that they waited so long. Why did it take them three years to come up with these allegations? That’s what really is disturbing. If this was true, they should have come out with it a long time ago instead of jumping on the bandwagon. They never said that Michael was a pedophile, they never said that Michael was gay, so I don’t know where this is coming from. I find it shocking. It’s very disturbing to me.” [2]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

At the time, Veneracion said he would be willing to testify against his relatives if the case went to court.

After the Chandler case went public in 1993, the Quindoys did not contact authorities but went to tabloids instead with their new allegations. In the 1994 documentary *Tabloid Truth: The Michael Jackson Scandal* Diane Dimond revealed first the Quindoys wanted \$900,000 for their story then they went down to \$500,000. *News of The World* reporter, Stuart White disclosed in the same documentary that from his paper the Quindoys wanted about \$250,000. [14]

Authorities eventually contacted the couple as a result of those tabloid stories. When asked why they did not turn to authorities with the information they now claimed to have, not even after the Chandler scandal went public, their answer was: “*we were just witnesses not victims*”. Keep in mind that Mark Quindoy was a lawyer in his country.

The Quindoys also tried to shop around a book deal. In their attempt to get publishers interested they claimed they had “secret witnesses” that they formerly withheld from the District Attorney.

It is unknown exactly how much money the media paid out for the slander of Michael Jackson but it is safe to say it is probably in the millions. Instead of reporting facts and uncovering the truth, a large segment of the media enabled false allegations by paying people to make up stories about Jackson, knowing full well that they were lies that they could potentially put Jackson behind bars for the rest of his life. A jury could have been prejudiced by such articles and influenced by the prosecution witnesses who created their allegations only after being paid by the media. These were not innocent white lies, Jackson’s life was deeply affected by the character assassination and the emotional distress they put him through, yet the media and much of their audience actually considered these stories “entertainment”.

In addition to paying people for false allegations, the media also did their part in misleading the public and many of them were biased in their reporting on the Jackson criminal proceedings. During Jackson’s 2005 trial much of the media reported the salacious claims of the prosecution witnesses while failing to report the cross-examination of those same witnesses, where they were totally discredited. Although the payments for false allegations were mainly offered by tabloids, in the reporting of the Jackson trial there was hardly any difference between the tabloids and the media that considers itself “serious”. Additionally the “serious media” often used, and still continues to use, tabloids as sources about Michael Jackson, thus blurring the line between tabloid journalism and serious reporting.

Sources:

[1] Roger Friedman – Former Protégé Vouches for Jacko (FoxNews.com, April 7, 2005)
<http://www.foxnews.com/story/0,2933,152708,00.html>

[2] Lisa Campbell – The King of Pop’s Darkest Hour (Branden Publishing Company Inc., Boston, 1994)

[3] Jennifer Vineyard – Jackson Camp Calls New Allegations A Smear Campaign (MTV.com, June 1, 2004)
<http://www.mtv.com/news/articles/1488069/new-jackson-allegations-called-malicious.jhtml>

The Michael Jackson Allegations

- [4] Press release by the Los Angeles Police Department (June 2, 2004)
http://www.lapdonline.org/press_releases/2004/06/pr04305.htm - the original link is not active any more, for a secondary source see <http://vindicatemj.files.wordpress.com/2012/01/police-release-on-kapons-case-june-2-2004.png>
- [5] Mozart an Idiot! (OCweekly.com, January 12, 2006)
<http://www.ocweekly.com/2006-01-12/music/mozart-an-idiot/>
- [6] Carole Aye Maung – Jacko filmed as he abused me; News Of the World investigates (News of the World, May 30, 2004)
- [7] Lawsuit accusing Michael Jackson of molestation is dismissed (The Daily Breeze, January 15, 2008)
http://www.dailybreeze.com/ci_7969754
- [8] Judge: Jackson in California during claim (USA Today, April 18, 2006)
http://www.usatoday.com/life/people/2006-04-18-jackson-follow-up_x.htm?csp=34
- [9] New Jackson Accuser's Stalk Rap (The Smoking Gun, November 10, 2004)
<http://www.thesmokinggun.com/documents/crime/new-jackson-accusers-stalk-rap>
- [10] Tabloid articles of Terry George from 1993 attached to Jackson's FBI files as released in 2009
<http://vault.fbi.gov/Michael%20Jackson/Michael%20Jackson%2062%20File%20Part%201%20of%203/view>
(page 3)
- [11] Interview with Terry George from the documentary "Louis, Martin & Michael" (documentary by Louis Theroux, November 16, 2003)
- [12] First target of Michael Jackson's obsession with boys says: 'What he did was wrong.. but I forgive him' (Mirror, June 28, 2009)
<http://www.mirror.co.uk/3am/celebrity-news/first-target-of-michael-jacksons-obsession-402845>
- [13] Mary A. Fischer: Was Michael Jackson Framed? (GQ, October 1994)
<http://www.buttonmonkey.com/misc/maryfischer.html>
- [14] Tabloid Truth - The Michael Jackson Scandal (documentary by Frontline, February 1994)

The 2005 Allegations

Key players

Michael Jackson - The accused.

Gavin Arvizo – The accuser.

Star Arvizo – The accuser’s younger brother.

Janet Arvizo – The accuser’s mother.

Davellin Arvizo – The accuser’s older sister.

Thomas Mesereau – Lead attorney for Michael Jackson during the case.

Susan Yu – Attorney for Michael Jackson.

Robert Sanger – Attorney for Michael Jackson.

Thomas Sneddon – Santa Barbara District Attorney. Lead prosecutor in the case.

Ronald Zonen - Prosecutor.

Gordon Auchincloss - Prosecutor.

Martin Bashir - British journalist and television host. In 2003 he made the controversial documentary *Living with Michael Jackson* that started the spiral that eventually resulted in the Arvizos’ allegations.

William Dickerman – The civil attorney the Arvizos first went to during the formation of their allegations.

Larry Feldman – The second civil attorney the Arvizos went to during the formation of their allegations. Feldman is the same attorney who represented the Chandlers in 1993 and who negotiated the settlement for them.

Frank Cascio (also known as Frank Tyson) – Michael Jackson’s friend and personal assistant. Named by the prosecution as an unindicted co-conspirator.

The Timeline

On November 18, 2003 an arrest warrant was issued for Michael Jackson based on the allegations of a 13-year-old boy, Gavin Arvizo that Jackson had sexually molested him in February-March, 2003. The case resulted in a criminal trial in 2005 where Jackson was found not guilty on all counts. Before discussing the case in detail I start with the presentation of a timeline that outlines the main events that took place between 2000, when Jackson first met his later accuser, and the 2005 acquittal.

June 2000 – A then 10-year-old boy Gavin Arvizo becomes ill with a rare type of cancer. His doctors remove one of his kidneys and spleen and begin chemotherapy. While at the hospital, Gavin asks comedian Jamie Masada, who regularly visits him and whom he knows from the Laugh Factory where he attended comedy classes before his illness, to help him meet certain celebrities and one day he asks to meet Michael Jackson. Masada testified at Jackson's trial in 2005 that he did not personally know Michael Jackson, but he managed to contact his people and tell them about Gavin's request. Jackson called the boy in the hospital and they talked for about five minutes, according to Gavin's testimony in 2005. During the conversation Jackson invited Gavin and his family to his Neverland Ranch. According to Gavin's 2005 testimony, Jackson called him about 20 other times during his illness – sometimes in the hospital, sometimes in his grandmother's home where Gavin lived at the time in a sterile room.

August 2000 – The Arvizos meet Michael Jackson in person for the first time when after the first round of Gavin's chemotherapy the Arvizo family visits Neverland. The family at the time consisted of Gavin, his older sister Davellin, his one year younger brother Star, their mother Janet Arvizo and their father David Arvizo.

On that first visit Gavin and Star ask to sleep in Jackson's bedroom. This is the night that is referenced in the 2003 Martin Bashir documentary entitled *Living with Michael Jackson* that caused big public uproar, even though both Gavin and Jackson made it clear that while the kids slept on the bed, Jackson slept on the floor. What is not mentioned in the documentary is the fact that not only Jackson did not sleep in the same bed as Gavin and Star, but he also insisted on his personal assistant Frank Cascio to sleep in the room as well. The Arvizos do not claim molestation occurring that night. For details see the chapter [An introduction of the Arvizo family and how their relationship with Michael Jackson started](#).

August 2000 – September 2002 – After the first personal encounter with the Arvizos in August 2000 there is not much contact between Gavin and Jackson until the shooting of the Martin Bashir documentary about two years later in September 2002. According to Gavin's own testimony, they were allowed to go to Neverland and they did at least 7-10 times during that period, but most of the time Jackson was not there and when he was, he actively avoided them. While Jackson personally kept his distance from the Arvizo family, but he still did things to help them. In **October 2000** he gave the family a white van as a gift. He also allowed the Arvizos to use Neverland for a blood drive for Gavin and his employees donated

The Michael Jackson Allegations

blood. For details see the chapter [An introduction of the Arvizo family and how their relationship with Michael Jackson started.](#)

May 2001 – Gavin’s father and mother David and Janet Arvizo separate – according to Janet Arvizo’s 2005 testimony, because David physically abused her and the children.

The Summer of 2001 - Both the laptop and the van Jackson had given the Arvizos the previous year break down and the family sends them back to Jackson to have them repaired. According to the Arvizos, they never see any of the items again.

September 24, 2001 – The Arvizo family reaches an out of court settlement with the J. C. Penney department store. The subject of the case is an allegation by the Arvizo family that in 1998 J.C. Penney guards beat up Janet, David, Gavin and Star Arvizo in a parking lot and they sexually abused Janet Arvizo. The guards followed the family in the parking lot because Gavin was caught stealing two school uniforms and two school uniform pants. The Arvizos then managed to turn it around into a physical and sexual abuse lawsuit against the J. C. Penney guards. At Jackson’s 2005 trial evidence and testimony showed that the family lied under oath in that case.

The Spring of 2002 - The Arvizos spend a few days at Neverland with the actor Chris Tucker to celebrate the birthday of latter’s infant son. Jackson is not present.

September, 2002 – British journalist and television host Martin Bashir works on a documentary with Michael Jackson entitled *Living with Michael Jackson*. During the creation of that documentary Bashir suggested to Jackson that in the film he could show the public how the singer helped children with serious illnesses. As one of the possible options, Jackson invites the Arvizo children to Neverland who then appear in the documentary. Bashir exploits Jackson’s poor judgement in public relations and portrays the relationship between Jackson and the boy in a false, misleading, manipulative way - a fact that even Gavin admitted in his testimony in 2005. After the shooting of the scene, the Arvizo children stayed at the ranch for one night, but Jackson immediately left after the segment and he was again unavailable to Gavin. For details see the chapter entitled [Martin Bashir’s documentary, “Living with Michael Jackson”.](#)

February 3 & 6, 2003 - Martin Bashir's *Living with Michael Jackson* documentary airs in the United Kingdom (February 3) and then in the USA (February 6).

February 5-6, 2003 – Trying to fight the negative publicity resulting from the Bashir documentary, Jackson’s team decides to hold a press conference in Miami on February 5 or 6, 2003. The press conference is eventually called off, but the Arvizos, looking for Jackson, travelled to Miami with actor Chris Tucker to meet the star again. Jackson and the Arvizos then return to Neverland on February 7-8. The family remains there, on and off, until March 12. For details see the chapter entitled [The crucial period: February 7-March 12, 2003.](#)

February 7-March 12, 2003 – According to the Arvizos’ initial timeline and story, during this period they were kept captive at Michael Jackson’s Neverland Ranch. However, evidence and testimonies show that during their alleged captivity the Arvizos went shopping several times, visited a lawyer, talked to Child Protective Services because of the Martin Bashir documentary and appeared in a Court regarding a child support debate with Janet Arvizo’s former husband, yet they never reported to authorities that they were allegedly

The Michael Jackson Allegations

being kidnapped and held against their will at Neverland. For details read the chapter entitled [**The Conspiracy Charge**](#).

Initially the Arvizos claimed that the molestation of Gavin by Jackson started as soon as they returned from Miami on February 7, 2003. However, after the emergence of evidence that made this claim hard to defend, their timeline changed and in the final version of their story the Arvizos claimed that the alleged molestations started after February 20, 2003. This was not just a minor correction, but it significantly changed the initial narrative of the Arvizos' story. For details read the chapter entitled [**The crucial period: February 7-March 12, 2003**](#).

March 24, 2003 - Janet Arvizo formally hires civil attorney William Dickerman. Dickerman begins writing letters to Jackson's attorney Mark Geragos on her behalf demanding the return of furniture, clothes, documents and various other items which were put in a storage locker after the Arvizos moved out of their Los Angeles apartment on March 1-2. There were numerous back and forth letters between the two attorneys about the issue of where and how the Arvizos would take possession of their belongings and who would pay the outstanding bill of the storage locker. In his letters Dickerman also claimed that Jackson's people harassed and followed around the Arvizo family after they had left Neverland. However, nowhere in his letters were there any claims of child molestation, claims of false imprisonment or claims of providing alcohol to a minor. For details see the chapter [**Lawyers being hired and the formation of the allegations**](#).

May, 2003 - William Dickerman refers the Arvizos to another civil lawyer, Larry Feldman, the same civil attorney who negotiated the \$15 million settlement for the Chandlers in 1993-94. According to the Arvizos' later story, at this time Gavin had not yet disclosed his alleged abuse to anyone, including his mother or Dickerman, so at this time there were no such allegations yet. Feldman and Dickerman enter into a fee-sharing agreement with each other. For details see the chapter [**Lawyers being hired and the formation of the allegations**](#).

June, 2003 - Larry Feldman sends Gavin to a psychologist, Dr. Stanley Katz. Katz was involved in the highly controversial McMartin case and also was the psychologist who evaluated Jackson's 1993 accuser Jordan Chandler. This is all before Gavin made allegations of sexual abuse against Jackson. According to the Arvizos' story, Gavin first made his allegations to Dr. Katz. According to Larry Feldman's testimony in 2005, he then disclosed Katz's findings to Gavin's mother Janet Arvizo. This contradicts the three other versions that the accusing side made about how Janet Arvizo supposedly found out about the alleged abuse of her son. For details see the chapter [**Lawyers being hired and the formation of the allegations**](#) and [**The Changing Content of the Allegations and Contradictions**](#).

June 13, 2003 - Larry Feldman reports Gavin's allegations to the Santa Barbara Sheriff's Office.

July-September, 2003 - Investigators conduct several interviews with Gavin, Star, Davellin and Janet Arvizo. These interviews contain several contradictions with each other, as well as with the later versions of the Arvizos' story. For details read the chapter entitled [**The Changing Content of the Allegations and Contradictions**](#).

November 18, 2003 - An arrest warrant is issued for Michael Jackson based on Gavin Arvizo's allegations. Jackson at the time was in Las Vegas, but at the news of his arrest he returned to California and turned himself in. He was then released on a 3 million dollar bail.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

The same day, in Jackson's absence, 70 sheriffs raided his home, the Neverland Ranch, to carry out a search warrant.

March-April, 2004 - A Grand Jury hears the prosecution's side of the story (without the defense being present and without the prosecution's witnesses being cross-examined) and indicts Jackson on **April 21, 2004**. The prosecution brought fourteen charges altogether: a conspiracy charge, four counts of lewd act upon a child (two reported by the accuser, two allegedly witnessed by his brother), one attempt at committing a lewd act upon a child, four counts of administering alcohol to assist in the commission of a felony and four misdemeanor charges as the lesser offence of supplying alcohol to the accuser without the intention of molesting him.

February 28-June 3, 2005 - Jackson's criminal trial.

June 13, 2005 - The Jury returns an unanimous Not Guilty verdict on all fourteen charges.

An introduction of the Arvizo family and how their relationship with Michael Jackson started



Star and Gavin Arvizo

Michael Jackson first met his later accuser Gavin Arvizo and the boy's family in the summer of 2000. At the time the then 10-year-old Gavin was in hospital with a rare type of cancer that affected his kidney and spleen. His doctors removed one of his kidneys and his spleen and began chemotherapy.

Gavin was a big fan of comedians and before his illness he went to comedy classes at the Laugh Factory which is a comedy club in

Hollywood owned by comedian Jamie Masada. In the club Gavin and his family made friends with several comedians such as Masada, George Lopez, Louise Palanker and Chris Tucker. When Gavin became ill, Masada visited him in the hospital several times. Gavin asked him to help him meet certain celebrities, and one day he asked to meet Michael Jackson.

Masada testified at Jackson's trial that he did not personally know Michael Jackson, but he somehow managed to contact his people and tell them about Gavin's request. Jackson called the boy in the hospital and they talked for about five minutes, according to Gavin's testimony in 2005. During the conversation Jackson invited Gavin and his family to his Neverland Ranch. According to Gavin's 2005 testimony, Jackson called him about 20 other times during his illness – sometimes in the hospital, sometimes in his grandmother's home where Gavin lived at the time in a sterile room.

After the first round of Gavin's chemotherapy, the Arvizo family went to Neverland in August 2000. The family at the time consisted of Gavin, his older sister Davellin, his one year younger brother Star, their mother Janet Arvizo and their father David Arvizo. They all went on that Neverland visit.



The Arvizo children's mother Janet Arvizo

The Michael Jackson Allegations

On that first visit Gavin and Star slept in Jackson's bedroom. This is the night that is referenced in the 2003 Martin Bashir documentary *Living with Michael Jackson* that caused big public uproar, even though both Gavin and Jackson made it clear that while the kids slept on the bed Jackson slept on the floor:

"Gavin: There was one night, I asked him if I could stay in his bedroom. He let me stay in the bedroom. And I was like, 'Michael you can sleep in the bed', and he was like 'No, no, you sleep on the bed', and I was like 'No, no, no, you sleep on the bed', and then he said 'Look, if you love me, you'll sleep in the bed'. I was like 'Oh mannnn?'" so I finally slept on the bed. But it was fun that night.

Jackson: I slept on the floor. Was it a sleeping bag?

Gavin: You packed the whole mess of blankets on the floor." [1]

(Emphasis added.)

What is not mentioned in the documentary is the fact that not only Jackson did not sleep in the same bed as Gavin and Star, but he also insisted on his personal assistant Frank Cascio (also known as Frank Tyson) to sleep in the room as well. Jackson's own children, 3-year-old Prince and 2-year-old Paris (his youngest child Blanket was not yet born) were there as well and slept on the bed with the Arvizo kids, while the two adult men, Jackson and Cascio, slept on the floor.

Cascio recalled the situation in his 2011 book entitled *My Friend Michael*:

"Then came the night when Gavin and his brother Star pleaded with Michael to allow them to sleep with him. 'Can we sleep in your room tonight? Can we sleep in your bed tonight?' the boys begged. 'My mother said it's okay, if it's okay with you,' Gavin added. Michael, who always had a hard time saying no to kids, replied, 'Sure, no problem.' But then he came to me. 'She's pushing her kids onto me,' he said, visibly concerned. He had a strange, uncomfortable feeling about it. 'Frank, they can't stay.'"

I went to the kids and said, 'Michael has to sleep. I'm sorry, you can't stay in his room.' Gavin and Star kept begging, I kept saying no, and then Janet [Arvizo – the mother] said to Michael, 'They really want to stay with you. It's okay with me.' Michael relented. He didn't want to let the kids down. His heart got in the way, but he was fully aware of the risk. He said to me, 'Frank, if they're staying in my room, you're staying with me. I don't trust this mother. She's fucked up.' I was totally against it, but I said, 'All right. We do what we have to do.' Having me there as a witness would safeguard Michael against any shady ideas that the Arvizos might have been harboring. Or so we were both naive enough to think." [2]

The fact that Jackson's children and Cascio were in the room as well was not disputed by the Arvizos in Court in 2005, nor did they claim any molestation or attempt at molestation occurring that night. They claimed the acts of molestation happened almost three years later, in February-March 2003, **AFTER** the Bashir documentary aired and **WHILE** Santa Barbara

The Michael Jackson Allegations

authorities and child protective services were investigating Jackson because of the Bashir documentary. I will discuss this timeline later in this document.

There was one disputed element of that night, though. In Court in 2005 the Arvizos accused Jackson and Cascio of showing them adult heterosexual pornography on a laptop computer that Jackson gave to Gavin as a gift that day. Both Jackson and Cascio denied showing any such material to the children. I will address this allegation in the later chapter entitled [The Changing Content of the Allegations and Contradictions](#).

According to Gavin's own testimony, after this one occasion at Neverland he and his family did not have much contact with Jackson until the fall of 2002 when they were called back for the Bashir documentary. They were allowed to go to Neverland and they did at least 7-10 times during that period, but most of the time Jackson was not there and when he was, he actively avoided the Arvizos. From Gavin's direct examination at Jackson's 2005 trial:

Q. And on those occasions when Mr. Jackson was on the ranch, did you have any contact with him ?

A. Those two occasions, yeah. But, I mean, like, sometimes I would go up to the ranch and he would say that he's not there, and then he would be there .

Q. What do you mean by that?

A. Like, when I would have cancer. I don't know what happened, but Michael, like, kind of stopped talking to me and stuff, right in the middle of my cancer. And, like, I would go up there, and I would see, like, Prince and Paris playing there, and I would think that Michael was there, and they would tell me that Michael wasn't there. And then, like, I would see him somewhere, and — I don't know.

Q. Was there one occasion when you actually ran into him by accident?

A. Yeah.

Q. Tell the jury about that.

A. Well, I was playing with Prince and Paris outside, like in the back of the house near where the arcade was. And then we were walking into the — into the main house. And I knew the code, because they would give me the codes. And then I walked in the door with Prince in my hand and Paris in my other hand, and — we were holding hands. And then we walked into the house and there I saw Michael walking, like, toward me. But I guess he didn't see me turn the corner. And then he acted as if, "Oh, crap," you know what I mean? Like, he saw me. And then — then he just played it off and, like, acted like, "Oh, hi, Doo-Doo Head." You know, at the time I — I was kind of hypnotized and, like, he 's my —

MR. MESEREAU: Objection; calls for a narrative and non responsive.

THE COURT : Sustained .

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Q. BY MR. SNEDDON : Okay.

A. And then, like –

Q. That's all right. I'll give you a question. So in any case, you bumped into him?

A. Yeah. And I was — because of –

Q. That's okay. How much more contact did you have with him on that time when you bumped into him? How much time did the contact last?

A. I didn't really see him through my cancer a lot.

Q. I mean, you told the ladies and gentlemen of the jury there was an occasion where you were there when you kind of bumped into him by accident?

A. Yeah.

Q. When you actually made contact with him – okay? – how long did that last? Just — how long was the conversation between the two of you?

A. Maybe, like , five minutes. When — that time we bumped into each other, and then we just talked about — and stuff, and he said he had to go somewhere. [3]

On cross-examination by Jackson's attorney Thomas Meserau, Gavin again complained about Jackson avoiding him and said that no other celebrity he befriended ever did that to him.

Q. Can you look this jury in eye and tell them Michael Jackson did nothing for you when you had cancer?

A. I never said Michael did nothing for me.

Q. Did you say he did very little?

A. Yeah. He didn't do as much as I felt, as my 11-year-old mind felt.

Q. He should.

A. No. He shouldn't — it's not his obligation to do anything.

Q. Well, are you telling the jury you deserved a lot more from Michael Jackson than you and your family got?

A. No.

Q. Is that what you're saying?

The Michael Jackson Allegations

A. No. I'm just saying that — see, when I have a friend, Michael, and you're saying all these things that he did, but, you know, when my 11-year-old mind — and when I see my friend say that he's not there, and he's not at Neverland Ranch trying — and I see him walking and I see his car that he only drives going down at Neverland, you know, it felt like my heart broke right there.

Q. So by doing all of these things —

A. And I don't remember George Lopez or Jamie Masada or Louise Palanker ever doing that to me. [4]

Gavin also complained on the stand that Jackson changed his phone numbers and became unavailable to them.

Q. And at some point you complained to the sheriffs that Mr. Jackson had changed his phone numbers after you visited the Hilton, right?

A. Well, that was the only phone number I left — or I called — well, I'm not sure. Because the only phone number that never changed was Evvy's [Evvy Tavasci — Jackson's secretary at the time] phone number. And I would call her and I would ask her sometimes where Michael was or something. And then — and I had the phone number to his hotel, so I think I called him at his hotel and asked him if I could go visit him. I think it was around — I'm not sure when exactly.

Q. When did you first get upset about your phone numbers for Michael Jackson not working?

A. Maybe around the third or fourth chemotherapy round I called his numbers and it would be, like, "This phone number is no longer in service." Or sometimes it would just ring and it wouldn't never — no one would ever pick up or something like that.

Q. Well, you've indicated that you were upset that the phone numbers you had for Mr. Jackson at some point didn't work, right?

A. Yes.

Q. And the phone numbers you had for Mr. Jackson began to not work after it appeared that your cancer was in remission, correct?

A. No, I said they stopped working after my third or fourth chemotherapy round.

Q. Okay. Before that, could you easily call him?

A. Yes.

Q. And before that, did you often call him?

The Michael Jackson Allegations

A. Yes. And he would call me and stuff. We would talk — we talked a lot more before then.

Q. In fact, you called him at the Universal — Hilton Universal the day you visited, right?

A. I believe so. I'm not too sure how it came about. [5]

and

Q. And you were lying about Mr. Jackson helping you with cancer; is that correct.

A. No, because Michael did help me a little bit, but, I mean, he — for me, what I felt as a little kid, I mean, besides the fact of all this money and who paid for this and who paid for that, who — I felt who really helped me was my other friends. Because Michael, at the time when he was calling me and talking to me and stuff, I felt like he was my best friend. But, I mean, when he — when I would call his phone numbers and a little operating lady would say, “This phone is no longer in service.” I mean, I never called Chris [Tucker] and his phone was never in service. I never called George [Lopez] and his phone wasn't in service. [5]

and

Q. Okay. Now, you complained to the Santa Barbara Sheriffs that, “After I was done with my cancer stuff,” you never saw Michael again, right?

A. No, not until the Martin Bashir thing.

Q. Okay. And you wanted to see him after you were in remission, correct?

A. Yes.

Q. You wanted to visit Neverland after you were in remission, right?

A. Yes.

Q. And you felt in some way that Michael had cut off the friendship, right?

A. Yes.

Q. You felt he had abandoned you, right?

A. Yes.

Q. And you felt he had abandoned your family, right?

A. Yes. [5]

To not to lose contact with Jackson, the Arvizo family started to bombard him with nice letters and cards.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Q. And approximately when do you think he wasn't talking to you anymore?

A. Two months into my cancer.

Q. Excuse me?

A. Two months into my chemotherapy.

Q. Approximately when would that be?

A. August or September of 2000.

Q. Okay. So August or September of 2000, you and your family started sending nice letters and cards to Michael Jackson, correct?

A. Yes.

Q. And those are the letters and cards that I showed you a little while ago, right?

A. Yes.

Q. And it was your understanding your mother used to send him cards and letters as well, right?

A. I think so.

Q. And she used to refer to him as "daddy," didn't she.

A. I don't think she referred to him as "daddy."

Q. You never heard her say that once.

A. Well, toward me, me saying that. Because, I mean, my dad had left. And I started calling him "daddy" after my dad left because I didn't have a dad.

Q. And your mother approved of that, correct.

A. Yeah. [5]

So after the Arvizo family's visit at Neverland in August 2000, when Gavin and Star wanted to sleep in his bedroom, Jackson personally kept his distance from the family, but he still did things to help them. In October 2000 Jackson gave the family a white van as a gift. He also allowed the Arvizos to use Neverland for a blood drive for Gavin and all his employees donated blood.

In May 2001 Gavin's father and mother David and Janet Arvizo separated – according to Janet Arvizo's 2005 testimony, because David physically abused her and the children.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

In the Summer of 2001 both the laptop and the van that Jackson had given the Arvizos the previous year broke down and the family sent them back to Jackson to have them repaired. According to the Arvizos, they never saw any of the items again.

On September 24, 2001 the Arvizo family reached an out of court settlement with the J. C. Penney department store. The subject of the case was an allegation by the Arvizo family that in 1998 J.C. Penney guards beat up Janet, David, Gavin and Star Arvizo in a parking lot and they sexually abused Janet Arvizo. The guards followed the family in the parking lot because Gavin was caught stealing two school uniforms and two school uniform pants. The Arvizos then managed to turn it around into a physical and sexual abuse lawsuit against the J. C. Penney guards. At Jackson's 2005 trial evidence and testimony showed that the family lied under oath in depositions in that case. The details of that case will be discussed later in this document.

In the Spring of 2002 the Arvizos spent a few days at Neverland with the actor Chris Tucker to celebrate the birthday of latter's infant son. Jackson was not present.

Sources:

[1] Martin Bashir – Living with Michael Jackson documentary (February 2003)

[2] Frank Cascio – My Friend Michael: An Ordinary Friendship with an Extraordinary Man (William Morrow, November 15, 2011)

[3] Gavin Arvizo's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (March 9, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[4] Gavin Arvizo's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (March 10, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[5] Gavin Arvizo's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (March 14, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

Martin Bashir's documentary, "Living with Michael Jackson"

In the Summer-Autumn of 2002 British journalist and television host *Martin Bashir* worked on a documentary with Michael Jackson entitled *Living with Michael Jackson*. During the creation of that documentary, Bashir suggested to Jackson that in the film the singer could show the public how he helped children with serious illnesses. Jackson presented Bashir with two examples: the story of *David Rothenberg* ("Dave Dave") who was badly burned by his father when he was a child in the 1980s. Jackson took it upon himself to help Rothenberg throughout his life. Rothenberg himself talked about it on CNN's *Larry King Live* in September of 2009 [1].

The other option offered was the cancer survivor Gavin Arvizo. By 2002 Rothenberg was an adult and Bashir chose to go with the still 13-year-old Gavin instead, so they invited him and his siblings, Star and Davellin to the set – even though Rothenberg was present as well, according to Gavin's testimony in 2005.

Q. Okay. Did you ever meet this person who was burned?

A. Yeah, I think Michael introduced me to him.

Q. And when was this?

A. Around the same time as the Martin Bashir thing.

Q. Was it at Neverland?

A. Yes.

Q. Did you talk to this person?

A. Yes.

Q. Do you remember the person's name?

A. I think his name might have been David.

Q. Was it Rothenberg?

A. I don't know.

Q. Was this a young man that you learned his father had poured gasoline on him and set him on fire?.

A. I don't know.

Q. Okay.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

A. I think that's what happened.

Q. And he was supposed to be in the film with you, right?

A. Yes.

Q. Okay. And correct me if I'm wrong, you discussed with Michael the fact that Michael had helped this young boy, right?

A. Yes.

Q. Okay. Did you talk to this young boy about what he had experienced?

A. No.

Q. Okay. Did you ever see him?

A. Yes.

Q. And please describe for the jury what he looked like.

A. He looked like he was really badly burned and he had like — he was like a rocker. He was wearing, like, rocker stuff. And he was burned. And he had like only a few hairs on his head because I guess it covered all the pores when he was burned.

Q. Did you and he appear in the film, if you know?

A. Later I watched it, and then — well, I watched my part, and then I don't think he was in there.

Q. Okay. But was he at Neverland the day you were filmed?

A. Yes.

Q. Okay. Did you meet him shortly after you arrived?

A. Yes. [2]

The shooting of the scene with Gavin and his two siblings took place in September 2002. Janet Arvizo later said that she was not aware at the time that her children would appear in the documentary.

Jackson trusted that Bashir had no hidden agenda in how he presented his relationship with Gavin and out of naivety and guilelessness allowed himself to be filmed showing affection to Gavin and holding his hand while the boy leaned his head on his shoulder. Bashir exploited Jackson's poor judgement in public relations and drew him into a discussion of whether it was acceptable to share a bedroom with a child.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

When the documentary aired in February 2003 this segment caused a storm of bad publicity for Jackson and wild speculations about the nature of his relationship with Gavin Arvizo. In reality, as you have seen above, there was no close relationship between Jackson and Gavin, and since 2000 they hardly even met.

Throughout the documentary Bashir uses suggestive and highly manipulative narration and it seems that his intention from the beginning was to create and feed in innuendo about Jackson's relationship with children. Even Gavin admitted in his 2005 testimony that Bashir's portrayal of Jackson in the documentary was false. After the shooting of the scene the Arvizo children stayed at the ranch for one night, but Jackson immediately left after the segment and he was again unavailable to Gavin.

Q. At that point, could you reach Michael Jackson by telephone if you wanted to?

A. No, after the Martin Bashir thing, he didn't give me any phone numbers, because he left, like, either the same day or the day after the Martin Bashir interview, and I didn't really get any other phone numbers. [2]

Sources:

[1] Larry King Live - Dave Dave: Michael Jackson Was Like A Father To Me (CNN, September 3, 2009)
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=En5Q4syywcw>

[2] Gavin Arvizo's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (March 14, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

The fallout resulting from the Bashir documentary and damage control by Jackson's PR team

The Arvizos had not met Jackson again until after the Bashir documentary aired in the United Kingdom on February 3, 2003 and then in the USA on February 6, 2003. As a result of the documentary, the media went into a frenzy, the 1993 allegations against Jackson were rehashed in articles and talk shows. On February 6 someone illegally leaked Jordan Chandler's 1993 declaration to the media to further antagonize the public against Jackson. The media also tried to "hunt down" the Arvizo family.

Jackson's team tried to fight this negative publicity and decided to hold a press conference in Miami on February 5 or 6, 2003. The press conference eventually was called off. At the same time the Arvizos were trying to get away from the media and trying to find Jackson. They called the actor Chris Tucker who was just planning to visit his brother in Miami, and he offered the Arvizo family to charter an airplane and take them with him to Miami to meet Jackson again. Jackson and the Arvizos then returned to Neverland together on February 7-8.

In the hindsight, while making their allegations the Arvizos claimed that on the way back to Los Angeles from Miami on February 7 on the airplane they witnessed Jackson lick the head of a sleeping Gavin [1] [2]. Despite of the fact that many people were on the plane the only two people who have ever claimed to have witnessed this alleged scene were Star and Janet Arvizo. Although this whole alleged scene lasted for only six seconds, Janet Arvizo got up from her seat to go to the restroom exactly at the right moment to witness it – according to their story [2]. Oddly, Janet Arvizo never confronted Jackson about what she had allegedly witnessed, nor did she ever ask her sons about it [2]. Supposedly she just kept it to herself and the first time she ever mentioned it to anyone was when the family first started to make child molestation allegations against Jackson later in 2003-2004.

Sources:

[1] Star Arvizo's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (March 7, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[2] Janet Arvizo's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (April 13, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

The crucial period: February 7-March 12, 2003

In the hindsight, when they made their allegations, the Arvizos claimed that during this period, February 7-March 12, 2003, they were kept captive at Neverland against their will. During their alleged captivity the Arvizos went shopping several times, visited a lawyer, talked to Child Protective Services because of the Martin Bashir documentary and appeared in a Court regarding a child support debate with Janet Arvizo's former husband, yet they never reported to authorities that they were allegedly being kidnapped and held against their will at Neverland. The Arvizo's claim was that Jackson supposedly kept them captive to force them to participate in the so called "rebuttal video". This allegation is what the conspiracy charge deals with and it will be discussed in detail in the next chapter entitled [The Conspiracy Charge](#).

Jackson's team was trying to do damage control regarding the Bashir documentary and they were working on a so called "rebuttal video" which was released on February 20, 2003 under the title *Michael Jackson, Take Two: The Footage You Were Never Meant To See*. This documentary features interviewes with people and footage made by Jackson's own cameraman, *Hamid Moslehi* during the shooting of the Bashir documentary and it features material that Bashir deliberately omitted from his documentary and that shows his manipulation of Jackson and of his viewers.

Initially the Arvizos would have been featured in that "Take Two" documentary (or as it was called in Court, "the rebuttal video"), but at the end their segment was not included. However, the footage with the Arvizo family was made for the documentary. It was shot early in the morning of February 20, 2003 and later found by the prosecution when they searched Moslehi's home during the Jackson investigation. As a result the Arvizos changed their initial timeline of the allegations.

Initially the Arvizos claimed that the molestation started as soon as they returned from Miami with Jackson, on February 7, 2003. This is also represented in the prosecution's initial felony complaint, filed on December 18, 2003 [1]. The Arvizos' segment of the "rebuttal video" however was shot on February 20. The videos of it can be found on YouTube:



The Arvizo family during the shooting of the so called "rebuttal video" on February 20, 2003

Part 1:

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=Bez7QCXJJV4>

Part 2:

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=xUIDSoPzLLs>

In the videos they are seen laughing and joking, happily praising Michael Jackson.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

They also express their displeasure with Martin Bashir. When they made their allegations initially they claimed that they were under duress, but behind the scenes footage showed them not only laughing and joking, but making suggestions themselves about what they wanted to do on film and in the second video they are even seen being surprised that they were on camera while making those suggestions. They certainly do not seem to be forced or under duress by any means.

The resulting timeline change was not just a minor correction. It significantly changed the narrative of the Arvizos' initial story.

On February 20, the same day as the Arvizos' segment for the "rebuttal video" was shot they also got a visit from the Los Angeles Department of Children and Family Services (DCFS, also mentioned as Child Protective Services – CPS). They interviewed the Arvizo family because a teacher from Gavin's school filed a complaint over the claim in the Bashir documentary that Gavin had slept in Jackson's bed. Again, the Arvizos said nothing but positive things about Jackson. They denied molestation and never claimed that they had been supposedly "kidnapped" or held against their will. In actuality, this meeting with the DCFS took place at *Major Jay Jackson's* (an army officer, no relation to Michael Jackson) home who was Janet Arvizo's boyfriend at the time and later her husband.

To explain why they did not tell anything negative about Michael Jackson to the DCFS the Arvizos had several versions of their story: initially they claimed it was because Jackson and his people intimidated them. According to the prosecution's Statement of Probable Cause (November 17, 2003) document on August 13, 2003, Gavin told them:

"Gavin was asked why he did not disclose anything to the CPS people. He said by then they were really afraid of Frank (Cascio) and Michael." [2; page 60]

His brother Star too claimed on the same day that the reason why they had not disclosed anything to the DCFS was intimidation by Jackson and his people:

"When asked during the CPS interview why he did not disclose anything about what was going on with Michael's people and Michael himself, Star replied that Michael had scared them by threatening them that he was going to kill them. He then clarified that it was not Michael that actually made the threat, but "Michael's people." He was asked if he was personally threatened or if he heard a threat, and he said yes. Frank told him that if Star didn't protect Michael, something bad would happen to the family.

*The threat was made at the snack area of the theatre at Neverland. He was the only one there at the moment. Frank made another threat a couple days before the CPS meeting. Star was asked if Frank knew that they would be meeting with the ladies from the Child Welfare Services, and he said yes. **When Star was asked why he thought Frank had made that threat, he said, "Because he already knew what Michael did to us." If they had told the truth, Michael would have gone to jail.** " [2; page 51-52]*

and

The Michael Jackson Allegations

“He is sure he did not say anything bad about Michael (to the CPS), because he was scared.” [2; page 52]

(Emphasis added.)

This is, however, totally contradictory with the later version of the Arvizos’ story, in which they claimed that the molestation started happening only **AFTER** the DCFS’s visit and that is why they did not disclose anything to them. In actuality, in 2005 in Court Gavin testified – according to the latest version of their story – that on February 20, when they shot the “rebuttal video” and when they were interviewed by the DCFS, they still considered Jackson to be a good person and they had no problem praising him.

Under cross-examination by Jackson’s lawyer Thomas Mesereau, the boy stated that most of the things that they said in the “rebuttal video” reflected their true feelings about the entertainer at the time. He talked about some lies that they told – allegedly at the request of one of Jackson’s people, *Dieter Wiesner* – but these were only exaggerations about how much Jackson was really there for him during his cancer or how much part he really played in his healing. However, on contrary with his and his brother’s earlier statements to the police, on the stand Gavin clearly stated that when they made the “rebuttal video” they still felt that Jackson was a great person. Gavin also said that he had a good time at Neverland (*“I liked being there.”*[3], *“I was actually happy to be at Neverland all the time.”*[4]) and did not give the impression they were afraid of anything there.

So in the new version of their story, and this was the version they presented in Court, the Arvizos did not tell the DCFS simply because no molestation had happened yet on February 20 and not because they were intimidated by Jackson and/or his people, as they initially claimed.

It was not only the DCFS that started an investigation against Jackson because of the Bashir documentary. The Santa Barbara County Sheriff’s Department too launched an investigation in February 2003 based on a complaint by psychiatrist Carol Lieberman – again, because of the Bashir documentary. That investigation continued until April 2003.

(Dr. Lieberman is the same psychiatrist who together with attorney and TV personality Gloria Allred also filed a complaint against Jackson for the so called “baby dangling incident” and campaigned for Jackson’s children to be taken away from him. Then later in 2003 Allred represented a 18-year-old young man, Daniel Kapon, who claimed he had been sexually molested by Michael Jackson when he was a child. Kapon claimed he had “repressed memories” of the molestation and therefore only recently recalled the abuse. It was Dr. Lieberman who “helped” bring forth his “repressed memories”. During an investigation into the matter by the Santa Barbara Police Department it emerged that in reality Kapon never even met Jackson. Kapon was discussed in detail in the earlier chapter entitled [**The Media’s Role In The Allegations Against Michael Jackson.**](#))

After the change in their timeline the Arvizos claimed that Jackson had molested Gavin between February 20 and March 12, 2003 [5]. So the story that the Arvizos eventually ended up with because of the forced timeline change was that Michael Jackson had started molesting Gavin Arvizo **WHILE** all this was already ongoing: a public outrage because of the Bashir documentary, as a result of that documentary innuendo and allegations in the media about Jackson’s relationship with children, and specifically Gavin Arvizo, a high

The Michael Jackson Allegations

media interest, tabloids trying to “hunt down” the Arvizo family, a DCFS investigation, another investigation by the Santa Barbara County Sheriff’s Department, Jackson’s PR and legal team working overtime on damage control because of the public relations backlash resulting from the Bashir documentary and its innuendo. To believe the Arvizos’ story you have to believe that all **WHILE** this was happening Jackson suddenly started molesting Gavin Arvizo, even though for three years he had not touched him and not even trusted him and his family. You also have to believe that even though he had not molested Gavin until all these investigations by the DCFS and the Santa Barbara County Sheriff’s Department began, he started molesting him **WHILE** these investigations were ongoing. This is exactly the story that the Arvizo family ended up with after they were forced to change their initial timeline because of the discovery of the so called “rebuttal tape”.

It is also worth considering some other information that came out during the trial about that February 20-March 12, 2003 period that showed that even during that period Jackson and the Arvizos hardly stayed at the same place in the same time. We know that between February 25 and March 2 the Arvizos were not at Neverland but stayed in a hotel in Calabasas. Moreover phone logs presented by the prosecution towards the end of the presentation of their side of the case inadvertently revealed that in early March Jackson stayed a few days at the Beverly Hilton hotel using the pseudonym Kenneth Morgan (as celebrities often use pseudonyms to avoid attention). From the logs it appears he was there at least on March 7-8, but possibly also on March 6, while the Arvizos were at Neverland. Based on the phone logs it also appears that on February 20 Jackson was at the Turnberry Isle Resort in Miami, Florida. [6] The testimony of Azja Pryor (actor Chris Tucker’s girlfriend at the time) confirmed that Jackson was not at Neverland on February 20. [7]

Sources:

[1] The Prosecution’s original felony complaint (filed on December 18, 2003)
https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/121803complaint_initial-charges.pdf

[2] Statement of Probable Cause (filed by the Prosecution on November 17, 2003)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/plugin-111703stmtpc.pdf>

[3] Gavin Arvizo’s testimony at Michael Jackson’s 2005 trial (March 14, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[4] Gavin Arvizo’s testimony at Michael Jackson’s 2005 trial (March 15, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[5] Opening statements at Michael Jackson’s 2005 trial (February 28, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[6] Detective Craig Bonner's testimony at Michael Jackson’s 2005 trial (May 2, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[7] Azja Pryor’s testimony at Michael Jackson’s 2005 trial (May 19, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

The Conspiracy Charge

The conspiracy charge was one of the charges brought against Michael Jackson in 2005. The prosecution's initial felony complaint in December 2003 [1] did not include this charge, it was later added, after the Grand Jury hearings, and this addition is related to the problem of explaining the timeline of the allegations.

Like discussed in detail in the previous chapter, the Arvizos initially claimed that Jackson had started molesting Gavin as soon as they had returned from Miami with Jackson, on February 7, 2003. This claim however later changed to the claim that Jackson started molesting Gavin after February 20 – so after the Arvizo family gave an interview to the Los Angeles County Department of Child and Family Services and after the taping of a video on which the Arvizos are seen happily praising Jackson.

The conspiracy charge claimed that between February 1 and March 31, 2003 Jackson conspired with Ronald Konitzer, Dieter Wiesner, Frank Cascio, Vinnie Amen, Marc Schaffel and other unnamed co-conspirators to abduct Gavin Arvizo and to falsely imprison the Arvizo family. Even though the charge names five alleged co-conspirators the prosecution did not indict any of them, their only target was Michael Jackson. So these people remained “unindicted co-conspirators” throughout the process. This meant that these five potentially important defense witnesses were discouraged from testifying for the defense under the threat of retaliatory prosecution against them if they do.

According to prosecution theory, the reason for this alleged abduction and false imprisonment was to force the Arvizo family to participate in the so called “rebuttal” video. However, as shown in the previous chapter, the Arvizo family did not seem to be under duress at all while they were shooting the rebuttal video. In actuality, in 2005 in Court Gavin testified that on February 20, when they shot the “rebuttal video” and when they were interviewed by the DCFS, they still considered Jackson to be a good person and they had no problem praising him. His mother Janet Arvizo also testified that she was willing to say positive things about Jackson on camera in the rebuttal video:

Q. Were you willing to say something at that time that was positive –

A. Yes.

Q. — about Michael Jackson?

A. I was.

Q. At that time, did you have anything to say about Michael Jackson that was negative?

A. No.

Q. Did you tell him you'd be willing to do that?

A. Yes. [2]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

This makes the conspiracy allegation confusing. Why would Jackson need to abduct and falsely imprison a family to do a rebuttal tape (that eventually was not even included in the finished documentary) when they were freely willing to participate in it and willing to say positive things about him anyway?

The Arvizo family claimed in their conspiracy allegation that they escaped from their Neverland “captivity” three times. The first alleged “escape” happened shortly after they returned from Miami on February 7. One night Janet Arvizo asked Jackson’s ranch manager, Jesus Salas to take them home to Los Angeles, which he did. Moreover according to Janet Arvizo’s own claims in her police interview on July 6-7, 2003, Marie Nicole Cascio assisted them in their “escape”:

“She described running in the dark through Neverland, being led by Marie Nicole, to find her way to the car. Mrs. Arvizo was unable to recall exact dates of events during this period. She stated that there were no clocks or calendars at Neverland and she would lose track of the date.” (page 25) [3]

Marie Nicole Cascio is the sister of Frank Cascio, one of the alleged “kidnappers”.

Janet Arvizo explained her “escaping” with the fact that she did not like two of Jackson’s people, Dieter Wiesner and Ronald Konitzer, whom she called “the Germans”, and felt intimidated by them. After Frank Cascio promised her that the Germans would not be at Neverland any more, she and her children returned. However, the Germans were still at Neverland, so Janet Arvizo “escaped” again, this time on her own, leaving her children behind, asking Jackson’s bodyguard, Chris Carter to take her to Jay Jackson’s house, which he did. Shortly after Janet Arvizo’s “escape” her children were taken home as well.



According to the Arvizo family, there were no clocks at Neverland...

Both of these alleged “escapes” happened within a couple of days after they returned from Miami on February 7. The third occasion that was characterized as an “escape” by Janet Arvizo was when the Arvizos left Neverland for good on March 12. Once again the “escape” was not met with resistance from Jackson’s people – in fact, Janet Arvizo just asked Vinnie Amen, Frank Cascio’s friend and closest colleague, one of the Arvizos’ alleged “kidnappers”, to take them to the home of Janet Arvizo’s parents and he did.

Jackson and his people apparently were suspicious of the Arvizos and of how they may use the media frenzy resulting from the Bashir documentary for their benefit. The media at this point tried to contact the Arvizos and Jackson already had experience with the practices of the tabloid media and what effect the temptation of tabloid money can have on people (for examples see the chapter [The Media’s Role In The Allegations Against Michael Jackson](#)). Please keep in mind that this is all before the alleged molestation of Gavin. The fact that Jackson did not trust this family from the beginning is apparent from the fact that he tried to keep his distance from them, as described by even Gavin himself in Court. For this reason

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Jackson's people did keep an eye on the Arvizo family, but there was no "imprisonment" or "kidnapping" as you will see below.

Gavin's mother Janet Arvizo also complained about Jackson's people keeping her away from the star during their stay at Neverland. The following exchange is from the testimony of Jesus Salas, a prosecution witness, who served as a housekeeper at Jackson's Neverland ranch. Prosecutor Gordon Auchincloss tried to get Salas say that Janet Arvizo complained about *her children* being kept away from her, but Salas made it clear that the woman did not complain about her children, *but about Jackson* being kept away from her:

Q. You also said that Janet complained about being separated from Michael, that Dieter was separating her from Michael. Yes?

A. Yes. That was her expression, yes.

Q. Didn't she say that she was — didn't she complain that Dieter was separating her from Michael Jackson and her children?

A. Not exactly what she said. She said that she was being separated from Michael.

Q. Okay. But didn't she reference her children when she was talking about that?

MR. MESEREAU: Objection; asked and answered.

THE COURT: Sustained.

Q. BY MR. AUCHINCLOSS: You say "not exactly." What do you mean?

A. She never mentioned the kids.

Q. Did she ever complain about being separated from her kids?

A. No, sir. [4]

There are further problems with the conspiracy charge. Receipts and testimonies showed that during their alleged captivity the Arvizos went shopping several times, talked to Child Protective Services because of the Bashir documentary, talked to doctors, visited a lawyer William Dickerman to stop the media from using the Arvizo children's likeness and photos, and appeared in a Court with another lawyer Michael Manning regarding a child support debate, yet they never reported to authorities, their lawyers, the doctors or to anyone that they were allegedly being kidnapped and held against their will at Neverland.

Here is a list of the Arvizo family's excursions during their alleged captivity between February 7 and March 12:

Receipts showed that on February 11 the mother, Janet Arvizo went to a beauty salon to get a leg wax. On the stand she claimed that this was the idea of Jackson's people, "the Germans"

The Michael Jackson Allegations

(Ronald Konitzer and Dieter Wiesner) as PR for Michael Jackson. During that trip she never mentioned being kept captive to anyone. [2]

Some time between February 12 and 15 first Janet Arvizo then her children too leave Neverland (characterized later as their second “escape”). They stay at the home of Janet Arvizo’s boyfriend, Major Jay Jackson. Jay Jackson was an army officer and had no relation to Michael Jackson. While staying at her boyfriend’s house for several days, neither Janet Arvizo or her boyfriend contacted authorities or anyone to report that they had allegedly been held captive at Neverland. In actuality recorded phone conversations showed that during this time Janet Arvizo was on the phone with Michael Jackson’s personal assistant Frank Cascio several times and the conversations were very friendly – Janet Arvizo even called Cascio’s family her family. From Janet Arvizo’s cross-examination at the 2005 trial:

Q. BY MR. MESEREAU: Now, you’re telling Frank that you love his family, correct?

A. Yes.

Q. You’re telling Frank that, in effect, “We’re all family,” right?

A. Yes. Because of Michael’s initial lovey-dovey meeting.

Q. Just please answer my question, Miss Arvizo. The prosecutor will then ask you whatever he wants. I just want direct answers to my questions, all right? Is that all right with you?

A. If you could simplify the questions, that would be easier for me.

Q. I will try to make them as clear as I can. And if you don’t understand, don’t answer me. Just ask me to try and restate it. Okay?

A. Okay. That’s fair enough.

Q. You told Frank Cascio in this conversation, “We’re all family,” true?

A. I said, “It’s like we’re family.” True.

Q. Did that mean in your mind that your family, Frank’s family, and Mr. Jackson’s family were all united?

A. Let me see. It says right here, “I love you so much. You don’t know how much I love your little sister and your little brother.” That’s what it said.

Q. And then later on, it says, “It’s like we’re family, you know, Frank?”

A. Yeah.

Q. Okay.

A. “Like we’re family.”

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Q. And when you said that you meant it, true?

A. Yes, I believed what he said in the initial meeting in Miami. [2]

On February 16 Bradley Miller, a private investigator working for Jackson's lawyer Mark Geragos conducted and tape recorded an interview with Janet Arvizo in Jay Jackson's home. On the tape Janet Arvizo does not mention she or her children being "kidnapped" or being held captive by either Jackson or his people, nor any other wrongdoing by Jackson. In fact she says nothing but nice things about him. In Court in 2005 Janet Arvizo said of that interview:

Q. All right. And you said nice things about Mr. Jackson, did you not?

A. Yes, I did.

Q. And did you believe those things at that time?

A. Yes, I did.

Q. You would have said those things even if he hadn't rewound the tape-recorder?

A. That's right. [2]

As earlier stated, on February 20 the Arvizos got a visit from the Los Angeles Department of Children and Family Services at Major Jay Jackson's home. Again, the Arvizos said nothing but positive things about Jackson. They denied molestation and never claimed that they had been supposedly "kidnapped" or held against their will. [2]

The next day, on February 21, while her children went back to Neverland, Janet Arvizo visited a civil case lawyer William Dickerman who was offered to her by Jamie Masada. Janet Arvizo denied meeting Dickerman on February 21 in her testimony, but Dickerman in his own testimony stated they first met on February 21. Then they met again on February 25 – on this both testimonies agreed. During none of these visits Janet Arvizo mentioned to the lawyer that they were supposedly kidnapped or being held captive at Neverland, nor did the lawyer report any such thing to any authority. According to Janet Arvizo, she contacted Dickerman because she wanted him to stop the media from using her children's likeness and photos in their publications and on their programs. [2] [5]

On February 25 Gavin had a doctor's appointment and the Arvizo family also went to visit Jamie Masada at the Laugh Factory. Again they never mentioned to the doctor or anyone that they had allegedly been held captive at Neverland and no one reported any such claims to authorities. [2]

Between February 25 and March 2 the Arvizo family stayed at a hotel in Calabasas with Frank Cascio and Vinnie Amen. During this period and also during their stay at Neverland, as receipts show, they went shopping several times. During these shoppings they never alerted anyone that they had allegedly been held captive. [2]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Some time during this period in February-March, while allegedly being held captive, the Arvizos also went to see a dentist to have the braces removed from Gavin's and Star's teeth. Again, they never mentioned to the dentist or anyone that they were allegedly being kept against their will at Neverland. [2]

On March 11 the Arvizos appeared in a Court regarding a child support debate with Janet Arvizo's ex-husband David Arvizo. They were accompanied by another one of their lawyers, Michael Manning. They never reported to either the lawyer or the Court that they were allegedly being kidnapped and held against their will at Neverland. [2]

So as you can see the Arvizos had several opportunities to report their alleged captivity to authorities, a court, lawyers, doctors, relatives, friends and shop assistants but they did not. In actuality, they went shopping, to doctors, to a lawyer, to a Court appointment, stayed for days at Major Jay Jackson's home and so on – all during their alleged captivity at Neverland.

Around that time there were plans to take the Arvizos to Brazil for a vacation (possibly to keep the media away from them). This was later characterized by the Arvizos and the prosecution as an attempt to deport them, when in reality travel documents presented in Court showed that they were supposed to stay in Brazil for only a one week vacation. From Janet Arvizo's cross-examination:

Q. Well, the itinerary says you're leaving Los Angeles for Sao Paulo, Brazil, on March 1st, 2003, right?

A. Okay.

Q. It says you're returning from Sao Paulo, Brazil, to Miami on March 6th, 2003, correct?

A. Uh-huh.

Q. And it says you're leaving Miami for Los Angeles on March 7th, 2003, correct?

A. Uh-huh. [2]

According to the testimony of Azja Pryor, girlfriend of the actor Chris Tucker at the time, far from being forced, at the time Janet Arvizo was looking forward to the trip and even invited her:

Q. Did Janet ever mention a trip to Brazil to you?

A. Yes.

Q. What did she say?

A. She said that they –

MR. SNEDDON: I'll object as hearsay.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MR. MESEREAU: Impeachment, Your Honor.

THE COURT: The objection's overruled.

THE WITNESS: She said that they were going to Brazil for Carnival.

Q. BY MR. MESEREAU: And what is Carnival, to your knowledge?

A. Beautiful costumes, beads. I guess it's kind of like Mardi Gras.

Q. Kind of a holiday celebration, right?

A. A holiday celebration.

Q. Did she ever ask you to go with her?

A. Yes, she did.

Q. And when did Janet ask you to go to Brazil with her to attend Carnival?

A. During a phone conversation. It was sometime in February.

Q. Okay. And did you say anything in response to her invitation?

A. I said, "Sure, I'd love to go."

Q. And did you ever talk to her about Brazil again?

A. Yeah, we talked a couple of times about Brazil.

Q. And did you talk about your going with her?

A. I'm sure — I'm sure I did. I told her I couldn't go for too long. I was in school at the time, so I would only be able to be there for, like, three or four days.

Q. Did she say that was okay?

A. Yes. [6]

Eventually the whole trip was called off and it never took place.

On March 2 the family went back again to Neverland from the Calabasas hotel and stayed there until March 12 when they left for good. Like mentioned above, this was characterized by Janet Arvizo in her 2005 testimony as their "final escape". In actuality, according to Janet Arvizo's own testimony, she told Frank Cascio on the phone that her parents were sick and she would like her children to see them. Then Vinnie Amen delivered them to their parents' home and that was it. This was "the big escape".

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Sources:

- [1] The Prosecution's original felony complaint (filed on December 18, 2003)
https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/121803complaint_initial-charges.pdf
- [2] Janet Arvizo's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (April 13-19, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [3] Statement of Probable Cause (filed by the Prosecution on November 17, 2003)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/plugin-111703stmtpc.pdf>
- [4] Jesus Salas' testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (April 4, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [5] William Dickerman's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (March 30, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [6] Azja Pryor's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (May 19, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

The Changing Content of the Allegations and Contradictions

Since there was no material evidence (DNA, blood, sperm, any kind of medical evidence, love letters etc.) that would link Michael Jackson to the alleged crime, the case eventually came down to the credibility of the accuser and his family.

Between 2003 and 2005 the Arvizos told their story several times. First to a psychologist, Dr. Stanley Katz, in June 2003, then to the police several times in a series of interviews in 2003, then in front of a Grand Jury in 2004 and finally at the trial itself in 2005. The public does not have access to each of these interviews, but the material that we do have access to already reveals a timeline that changed significantly during the course of the investigation, changing the allegations in content and creating a lot of contradictions.

The issue of the changing timeline and its significance was discussed earlier in this document. In this present chapter we are going through some of the changes and contradictions in the content of the Arvizos' allegations as not only the timeline changed, but also the alleged acts of molestation. Moreover, the family members contradicted each other and themselves on several occasions. Below follows a collection of such changing allegations and contradictions.

The number of alleged molestations

The number of alleged molestations claimed by Gavin changed a couple of times between 2003 and 2005. In the prosecution's original Statement of Probable Cause on November 17, 2003 they write (emphasis added):

*"Gavin describes **at least five instances of masturbation** occurring **between February 7 and March 10, 2003**. There are at least two other instances detailed in the affidavit, occurring within that period, in which Star observed Jackson with his hand down the front of Gavin's pants, in the area of his penis, while Jackson was masturbating himself. On those two occasions, Star believes Gavin to have been passed out on Jackson's bed in the upstairs bedroom." [1; page 3-4]*

On July 7, 2003 Gavin told Sgt. Steve Robel that the acts of molestation occurred less than five times:

*"Gavin told us that Michael masturbated him every night that Star wasn't sleeping in Michael's bedroom. **When asked, he said this occurred less than five times**. He was not made to masturbate Michael and never saw Michael's penis during these incidents. He did say that Michael once made him touch Michael's "private part" over the clothes." [1; page 56]*

On August 13, 2003 in another interview with Sgt. Robel Gavin claimed that the acts of molestation occurred a total of five times:

The Michael Jackson Allegations

*“Gavin said these incidents occurred toward the end of their last visit to Neverland before they stopped going to Neverland. When asked how many times Michael had done this to him, he replied, “Every time my brother wasn’t there, **for a total of five times.**” [1; page 62]*

Then in the same interview at another time Gavin claimed seven occasions:

*“He said Michael would tell him to put his underwear he was wearing during the masturbation into Michael’s hamper before showering. **This happened after each time Michael masturbated him. He said this happened about seven times.** The underwear was not given back to him. Michael bought him new ones.” [1; p 63]*

By the time the case went to trial Gavin’s “at least five”, “less than five”, “a total of five”, then “about seven times” acts of alleged molestations became two and when after the description of the second alleged act he was asked whether there were any other occasions that Jackson tried to do inappropriate things to him, he said there were not:

Q. Were there any other occasions where Mr. Jackson tried to do something to you that you felt was inappropriate, that you remember.

A. No. [2]

The changing number of alleged occasions of molestation is also reflected in the fact that in the prosecution’s initial felony complaint they alleged seven acts of lewd act upon a child [3], while in the final indictment it changed to four [4]. (In both documents two of these were allegedly observed by Gavin’s brother Star and Gavin was not aware of them because he was “passed out” after Jackson allegedly gave him alcohol. I will address this later in this chapter.)

As for the claim about Jackson allegedly telling him to put his underwear into his hamper after each acts of molestation – “about seven times”. Pedophiles often keep so called trophies or mementos from their victims. This seems to be an attempt to establish such a thing by claiming that Jackson kept Gavin’s underwear after each acts of molestation. The problem is that during the house search on November 18, 2003 none of Gavin’s underwear was found in Jackson’s possession or anywhere at Neverland, so no such claim could be supported by evidence. Interestingly after the search did not produce any corroborating evidence, this story became a lot tamer and instead of seven occasions there was only one claimed and even that was not linked to any sexual activity. Gavin only claimed that on one occasion after allegedly sleeping in Jackson’s room Jackson allegedly told him to put his underwear in the hamper and he did, but on the stand he did not link this to masturbation or any sexual activity, let alone on seven occasions. On the stand Gavin also said that after they had left Neverland for good and Jackson’s employees had delivered their clothes to them from Neverland, some pieces of his clothes were missing (some underwear, shirts, pants) “*and they put in some other guy’s pants*” instead. It appears that this mixup is what they tried to turn into a narrative about Jackson keeping his underwear as some kind of molestation memento, but then backtracked on it when none of Gavin’s clothes had been found at Neverland during the search.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Who told Gavin that men have to masturbate?

In his interview with Sgt. Robel on August 13, 2003 Gavin said that his grandmother told him that men have to masturbate, otherwise they may rape women:

“He was asked what he thinks masturbation means. Gavin said that his grandma had explained to him that grown men must masturbate, because if they don’t, they may go out and rape a woman.” [1; page 61]

However, on the stand Gavin claimed it was Jackson who told him that. This is important because according to the Arvizos’ allegations, this is how Jackson introduced Gavin to masturbation (the boy claimed he had never masturbated before) and he claimed that the first act of alleged molestation immediately followed this statement by Jackson.

When confronted with the contradiction on the stand by Jackson’s attorney Thomas Mesereau, Gavin tried to get out of it by claiming that both Jackson and his grandmother told him the same thing.

What did Star allegedly see?

Out of the four counts of lewd act upon a child that Michael Jackson’s was accused of in the prosecution’s final version of their story, two were alleged to have been observed by Gavin’s one year younger brother Star, but without Gavin himself being aware of them. The claim was that Gavin was “passed out” during those molestations because Jackson allegedly had given him alcohol.

Initially, in his interview with Dr. Stanley Katz in June 2003, Star claimed that on the two occasions when he allegedly witnessed Jackson inappropriately touching his brother Jackson’s hand was on top of Gavin’s clothes:

*“Dr. Katz reported Star disclosed that on two occasions, he saw Michael place his hand on Gavin’s crotch **on top of his clothes**. Star said Gavin was passed out in bed from drinking too much. He said Michael and Gavin were both on top of the covers. He described Michael as wearing a T-shirt and briefs. Star said Michael was on his back, with his legs open and right hand inside his briefs. He said Michael had an erection and was rubbing himself while his left hand was on Gavin’s crotch.” [1; page 15]*

(Emphasis added.)

Later Star claimed that Jackson’s hand was inside Gavin’s pants on both occasions and this later version was what he claimed on the stand.

In an interview with Sgt. Steve Robel on July 7, 2003 Star also claimed that on the second occasion he witnessed Jackson molesting his brother Jackson had his penis out of his underwear:

The Michael Jackson Allegations

“Michael had his own penis out of his underwear while “stroking it”. He said Michael’s penis was “hard”. [1; page 48]

Later this claim disappeared from their allegations and on the stand Star never claimed to have witnessed such a thing.

On the stand Star first claimed he did not see any alcohol in the room while he observed these alleged acts of molestations, but later in his testimony he was reminded that to the Grand Jury he claimed he saw vodka, so he suddenly “remembered” he did.

Initially Star also claimed to Dr. Katz that he had witnessed Jackson rub his private parts against Gavin’s butt and touch Gavin’s butt. According to the prosecution’s Statement of Probable Cause (November 17, 2003):

“Star disclosed that on a different occasion he saw Michael get into bed and rub his private part against Gavin’s “butt”. He said Michael kissed Gavin on the cheek and touched Gavin’s butt. Star did not say whether Michael or Gavin were clothed.” [1; page 15]

Dr. Katz testified about it in 2004 in front of the Grand Jury as well.

Not only did this claim disappear from their allegations later on, but at the trial in 2005, when Jackson’s lawyer Thomas Mesereau confronted him with what he initially claimed to Dr. Katz, Star flat out denied ever saying such a thing.

Q. Well, when you met with Psychologist Stanley Katz, you also describe what you claim happened in Michael Jackson’s bedroom, right.

A. Yes.

Q. And would you agree that you’ve given different descriptions almost every time that you have described it.

A. I don’t remember exactly what I said.

Q. Well, you’ve given different descriptions about what Michael Jackson was wearing, right.

A. I don’t remember exactly what I said.

Q. You’ve given different descriptions of what Gavin was supposed to be wearing, right.

A. I don’t remember exactly what I said.

Q. You’ve given different descriptions about what you claim Michael Jackson did in the bedroom, right.

A. No.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Q. Well, there were times you said that Michael Jackson put his hand on top of your brother's underwear, right.

A. I don't remember saying that.

Q. And there are other times you said he put his hand inside his underwear, right.

A. Yes.

Q. And there are times you've said your brother was wearing pajamas, right.

A. Yes.

Q. There are times you said he was wearing underwear, right.

A. I don't remember.

Q. And there are times you said that Michael Jackson touched his butt and not his crotch, right.

A. When was this.

Q. When you did some interviews, right.

A. About what.

Q. About what Michael Jackson, you claim, was doing in his bedroom, right.

A. I never said he touched his butt.

Q. Did you ever tell anyone that when you saw Michael Jackson in bed with your brother, he was rubbing his butt.

A. No.

Q. Never said that at any time to anybody.

A. No.

Q. Never said it to Mr. Katz, right.

A. No.

Q. Never said it to the sheriffs, right.

A. No.

Q. And never said it to a grand jury, right.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

A. No.

Q. Okay. Do you remember when you described for Stanley Katz the second time you claim Michael Jackson was observed by you in bed with your brother. Do you remember that.

A. What.

Q. Do you remember telling Stanley Katz there was a second time that you went up the stairs and observed Michael Jackson touching your brother.

A. Yes.

Q. Did you tell Stanley Katz that Michael Jackson had his hand on your brother's crotch.

A. Yes.

Q. That's really not what you told him at all, is it.

A. What are you talking about.

Q. Well, you told Stanley Katz that Michael Jackson was rubbing his penis against Gavin's buttocks, didn't you.

A. When. The second time.

Q. Yes. Did you tell Stanley Katz that.

A. No.

Q. Would it refresh your recollection if I show you his grand jury testimony.

A. I know what I said, though.

Q. Are you denying telling Psychologist Stanley Katz –

A. The second time.

Q. — that you told him the second time you observed Michael Jackson touching your brother in bed, that Michael Jackson was rubbing his penis against your brother's buttocks.

A. No.

Q. You never told that to Stanley Katz.

A. No.

Q. If I showed you his testimony, would that jog your memory.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

A. No. I know what I said, though. [5]

(Emphasis added.)

In his interview with Sgt. Steve Robel on July, 2003 Star also claimed this:

*“Star described another incident where Gavin was sleeping in Michael’s bed. Star was half asleep **in a chair next to the bed**. Michael came into the bedroom and got into bed with Gavin. He believes Michael thought he was asleep. He observed Michael scoot up to Gavin who was curled up and sleeping on his side. Michael **began moving his hips back to front against Gavin’s back side**. Gavin was wearing pajamas and Michael was wearing underwear. Star said he then pretended to wake and Michael quickly moved away from Gavin and pretended to be asleep.” [1; page 49]*

(Emphasis added.)

This story changed too by the time the case went to trial. On the stand Star claimed that he was **in the bed** with Jackson and Gavin when this allegedly happened, instead of being half asleep in a chair next to the bed as he initially had claimed. On the stand he also did not mention anything about Jackson allegedly “*moving his hips back to front against Gavin’s back side*”, instead he said he did not see it whether he did anything. Also while in the original story he claimed Gavin was wearing pajamas, on the stand he said he did not remember what he was wearing.

Q. All right. Now, you said there was an incident. Where were you prior to the time that Mr. Jackson came into the room.

A. Sleeping.

Q. Where.

A. On the bed.

Q. And where was your brother.

A. Right next to me.

Q. And when we’re looking straight at the bed towards the back of the wall – okay. – where were you located on the bed.

A. All the way to the right.

Q. And where was your brother.

A. In the middle.

Q. And were you under the covers.

A. Under the covers.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Q. Over the covers.

A. Under the covers.

Q. And how were you dressed.

A. In PJ's.

Q. Do these PJ's — describe them.

A. Sweat pants.

Q. I'm sorry.

A. Sweat pants and a shirt.

Q. All right. And do you recall what your brother was wearing.

A. Not really.

Q. Now, did you see — tell us what happened.

A. I was sleeping. It was in the morning. And I saw Michael come up, and I tried to say hi, but I couldn't. He got in bed. Started scooting over closer and closer to my brother. And for a time he didn't stop until I moved, and then he stopped.

Q. And what happened when he heard you move.

A. He stopped.

Q. Okay. Did you see whether or not he did anything.

A. No. I was — no. [6]

(Emphasis added.)

Not only Star's own testimonies were contradictory, but there is another piece of evidence that makes his whole story questionable. There was much talk in the media about the alarm system in Michael Jackson's bedroom. The prosecution's and the tabloid media's theory about it was that Jackson installed it to get warned if anyone entered his bedroom while he was molesting children. But this is just a never proven prosecution theory, not a fact. Objectively we are simply talking about a bell that rings when someone enters the downstairs section of Jackson's bedroom. It is perfectly understandable when we know that often there were dozens or even hundreds of people staying and walking around at Neverland – guests, fans and staff alike. Obviously molesting children is not the only option why an international celebrity would want to get a warning when someone enters his private quarters.

Ironically, this alarm system that the tabloid media often tries to use to incriminate Jackson, at the trial blew another hole into Star Arvizo's story. How come that Star was able to walk

The Michael Jackson Allegations

into Jackson's bedroom and observe Gavin's molestation two times without Jackson hearing the alarm and noticing him? Jackson's defense had a videographer Laurence Nimmer make an alarm test and the video of it was presented at Jackson's trial as evidence. A video of the alarm test can be found on YouTube [7]. The video shows that the sound of the alarm is loud and is clearly audible in the upstairs portion of Jackson's bedroom where the alleged molestation happened. When Star was asked about it he claimed that it was not audible upstairs because the door at the bottom of the stairway that went upstairs was closed. This was contradicted by Nimmer who testified they performed the test three different ways, the third time with that particular door closed, and the alarm was audible upstairs in all three tests. The video of all three tests was presented at the trial. [8]

Initially Star claimed to have been inappropriately touched as well – later this allegation disappeared

Initially in their interview with Dr. Stanley Katz the Arvizos claimed that not only Gavin, but also Star had been inappropriately touched by Michael Jackson:

"Star told Dr. Katz that on one occasion while at the Ranch during their stay, he was in a golf cart with Michael. Michael placed his hand on Star's penis, on top of his pants. Star also said that Michael had touched his "butt", and he saw Michael touch Gavin's "butt" a lot, on top of his clothes." [1; page 16]

This claim also appeared in their first interview with Sgt. Steve Robel on July 6-7, 2003:

"Michael touched Star's private area." [1; page 23]

and

"When asked, Star said Michael Jackson touched him inappropriately. The incident occurred when they were in a golf cart. Star was driving the golf cart and Michael was next to him. Michael then reached over and touched Star's "testicles and penis" over his clothes with Michael's left hand. He did not say anything to Michael and continued driving the golf cart." [1; page 50]

Later, as their allegations evolved, this claim completely disappeared from them and on the stand it was never alleged that Star had been inappropriately touched by Jackson.

Did Gavin and Star Arvizo ever go to Jackson's bedroom while Jackson was not there?

When asked on the stand in 2005 whether they had ever gone to Michael Jackson's bedroom while the entertainer was not there Gavin claimed they never did:

Q. How many times do you think you entered Michael Jackson's bedroom when Mr. Jackson wasn't there.

A. I never went inside his room when he wasn't there.

Q. To your knowledge, did your brother ever go into his room when he wasn't

The Michael Jackson Allegations

there.

A. I don't think my brother went into his room when he wasn't there.

Q. Okay. So you have no knowledge of him doing that, correct.

A. No. [9]

(Emphasis added.)

While Gavin denied ever going to Jackson's room while Jackson was not there, his younger brother Star had pretty vivid memories of him and his brother doing so. He testified not only that they went to Jackson's bedroom but also that they even slept there when the entertainer was not there. He claimed that Jackson allowed them to sleep there, but this is pretty dubious considering the fact that Jackson did not trust this family.

Q. Okay. You gave a description of Michael's bedroom to the jury yesterday, right.

A. Yes.

Q. And what did you tell the jury you'd find on the first floor.

A. The first floor.

Q. Yes. The first floor of Michael's bedroom, yes.

A. The room to the right or to the left.

Q. Let's take the room to the left. What do you see in the room to the left.

A. All the way to the left.

Q. Yes.

A. There's like — there's a counter with a bunch of perfumes and colognes. There's a mirror. There's another big mirror behind it. There's speakers. There's a bunch of electric razors in a drawer. There's a big bathtub, Jacuzzi-type thing. There used to be a reclining chair there. It wasn't — you couldn't — it was — it was like a square cushion, and there was a cushioned chair, and there's a dresser. There's a door with a small — with a toilet in there. There's glass doors all the way to the end. There's a big safe in there. What else. There's a — yeah.

Q. And how about the room to the right.

A. All the way to the right, there's another counter with a bunch of stuff on it. There's a poster of Harry Potter and his two friends. There's a rest room all the way, if you keep walking down, with a shower. There's a closet to your left with a bunch of clothes and a bunch of souvenirs from other movies. There's

The Michael Jackson Allegations

— when you first walk in, there's a closet with a bunch of pajamas. And if you go to your left, there's the stairs going up. What else is there. There's a — that's it.

Q. You and your brother were caught in that room when Michael Jackson wasn't even at Neverland, weren't you.

A. To sleep, yeah.

Q. You and your brother used to go into that room when Michael wasn't even at Neverland, right.

A. Yes, Michael opened his room up to us so we could sleep there while he was gone.

Q. You were actually asked to leave that room when you were caught during a time when Michael wasn't even at Neverland, right.

A. No.

Q. And you and your brother rummaged through every room in that bedroom area, correct.

A. No.

Q. You went snooping around the entire bedroom area when Michael wasn't even there, correct.

A. No.

Q. You went into that closet when Michael wasn't even there, correct.

A. No.

Q. How do you know there are pajamas in the closet.

A. Because Michael showed us.

Q. So Michael was showing you every little bit of the bedroom.

A. No, he just showed us where the pajamas were.

Q. And you were never caught in there and asked to leave; is that what you're saying.

A. Yes. [5]

(Emphasis added.)

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Azja Pryor (the girlfriend of actor Chris Tucker at the time) said in her testimony in 2005 that she witnessed one occasion when the Arvizo children asked an employee to let them stay in Jackson's bedroom while the singer was not there. [10] The employee refused to let them in, but we know from testimonies, including Star Arvizos' own testimony, that at a point they got hold of the entrance code to Jackson's bedroom and they managed to go to the room while the entertainer was not there. Star claimed they got the code to Jackson's room from Jackson himself and a master code that opened each and every door at Neverland from a security guard. Like said, that Jackson gave them a code to his bedroom is a pretty dubious claim considering his distrust in the Arvizo family. [6] A young cousin of Jackson, 10-year-old Rijo Jackson, hung out with the Arvizo boys while they were staying at Neverland. According to him, the Arvizo boys went into employees' offices, rummaged through drawers and paperwork and that is how they found out the various combinations to keypad locks on doors throughout the ranch. [11]

Differing accounts about seeing Jackson naked

There were also differences in the stories of alleged abusive or inappropriate situations Gavin and Star allegedly experienced together. One of their claims was that on one occasion Jackson deliberately showed himself to them naked with an erection. The Arvizo kids claimed they were hanging out upstairs in Jackson's bedroom when the singer walked up naked with an erection to show himself to them then walked down again. Their details of the story, however, differed. Gavin claimed Jackson had just run up to get something and went back down again immediately without saying a word. Star on the other hand claimed that Jackson had sat down on the bed with them for about two minutes and told them it was natural.

When you ponder the above story about Jackson allegedly showing himself nude to the Arvizo boys, please also consider the fact that another time during his testimony there was an exchange between Jackson's attorney Thomas Mesereau and Gavin about Jackson's skin condition and the fact that his skin had brown patches on it. During this conversation Gavin said he was not aware of it, he thought Jackson was "just all white":

Q. And you knew that that disease was causing certain patches of white and brown on his skin, right.

A. Yes. I guess.

Q. And –

A. I don't know. It's not like I was making fun of him yesterday, if that's what you're trying to imply.

Q. Well, you knew that his skin is vulnerable to sunlight, correct.

A. Yes.

Q. And that's why you see him with an umbrella, correct.

A. Yes.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Q. And you also knew, because of the patches that appear on his skin from that disease, he does sometimes put some makeup on, right.

A. I didn't know about patches. I thought he was just all white. [12]

(Emphasis added.)

What about the pornographic magazines?

The Arvizo kids claimed that Jackson showed them pornographic magazines from a briefcase on two occasions: first in the downstairs area of his bedroom then on the second occasion upstairs. However, when they were asked to describe the details of the alleged situations in their testimonies the brothers contradicted each other on several points again:

- Gavin claimed the first occasion happened on the same day they got back from Miami (February 7) and the second occasion about one-two weeks after they came back from the Calabasas hotel. They came back from the Calabasas hotel on March 2 and they left Neverland for good on March 12, so this would put the date of the second occasion, according to Gavin's account, around March 9-12, the very last days of their stay at Neverland. Star never mentioned anything about Jackson allegedly showing them adult material on the same day they came back from Miami on February 7. On contrary to his brother's claims Star's claim was that the first time Jackson showed them such material was "*after the Calabasas hotel*" which would be after March 2 and the second occasion was "*a few days later*". When the prosecution asked Star Arvizo "*Do you recall how many — how much time elapsed between the first time you saw the materials downstairs till the time you saw them upstairs*" the boy answered "*A few days*"[6] Please notice that according to Gavin's account, however, more than a month elapsed between the first occasion (February 7) and the second occasion (March 9-12).
- About the first occasion Gavin claimed that Jackson told them the briefcase that contained the material was Frank Cascio's and he made fun of Cascio while showing them the magazines. Star claimed Jackson did not make any comments while showing them the material.
- About the second occasion Gavin claimed they went through almost the full content of the briefcase ("*we saw, like, practically everything*"[2]) and the whole thing lasted about 30 minutes to one hour. Star claimed they saw only about three or four magazines.
- About the first occasion Star first claimed the briefcase was open when they first saw it, then later in his testimony he claimed it was closed.

The prosecution argued that the fact that Gavin's and Star's fingerprints were found on some of the magazines proves their claim that Jackson had shown them these magazines. However, there are several problems with that conclusion. One is that, like shown above, the boys went to Jackson's room when the singer was not there, so they were perfectly able to rummage

The Michael Jackson Allegations

through his stuff, find and touch those magazines on their own. In actuality, that would be consistent with their behaviour around other people as well, as Jackson's lawyer Thomas Mesereau pointed out in his closing argument based on various testimonies that were heard at the trial:

And the only forensic evidence they had to hang their hat on are fingerprints on some girlie magazines that were owned by Michael Jackson. And you know that everywhere the Arvizo children went, they would rummage through drawers, rummage through the house. They did it at the dentist's office. They did it in Vernee Watson Johnson's home. This is the way they behave. [13]

(By the way, the only stash of adult magazines where the Arvizo boys' fingerprints were found were the magazines in a briefcase. Their fingerprints were not found on the adult magazines that were found in Jackson's nightstand or in a box at the base of his bed or anywhere else. It seems they only ever came into contact with the briefcase stash.)

It was also shown during the trial that the Arvizo boys weren't at all as naïve and innocent about pornography as the prosecution tried to portray them. A Neverland employee Julio Avila testified on May 24, 2005 that he once caught Star Arvizo walking around with an adult magazine and when he asked him where he had got it from he told him he had taken it from home. [14] Another Neverland employee Maria Gomez testified on May 16, 2005 that she had seen adult magazines in Star Arvizo's backpack while she had been once cleaning the guest unit where they were staying. [15] A general description of the Arvizo boys' overall behaviour and how it differed from the prosecution's portrayal of them will be discussed in detail in the next chapter entitled **General credibility problems with the Arvizo family**.

In his opening statement Jackson's attorney Mesereau stated that rather than showing the magazines to the boys Jackson actually caught them once with them and took them away from them.

The prosecutor told you that there were girlie-type magazines and sexually explicit material in Mr. Jackson's home, and there were. Mr. Jackson will freely admit that he does read girlie magazines from time to time. And what he does is he sends someone to the local market, and they pick up Playboy and they pick up Hustler, and he has read them from time to time. He absolutely denies showing them to children. And, in fact, the magazines the prosecutor referred to were in a locked briefcase. And Mr. Jackson will tell you he found those kids going through his magazines, and grabbed them from him and locked them in his briefcase. [16]

Gavin's story regarding the magazines indeed makes a very odd "grooming" story. Remember that the prosecution's theory was that Jackson showed the Arvizo boys the magazines to groom them – ie. to lower their inhibitions and/or arouse them before sexually molesting them, because that is what pedophiles typically use pornographic magazines for. However, Gavin's magazine scene looked like this in his testimony at the trial.

Q. Now, when you first saw the suitcase, where was it in that room.

A. It was next to -- it was to the left of that couch thing.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Q. And did you ever see Mr. Jackson pick up the Exhibit 470.

*A. Yeah, like I was hanging out with him in there, and he was like putting on his makeup or something, I don't know. **And then he -- he grabbed the -- grabbed the suitcase, and then he told me -- he told me it was Frank's. And he showed me, he was like, "This is" --***

Q. Okay. Well, what did he show you.

A. He was, like, "Look at the" -- "Look at this stuff. Frank's stinking a-s-s." Frank's stinking -- it was S- -- Frank's stinking ass.

Q. All right. What was inside the suitcase.

A. Adult materials.

Q. And how many did you look at with Mr. Jackson.

A. Well, he showed me just one -- like he showed me, and there was this girl in there and then he put it away.

Q. And how was the girl.

A. She had her legs spread open, and her vagina was, like, showing.

Q. All right. Did you ever see that suitcase again.

A. Yes.

Q. Where.

A. We had it -- like, we had it up in his -- near his bed, and then we were looking at all the stuff.

Q. Who was "we".

A. Me, my brother and Michael.

Q. And do you recall, where in the bedroom was the suitcase when you first saw it that time.

*A. The first time I saw it, it was in the rest room kind of thing. And then the second time we -- I don't know if we brought it up there or, like, Michael brought it up there or something. I don't know. But it was up next to his bed. **And we were all going through the thing and we were making fun of Frank.***

Q. Did you look at the magazines.

A. Yes.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Q. How many magazines do you think you saw.

A. We saw, like, practically everything, but there was a few we didn't look at.

Q. How much time do you figure you were looking at all those things.

A. 30 minutes to an hour, probably.

Q. Did Mr. Jackson make any comments during the time -- other than the ones you've talked about, any other comments that he made at any of the photographs or the magazines.

A. Not really. We just were, like, making fun of Frank. [2]

(Emphasis added.)

These alleged scenes do not make much sense as attempts at arousing the Arvizo boys in order to molest them since, according to their own story, they were not immediately followed by molestation or any sexual act. According to the Arvizo's story, the alleged molestation of Gavin happened on totally different occasions and with no pornography being shown to him. As for lowering inhibitions, according to Gavin's story, Jackson tried to distance himself from this material claiming they were Frank's (ie. Frank Cascio's) and he supposedly made fun of Frank for it using such words as "stinking". It would be a strange way to tell a child having such material is cool. However, Jackson distancing himself from the material would make a lot more sense if the Defense's version is the true version of the story – ie. that instead of showing the boys these magazines Jackson actually took them away from them and was telling them that it was wrong to look at them.

A story by music producer Mark Ronson as told in 2008, confirms that Jackson was not at all OK with children looking at adult material, let alone encouraging them to do so.

Producer Mark Ronson once tried to make his childhood pal Michael Jackson watch porn - but the pop superstar hated the experience and wasn't amused.

Ronson, whose father Laurence was a band manager, used to spend his time in the company of John Lennon's son Sean and Jackson as they were growing up.

The trio would frequently have sleepovers - but when Ronson and Lennon used to switch over the TV to the pornography channel, Jackson was left cringing with embarrassment.

He recalls, "It's a weird story, but I didn't touch him. We (Ronson and Lennon) used to watch the porn channel because we were like 10 and, 'Oh my God, tits!' So Michael was in bed. And me and Sean said, 'Michael do you want to see something cool?'

"We turned the dial to the porn channel and there were strippers shaking their tits around. We were like, 'Michael, Michael, how cool is this?' We turned around and he was cringing, saying, 'Ooh stop it, stop it, ooh it's so silly.' We

The Michael Jackson Allegations

were like, 'Michael, you have to look, maybe you're not seeing it right, it's naked girls!'

"He was not down with the programme whatsoever! I think he had really strong feminist views on porn." [17]

It should be noted that before the Arvizo children went into Jackson's room and found his adult magazines, not any earlier accuser had claimed that Jackson had shown them such material in order to groom them or for any other reason. Pornography claims were simply not a part of either Jordan Chandler's or Jason Francia's allegations. All pornography claims only became a part of these stories after it became publicly known during the Arvizo process that Jackson had such material at all and the prosecution had the very much publicly stated theory that Jackson had used it for "grooming children".

Changing claims about who showed the Arvizo children Internet pornography

Gavin claimed that when he and his brother Star spent a night in Jackson's room in the summer of 2000, Jackson showed them pornography on the Internet on a laptop computer he had just given Gavin as a gift. According to the prosecution's original Statement of Probable Cause on November 17, 2003, in his initial interview with Dr. Stanley Katz in June 2003 Gavin claimed Jackson himself operated the computer and navigated to pornographic websites.

"Also, during a visit to Neverland Ranch, Michael gave him a laptop computer. They connected the laptop to AOL and Michael started looking for naked women. Gavin was shown pictures of naked women on the computer screen. Michael told him and Star not to tell anyone and to say they were watching the Simpson's." [1; page 16]

Initially Star Arvizo too claimed that Jackson did the typing.

In later versions of their story this changed to Frank Cascio operating and navigating the computer, although they still claimed that Jackson was sitting with them and encouraging and approving of it. (Cascio was in the room because Jackson did not want to stay alone with the Arvizo kids. Jackson's children were also in the room. This was discussed in the chapter [An introduction of the Arvizo family and how their relationship with Michael Jackson started.](#))

Cascio in his 2011 book, *My Friend Michael*, denied that either Jackson or he showed the Arvizo children Internet pornography. He said Gavin and Star started to search for such websites on their own and when Jackson realized it, he asked Cascio to make them stop it and left the room and returned only later [18].

Sleeping pills?

Initially, in their interview with Sgt. Steve Robel on July 6-7, 2003, the Arvizos claimed that Jackson had given the kids sleeping pills:

The Michael Jackson Allegations

“Michael wanted Star to take a sleeping pill. (Mrs. Arvizo said Star kept the pill and that it is currently with their attorney.)” [1; page 23]

“Star stated that on one occasion Michael wanted Gavin and him to take sleeping pills. Michael told him to go and get the sleeping pills from Rudy the head chef. Michael wanted Gavin and Star to take the pills, but somehow the subject changed and the pills were forgotten. He kept the sleeping pill and their attorney now has it.” [1; page 49]

What kind of pill they gave to their attorney and where they really got it from is not known, because it was never introduced to court as evidence. Possibly under scrutiny it did not turn out to be what the Arvizos claimed, so this claim completely disappeared from their allegations and on the stand it was never claimed that Jackson gave them sleeping pills.

Simulated sex with a mannequin?

The Arvizos claimed that on one occasion Jackson simulated sex with a female mannequin in front of them. When Star first told this story to Dr. Katz, he said he could not recall if Jackson was clothed or not when this allegedly happened:

“He couldn’t recall if Michael was clothed or not.” [1; page 15]

Later, on July 7, 2003 when he told his story to Sgt. Steve Robel he suddenly remembered that Jackson was clothed:

“Michael was dressed and only acted like he was having sex with the mannequin” [1; page 51]

By the way, the mannequin about which the Arvizo children claimed this, turned out to be a replica of one of Jackson’s female cousins.

Who was chasing whom?

In her initial interview with Sgt. Steve Robel on July 6-7, 2003, Janet Arvizo tried to portray Michael Jackson as the clingy one who tried to attach himself to her family and especially Gavin. She claimed it was because she had complained about too long phone conversations between Jackson and Gavin why Jackson failed to return the van and a laptop computer that he had gifted to the family.

“Michael was also upset because she complained that his phone conversations with Gavin were too long. Mrs. Arvizo believes this was Michael’s motivation for not returning the Bronco and laptop.” [1; page 20]

However, this claim became hard to defend when during the investigation cards and letters written by the Arvizo family to Jackson were discovered in which **they** beg for the singer’s attention because he was not answering their phone calls. Gavin on the stand admitted that Jackson stopped calling him as early as in August-September 2000 and that rather than complaining about too long phone conversations between Gavin and Jackson, Janet Arvizo actually wrote cards and letters to Jackson to try to get him contact them.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Q. And approximately when do you think he wasn't talking to you anymore.

A. Two months into my cancer.

Q. Excuse me.

A. Two months into my chemotherapy.

Q. Approximately when would that be.

A. August or September of 2000.

Q. Okay. So August or September of 2000, you and your family started sending nice letters and cards to Michael Jackson, correct.

A. Yes.

Q. And those are the letters and cards that I showed you a little while ago, right.

A. Yes.

Q. And it was your understanding your mother used to send him cards and letters as well, right.

A. I think so. [9]

(Emphasis added.)

Jackson was the exact opposite of clingy to the Arvizos or Gavin. In actuality, on the stand the boy complained that the entertainer had been actively avoiding him, as you could see in the chapter entitled [An introduction of the Arvizo family and how their relationship with Michael Jackson started](#).

When did Janet Arvizo learn about her son's alleged sexual abuse?

Janet Arvizo claimed in her initial interview with Sgt. Steve Robel on July 6-7, 2003 that their sons had disclosed to her the alleged abuse **in February or March, 2003**. According to the prosecution's Statement of Probable Cause:

*"These disclosures were made to her after **February or March of this year [2003]**. She explained that she would interrupt and tell Star and Gavin to "forgive and forget". She did this because she thought she was doing the right thing. She wanted Star and Gavin to make the disclosures to a priest or someone else. She has since learned that this was wrong of her to do." [1; page 23]*

(Emphasis added.)

The Michael Jackson Allegations

On the stand in 2005 Janet Arvizo claimed that at the time she was not aware that either of her sons were molested, she was only “*aware of things*”. However, in the prosecution’s Statement of Probable Cause document (November 17, 2003) it is claimed that in February-March, 2003 her sons disclosed to her accounts of Jackson allegedly “*moving his hips against Gavin*” in bed while they were allegedly in bed together, Jackson allegedly touching Star’s private parts etc. [1; page 22-23]. (Please consider that this is the same family who formerly sued the J.C. Penney department store with allegations that their guards had sexually abused Janet Arvizo, ie. they had allegedly touched her private areas during an altercation, so they were not ignorant of the inappropriateness of such touching without the police later enlightening them.)

Later it is totally contradicted in the very same document when it is claimed that Janet Arvizo had learned about her son’s alleged abuse when law enforcement had informed her about it **in September 2003**.

“It is important to note that during the course of the two interviews detailed in this affidavit, Mrs. Arvizo was not aware that Gavin has been molested. She believed the focus of our investigation was the family’s having been held against their wishes at the Neverland Ranch upon their return from Miami and their escape in March. Mrs. Arviso (sic) told your Affiant she had contacted an attorney to help get their possessions back and to set up contacts with law enforcement to report what had happened to them. She emphasized she was not interested in money.

Your affiant is aware through a conversation with Sgt. Robel that around 5:00 p.m. on September 30, 2003, that Sgt. Robel, Lt. Klapakis and District Attorney Tom Sneddon met with Mrs. Arvizo and her family in a Los Angeles hotel and informed her that our conversations with her children had established that Gavin had been molested. This was the first time she was aware of the nature of her children’s disclosures to law enforcement.” [1; page 64]

(Emphasis added.)

The web of contradictions becomes even more complicated when we also consider the testimony of Larry Feldman, the Arvizos’ civil lawyer (the same lawyer who represented the Chandler family in 1993), who on the stand in 2005 provided a third version about how Janet Arvizo had supposedly learnt about the alleged abuse of her son. According Feldman, **in June 2003** he sent the Arvizo family to psychologist Dr. Stanley Katz for evaluation and that is where it emerged that Gavin had allegedly been molested. When Dr. Katz reported back to him he called the Arvizo family back to his office where he discussed with them, including the mother, Katz’s findings and what kind of legal actions were available to them at that time.

Q. At some point in time, did you receive a report back from Dr. Katz about his initial contacts with the family?

A. Oral. I got an oral — I had an oral conversation with him.

Q. Do you recall whether it was in person or over the phone?

The Michael Jackson Allegations

A. I think it was in person, quite frankly. I think he came to my office.

Q. Now, after you received this report, did you do anything?

A. Yes.

Q. What did you do?

*A. I called the Arvizo family, **Mrs. Arvizo** and the three children, back into my office for a meeting.*

Q. All right. And in that meeting, what was the topic discussed?

MR. MESEREAU: Objection to the extent it calls for hearsay.

MR. SNEDDON: All right.

THE COURT: Overruled. The subject matter only.

*THE WITNESS: The subject matter only. **The subject matter was the options — well, what Dr. Katz had told me, and their — the options that existed at that point for that family. Different courses of action that were available to them at that point in time.** [19]*

(Emphasis added.)

On March 24, 2003 Janet Arvizo formally hired William Dickerman as her attorney and Dickerman began writing letters to Jackson's attorney, Mark Geragos on her behalf demanding the return of furniture, clothes, documents and various other items which were put in a storage locker after the Arvizos moved out of their Los Angeles apartment on March 1-2 (this will be discussed in more detail in the chapter [Lawyers being hired and the formation of the allegations](#)).

In his letters, dated March-April 2003, Dickerman never makes any allegation of child molestation, false imprisonment or providing alcohol to a minor. When asked about this on the stand by Jackson's attorney, Thomas Mesereau, this is what Janet Arvizo had to say:

Q. In none of his letters did he ever mention anything about alcohol or child molestation, true?

*A. **Because that was information for these guys right here, for the police.***

Q. How many months later?

*A. **Because I didn't want Geragos to know that we were headed towards — straight to the police.** [20]*

(Emphasis added.)

The Michael Jackson Allegations

So this is yet another version, in which they do not mention alleged molestation in those letters dated March-April, 2003 not because Janet Arvizo was not aware of it at the time yet, but because they were preserving that information for the police. Here I have to add, however, that they did not go “*straight to the police*” in March-April 2003, but they went to civil attorney, Larry Feldman in May 2003 – like described above. More details about the Arvizo family’s dealings with William Dickerman, Larry Feldman and Dr. Stanley Katz in the chapter **Lawyers being hired and the formation of the allegations**).

Sources:

- [1] Statement of Probable Cause (filed by the Prosecution on November 17, 2003)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/plugin-111703stmtpc.pdf>
- [2] Gavin Arvizo’s testimony at Michael Jackson’s 2005 trial (March 10, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [3] The Prosecution’s original felony complaint (filed on December 18, 2003)
https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/121803complaint_initial-charges.pdf
- [4] Opening statements at Michael Jackson’s 2005 trial (February 28, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [5] Star Arvizo’s testimony at Michael Jackson’s 2005 trial (March 8, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [6] Star Arvizo’s testimony at Michael Jackson’s 2005 trial (March 7, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [7] Larry Nimmer's test of MJ's bedroom alarms
<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=zhomMzTJS3g>
- [8] Laurence Nimmer's testimony at Michael Jackson’s 2005 trial (May 19, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [9] Gavin Arvizo’s testimony at Michael Jackson’s 2005 trial (March 14, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [10] Azja Pryor’s testimony at Michael Jackson’s 2005 trial (May 19, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [11] Notice of Motion and Motion to Admit Evidence of Gavin Arvizo and Star Arvizo's Sexual Conduct (March 11, 2005)
<http://www.sbscpublicaccess.org/docs/ctdocs/030105motadmevidgsa.pdf>
- [12] Gavin Arvizo’s testimony at Michael Jackson’s 2005 trial (March 15, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [13] Thomas Mesereau's closing arguments at Michael Jackson’s 2005 trial (June 3, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [14] Julio Avila's testimony at Michael Jackson’s 2005 trial (May 24, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [15] Maria Gomez's testimony at Michael Jackson’s 2005 trial (May 16, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [16] Thomas Mesereau's opening statements at Michael Jackson’s 2005 trial (March 1, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

The Michael Jackson Allegations

[17] WENN - Ronson: 'Jackson Hated Watching Porn' (Contact Music, June 22, 2008)
http://www.contactmusic.com/mark-ronson/news/ronson-jackson-hated-watching-porn_1072121

[18] Frank Cascio – My Friend Michael: An Ordinary Friendship with an Extraordinary Man (William Morrow, November 15, 2011)

[19] Larry Feldman's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (April 1, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[20] Janet Arvizo's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (April 18, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

General credibility problems with the Arvizo family

In this chapter we will discuss some other events, outside of their allegations against Michael Jackson, which highlight the Arvizo family's credibility problems. That they lied, contradicted themselves and each other, changed their story in significant ways in this relevant case against Jackson, was already discussed in detail in the previous chapters. The information that you will find in this chapter is only additional information to that.

The J.C. Penney Incident

On August 27 1998, when Gavin Arvizo was only eight years old, the Arvizo family was involved in an incident at a J.C. Penney department store. The incident started with Gavin stealing two school uniforms and two school uniform pants from the store and ended with a settlement between the Arvizo family and J.C. Penney in which the store paid the family \$152,200. How did Gavin's shoplifting end up with the department store paying to the family?

According to an interview that the Arvizo kids' father David Arvizo gave to Michael Jackson's private investigator Scott Ross on October 27, 2004, on the day of the incident the mother Janet Arvizo applied for a job at the loss prevention unit of Oshman's Sporting Goods Store. While she went to that store to fill out paperwork for her job application, David Arvizo and their two sons, Gavin and Star, went into the neighboring J.C. Penney store. While they were shopping, Gavin grabbed two school uniforms and two school uniform pants and ran out of the store with them. David ran after him, according to him, to stop him, but before they reached their van they were surrounded by J.C. Penney security guards. [1]

Janet Arvizo was exiting Oshman's just in time to witness this and jumped in to protect her husband and two sons. There was a scuffle between Janet and the guards, but David was ultimately escorted back to J.C. Penney. [1] According to Janet Arvizo's testimony in 2005, both Janet and David were arrested and taken to jail where their mugshots were taken and they were charged with burglary, assault and battery, and petty theft, but then they were released later that day and the charges were eventually dropped by the store. [2]

According to David, upon arriving home Janet ordered him and the boys to write out their version of what happened. When they were done she took their papers and changed their stories to a version that she wanted to represent. The changed versions were returned to the children and they were required to read and study it on a daily basis. This went on for almost a year, then on July 22, 1999 the Arvizos filed a civil lawsuit against J.C. Penney for battery, false imprisonment and infliction of emotional distress. At the time no sexual assault was alleged by them. One more year later in a June 29, 2000 amendment of their complaint, however, they added sexual assault allegations as well. Janet Arvizo now claimed that a security guard fondled her breasts, squeezed her nipples 10-20 times, punched her with a closed fist, molested her in her vaginal area and she was called racial slurs (the Arvizos are Hispanic). [1]

According to David Arvizo, eventually Janet never worked a day at Oshman's claiming that she was unable to work due to the injuries she allegedly had got in the J.C. Penney

The Michael Jackson Allegations

altercation. This "loss of earnings" claim became a part of their lawsuit as well. David also said that Janet exploited Gavin's illness in raising sympathy and putting J.C. Penney under pressure to settle. [1] Eventually the case was settled on September 24, 2001 with J.C. Penney paying the family \$152,500.

While David Arvizo was Janet's estranged ex-husband and a controversial character himself, and as such one could suspect an axe to grind against his ex-wife, but there is other, independent evidence and testimony to support David's claims that Janet Arvizo lied and was very manipulative in the J.C. Penney case. Some of that evidence came out at Jackson's 2005 trial.

In a testimony on May 24, 2005, Mary Holzer, an office manager and paralegal who worked for the Law Offices of Feldman & Rothstein that represented the Arvizos in the J.C. Penney case (Feldman & Rothstein has no relation to Larry Feldman, the civil lawyer who represented the Arvizos during their allegations against Michael Jackson), testified that Janet Arvizo had admitted to her that she had been lying about the photographs of her bruises that were used to prove her allegations against J.C. Penney. The photographs showed Janet Arvizo with bruises that she claimed she had got during the altercation with the J.C. Penney guards. However, according to Holzer, Janet Arvizo admitted to her that the bruises were not caused by the J.C. Penney guards, but by her own husband.

"And what did she tell you about those photographs while that lawsuit was going on?"

She told me that the bruises that were on her body were inflicted by David that night after the altercation at J.C. Penney's.

And what was your response to her telling you that?

Well, it scared me.

Why?

Well, I represent my law firm, and when a client admits to fraud, it's kind of scary.

And did you say anything to Mrs. Arvizo in response?

Yes, I did.

What did you say to Ms. Arvizo about that?

I told her that she couldn't do that, that that was wrong, and that, you know, she needed to retract that, and that she needed to speak to Mr. Rothstein about it.

Did you tell her that was fraudulent?

I don't know whether I used that word. I told her it was wrong; that "You can't do that."

The Michael Jackson Allegations

And --

I was very upset.” [3]

The photographs taken by the police on the day of the altercation right after Janet and David’s arrest do not show any injuries. The photos with the bruises and injuries were not presented by Janet until a week later.

In her testimony in 2005 Janet Arvizo admitted that she had lied in the J.C. Penney case about how she got her bruises. In fact, after she had received the settlement money from J.C. Penney, she filed for divorce from David and during that divorce battle she changed her story about the bruises, now claiming that they were not inflicted by the J.C. Penney guards, but by her husband. She blamed her lying in the J.C. Penney case on being intimidated by David.

„Okay. You claimed in that case that you had bruises from what the security guards did to you, right?

It is correct.

After you had resolved that case and obtained money, you claimed that you were bruised by David, true?

I had always been bruised by David for years. But I never told anyone until after David was arrested. That was the pivotal point in my life. Not until David was arrested did I say anything about bruises in my whole entire life, and that was only with people of authority. That’s it.” [4]

On another instance during her testimony she blamed her lying on the law firm that represented her. She claimed that she had tried to correct her lies, but the law firm would not allow her.

“Did you lie under oath in your deposition in the J.C. Penney case?

I tried to remedy that when I had gone to my -- after David was arrested, I went to Rothstein’s office. And I requested that they inform Tower Records and J.C. Penney’s that I would like to make that correct statement because the statements that were there were incorrect. But finally me and my kids could finally say what was really happening for many, many years.

Mrs. Arvizo, the problem you had was that when you made allegations later on against David that he had abused you for 17 years, there was a deposition that had previously been taken where you said the opposite under oath, right?

You’re -- it’s too long. There’s a yes and no and yes and no, and now I don’t know.” [4]

and

The Michael Jackson Allegations

“How many lies under oath do you think you told in your depositions in the J.C. Penney case?”

Like I said, I tried -- after David was arrested, I went to the Rothstein office and I pointed out to them, prior to a settlement agreement, that I would like to correct the statements that were inaccurate, because finally David was arrested. Finally, we and my children could speak. And Rothstein, including with Mary Holzer, said, “Don’t worry. We’ll take care of it.” And they didn’t. So I considered their firm a -- liars.” [4]

According to Mary Holzer’s testimony, this was not true and Janet Arvizo had never tried to correct her lies.

“Now, at any point in time, did Janet Arvizo ever tell you words to the effect, “Call up J.C. Penney or their lawyers and tell them I lied under oath”?”

Never.

At any time did Janet Arvizo ever tell you words to the effect, “Call up J.C. Penney or their lawyers and give the money back”?”

No.

Did Janet Arvizo ever tell you words to the effect, “Let the other side know I perjured myself”?”

A. No.” [3]

In actuality, Holzer testified that instead of trying to come clean about her lying, Janet Arvizo indirectly threatened her when Holzer tried to convince her to talk to the attorney about her false claims.

“She told me that David’s brother Ray is in the Mexican mafia and runs drugs between Los Angeles and Las Vegas, and that she knows where I live, because she had been to my house on several occasions, and they would come and kill me and my nine-year-old daughter.”

[...]

“Or, let me rephrase it. Did you ever have any further discussions with her about the fake claims against J.C. Penney?”

I did. I tried to get her to speak to Mr. Rothstein about it. I asked her if I could speak to Mr. Rothstein about it, because we run a clean law firm, and I really didn’t feel that we should be involved in something like that. And she proceeded to call me daily and tell me she had told David, and David was raging mad, and that he was going to come after me, and that I better watch my back.

How many times do you think Janet Arvizo threatened you and your daughter?

The Michael Jackson Allegations

I'd say about eight, nine times.

Are there any other -- are there any other things you haven't described that she said to you when she threatened you?

She just said she was scared for me and my daughter; that she didn't want to see anything bad happen to us, because she considered me her dear friend.

Did you consider her to be your dear friend?

Not at all. I was just doing my job." [3]

Holzer further testified that when she tried to take Janet to an independent medical examination for her alleged injuries Janet threw a tantrum. When they were in the driveway heading to that examination „*she threw herself down on the ground, started kicking and screaming, carrying on that the doctor was the devil, and the nurses were the devil, and they were all out to get her. And I explained to her that they were only asking her standard questions that they ask in an Independent Medical Examination; that -- the history of her injuries and how she obtained the injuries. And she was very defensive. And they asked us to leave because she was so irate.*" [3]

Holzer also testified that Janet had told her that her kids went to acting classes because she wanted them to be good actors so that she could tell them what to say and how to behave.

„What did Janet Arvizo tell you about her children learning to act?

She said she wanted them to become good actors so she could tell them what to say and how to behave.

Did she ever say anything to you about Gavin getting his stories straight in the J.C. Penney case?

Yes.

What did she say?

She said she wasn't worried. This was at the Independent Medical Examination for psychiatric of all three, Gavin, Star and Janet. And when we were at the doctor's office, she was very concerned about them completing general forms, you know, like, "Generally do you feel happy?" "Generally do you feel sad?" You know, "What kind of days" -- "How do you feel when you wake up?" Those kind of forms. And she refused to have the children fill them out. And then she wanted to participate in the medical examinations with the doctor and the children. And I asked her, you know, I said, you know, "It doesn't work that way." You know, "The doctor sees the children on their own." You know, "You can't go in there." And she said, "Well, I'm pretty sure Gavin will get the story straight, but I'm not sure Star will remember what we practiced and what I told him to say." [3]

About the kids Holzer also said: „*They would come into the office. Usually they would pop in*

The Michael Jackson Allegations

every once in a while and the children would come in my office, and sit on my lap, and draw me pictures, tell me how much they loved me, and write little notes and post it on my pin board, and say how great I was, and that I was helping their family.” [3] This mirrors their behavior with Michael Jackson and other celebrities that they were trying to get sympathy and support from.

Holzer also testified that about three or four months before her testimony at Jackson's trial Janet Arvizo called her again telling her that she wanted to be friends with her. [3]

Welfare fraud

Not only Janet Arvizo lied in the J.C. Penney case, but she also committed welfare fraud when she collected \$18,782 in welfare payments claiming that she was indigent while failing to disclose the fact that she just had got a \$152,500 settlement from J.C. Penney and she had \$30,000 on her bank account. According to the felony complaint against her, she committed these fraudulent acts, including lying under oath, between November 15, 2001 (so she started two months after the settlement with J.C. Penney and six months after she and David Arvizo had separated) and March 31, 2003. [5]

At Jackson's trial the jury was not informed of this, because Janet Arvizo invoked her 5th amendment right on this issue and there was an agreement between the prosecution and the defense that they were not going to ask her about it in the presence of the jury.

Nevertheless, on August 23, 2005, only a little more than two months after Jackson's acquittal, Janet Arvizo was charged with five counts of welfare fraud and perjury [5]. She pleaded “no contest” and was eventually sentenced to paying a fine and doing community service time. After she had complied with it, her felony judgement was reduced to a misdemeanor in 2007 [6].

A history of manipulative behavior and grifting

The Arvizo family also has a history of grifting and cunning, manipulative behavior.

As a defense witness at Jackson's trial, actor and comedian **Chris Tucker** testified on May 24-25, 2005 about his encounters with the Arvizos. Long before Michael Jackson even came into the picture, Tucker met the Arvizo family at the Laugh Factory where he was approached by the father, David Arvizo who told him that they were going to have a benefit for his son who was dying of cancer. Tucker met Gavin at the benefit. The actor felt sorry for Gavin and he befriended the family. A couple of days after the benefit, Gavin called Tucker on the phone and told him that they had not raised any money at the fund-raiser and that they needed money for his medical bills. Because of that Tucker wired money to Gavin's foundation. [8.]

In the hindsight, however, it turned out that it was not true that the family did not raise any money at the fund-raiser. At Jackson's trial Gavin admitted that they had raised money, but he denied that he asked Tucker for money by telling him that they had not raised any money.

“Do you remember ever telling Chris Tucker that you didn't make any money from the fund-raiser.

No. Well, what fund-raising.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Fund-raiser for you at The Laugh Factory.

No, because we did make money at The Laugh Factory.

Yes. So you never told Chris Tucker, “We didn’t make any money from the fund-raiser”.

Why would I say that when we did. No, I never said that.

Okay. Do you recall yourself asking Chris Tucker for money.

No.” [7]

Tucker, however, had a totally different recollection of what happened.

“I was asked a few days later to give some money, because they didn’t raise any money. They didn’t make any money. So I did. I wired some money to their foundation.

Okay. Who told you they hadn’t raised any money at the benefit?

Gavin told me, and his father -- well, Gavin told me. Gavin told me.

So Gavin told you they didn’t make a dime at that fund-raiser?

Yeah, they said they didn’t make any money, and they needed some money. They couldn’t – you know, they needed some money. So --

And you then wired them some money?

Yeah, I wired them some money.

How much did you send them; do you know?

It was probably 1500 or more.” [8]

Tucker also testified that because he felt sorry for Gavin he took him and his family to the Knotts Berry Farm theme park, shopping and sports games. In 2001 the family visited him in Las Vegas on the set of his movie Rush Hour 2. Tucker testified that while he expected the family to stay for just a couple of days they overstayed their welcome and they stayed for a week or two, all at Tucker's expense. The kids were very undisciplined and were disturbing the work on the set of the movie so much that Tucker's people asked him to keep them away. [8.]

It was on the set that Gavin told Tucker about having Michael Jackson’s phone number and knowing that Tucker was a big fan of the singer he offered him to put him on the phone with Jackson and he did. That was the first time Tucker and Jackson talked to each other. [8.]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Jackson offered them to visit his Neverland Ranch and Tucker and the Arvizo family visited it several times in the next two years, including having a birthday party for Tucker's son there, but Jackson himself was almost never there.

In his testimony Tucker described Gavin as "*sophisticated*", "*smart*" and "*cunning*" and Gavin's brother Star as "*definitely cunning*" - on contrary to the image of the naïve, innocent, wholesome little kids that the prosecution tried to portray them. Tucker stated that he felt the kids were using Gavin's illness to emotionally manipulate him but tried to ignore that feeling because he felt sorry for Gavin.

"And explain what you mean by that.

He was really smart, and he was cunning at times, but I always overlooked it because I felt sorry for him. But I knew he was -- he was a little kid, but he was cunning. And his brother Star was definitely cunning.

When you say "cunning," explain what you're saying.

Always say stuff like, "Chris, let me have this. Let me have this. Let me get this. Come on, I'm not feeling good," stuff like that.

And I knew it was going a little too far, but I always said, "He's sick," you know, "He's got a lot of problems, family problems," so I always just overlooked it." [9]

The actor even said that he felt that he almost needed to check Star's pockets before they left his home whenever they visited him.

"When did you begin to think that Gavin was cunning?

When he approached me and was asking for more money, I knew that -- you know, I know -- I meet a lot of kids, and I knew that he -- he -- and the little things that he would say. And definitely Star. Star would say stuff all the time like, "You got too much stuff." And, "You don't need all this stuff." And -- but I would always ignore it, because I'm thinking I'm helping a kid with cancer, and it's all about, you know, that. But Star would always say cunning stuff, and would always -- I had to check -- almost check his pockets before he would leave my house, because I didn't really -- I never really trusted him. But I was always naive because I thought I was doing a good thing." [9]

Tucker testified that in February 2003, right after the Bashir documentary aired, Gavin called him on the phone to complain about how they were not able to get around due to the media hounding them, that they wanted to get away from California and that they wanted to find Michael Jackson. Tucker was just planning to visit his brother in Miami so he offered the Arvizo family to charter an airplane and take them with him to Miami where Jackson was also staying at the time. Tucker testified that the whole family was excited to see Michael Jackson. [8.]

Tucker stated that when they arrived in Miami he took Jackson aside and warned him about

The Michael Jackson Allegations

the mother Janet Arvizo because at the time he already felt suspicious about her and had an uneasy feeling about the family. Tucker's growing suspicion had to do with his own experiences with them. The Arvizo kids called him to tell him that their family could not get around and that they needed a car. Tucker loaned them a Toyota truck to use and he gave them the keys, but they lost them and then they kept calling Tucker's girlfriend Azja Pryor to replace the keys for them. By the time Tucker was not sure about the family's motives any more and was rather trying to distance himself, so he instructed his girlfriend not to give them the keys. Tucker also described a strange encounter with the mother when he first gave her the keys to his truck that made him uncomfortable and he also stated that the family's insistence on calling him a "brother" also made him very uncomfortable because he felt they were starting to cross certain lines.

"That's the point that I was -- I was going to give her (Janet Arvizo) this truck, the loaner, this truck to drive, but I got real uncomfortable when I was getting ready to loan the truck because she started frantically crying, like -- not crying like something normal, but it was like something was wrong with her. And I got really, really -- something in my spirit just didn't feel right about it, and I felt -- I said, "Oh, I'm going too far," because -- and I knew she was -- something mentally wasn't right. So I gave her the keys. But then I didn't feel -- I didn't feel comfortable about it at all.

[...]

Do you remember what she said?

She was just, like, you know, "Chris," you know, "you like a brother," and the "brother" thing again, and crying and -- just frantically crying and stuff. And then I was, like, "Something" -- you know, "Something ain't right," you know."
[9]

Tucker's testimony that the family started calling him a "brother" is also relevant in pointing out that it was this family's habit of calling the celebrities they befriended "brother", "father", "sister", apparently in an effort to cajole them. This is relevant because at a point the prosecution and the media tried to suggest that the fact Gavin and Star called Jackson "dad" in the letters and cards that they bombarded him with were somehow a sign of an ulterior motive *by Jackson*. However, the family called such nicknames several celebrities that they befriended. In actuality, Tucker testified that when they arrived at the hotel in Miami where Jackson stayed, Janet Arvizo and her kids kept calling him "brother" and Jackson "father" which, again, made Tucker feel uneasy because he felt it was too much.

"Do you recall Janet saying anything about Michael Jackson being a father to their family?

Oh, yes. Oh, yes. That was right before we went in the room. She was frantically -- the same thing. Michael's the father. I'm the brother. And that's when -- that's when I told Michael. I took him in the room, and I was trying to talk to him. I said, "Something ain't right." Because I was never around her that much until that point. They came to the house and then in Miami. And I said, "Mike, something ain't right."

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Do you recall in Miami whether Gavin was saying anything about Michael Jackson being a father?

Yes.

And what was Gavin saying?

He was repeating the same thing. It was -- it was -- she was saying "father," and Gavin was saying "father," and he was saying I was a brother, and it was just getting to be a little bit too much."[9]

All this made Tucker gradually distance himself from the family.

Another comedian that the Arvizo family befriended was **George Lopez**. On March 28, 2005, as a prosecution witness, Lopez testified at Jackson's trial that he had initially met the Arvizo family at the Laugh Factory. When Gavin fell ill with cancer the mother Janet Arvizo called him on the phone to inform him about it. Lopez then went to the hospital to visit Gavin. The father David Arvizo complained to Lopez that they did not have any money and from then on Lopez regularly gave the Arvizos small amounts of money and gifts to help them and on one occasion he took them to shopping. The prosecution tried emphasize that it was the father, David Arvizo who was asking for the money, not the mother Janet Arvizo.

Lopez further testified that David Arvizo had asked him to organize a fund-raiser for Gavin at the Laugh Factory but at this time it became apparent to him that it was not about Gavin's health but about the money.

"What is it that he was asking you to do?"

He was asking me to take care of a fund-raiser for Gavin, which I was more than happy to do. But then it became apparent to me that it wasn't about Gavin anymore. I was about how Gavin was and how he was feeling. I wasn't about money for Gavin. And it seemed to me at that time that David Arvizo was more interested in the money than he was about his son.

All right. Was David working at the time, to your knowledge?

To my knowledge, I don't think he was working.

Did he ever express to you any concerns about insurance, medical insurance?

I was always led to believe that they had no insurance whatsoever." [10]

(Emphasis added.)

Again, the prosecution tried to emphasize that it was David Arvizo making these requests, not Janet, as if Janet Arvizo was not involved in such manipulative behavior and frauds on her own (see the part above about her welfare fraud, for example).

Lopez's statement that he was led to believe that the family had no insurance is significant because, as you will see below, the family did have a good health insurance that covered all

The Michael Jackson Allegations

of Gavin's medical costs, so they did not actually need all this money that they requested from celebrities and that they were trying to get through fund-raisers by telling people that they were in need of money to cover Gavin's medical bills. On cross-examination by Michael Jackson's attorney Thomas Mesereau, Lopez also told that the family had never told him about their lawsuit against J.C. Penney either. [10]

According to Lopez, David Arvizo was pushing him to organize the fund-raiser and after a while he became *"pretty aggressive"*, calling Lopez at all the times about when it would happen and about the amount of money that they would raise. The last time Lopez saw David Arvizo was when the latter approached him outside of a restaurant and *"asked me aggressively what was the deal with the fund-raiser. And I told him that I didn't think it was going to happen. And he said, 'What do you mean it's not going to happen?' And I said, 'It doesn't look like it's going to happen.' And then he — his tone changed, and we had words, and that was the last time I ever saw him."* [10]

In his testimony Lopez also described an incident when Gavin left his wallet in his house (in a room where he was not supposed to go, by the way). Lopez found it and he returned it to the Arvizo family, but he later learnt that David Arvizo told Jamie Masada, a mutual comedian friend they had from the Laugh Factory, that Lopez stole \$300 from Gavin's wallet. This contributed to Lopez cutting ties with the family, according to his testimony. On cross-examination by Michael Jackson's attorney Thomas Mesereau, Lopez additionally told about that incident that he later learnt that Masada compensated David Arvizo for the "stolen" \$300 which upset Lopez because he felt it indicated that Masada believed the Arvizos over him. [10]

Lopez further stated that both Gavin and Star were asking him to buy gifts for them and the father, who was there with them, never intervened to stop them. [10]

Other than David Arvizo accusing Lopez of stealing from Gavin, another reason for the comedian's distancing himself from the family was that David Arvizo *"got kind of nasty"* when Lopez's wife confronted him about his constant requests for money. Lopez himself also had a heated confrontation with David Arvizo and then Lopez cut off all his relationships with the family.

"Okay. David tried to make you feel guilty about not helping Gavin at that point, didn't he?"

Um, yes. At the point of May 5th, he did.

And you told him basically he's an extortionist, correct?

I did.

That wasn't a pleasant conversation, was it?

It was not.

Okay.

And I don't use big words like that, you know.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

(Laughter.)

All right. Now, after you called him an extortionist, what happened next?

You know, it was pretty — it was a pretty heated exchange. And after that, he left. And, you know, I got — I got to be honest with you, after that, I had no conversations with Gavin or any of the Arvizos after May 5th of that day.” [10]

Another comedian, **Jay Leno** had only a brief contact with the Arvizos before he cut them off. Leno testified at Jackson’s trial on May 24, 2005 and told the jury that in about 2000 it was fellow comedian Lousie Palanker who asked him to call this cancer stricken child, Gavin Arvizo in the hospital. He did and talked to him, his brother Star and his mother Janet on the phone on one occasion. Leno noted that the boy sounded “*overly effusive for a 12-year-old*” [11], overboard with the praises he showered on Leno. He also felt that Gavin sounded “*very adult-like*” [11]. According to his testimony, he even told Palanker afterwards: “*What’s the story here? This*” -- “*This doesn’t sound like a 12-year-old. This sounds like an adult person.*” It seemed -- I -- I think the words I used was, “*It seemed a little scripted in his speech.*” And then she said to me, you know, “*That’s just the way he is. He wants to be a comic, so he writes everything out before he says it, and then he kind of reads it. And I said, “Oh, okay.” Well, that sort of made sense at the time.*” [11] Gavin started to send Leno messages and trying to reach him again, but according to Leno this was unusual from a child. He got annoyed by Gavin’s messages and asked Palanker to make him stop and that was the end of his brief contact with the family. He never personally met them.[11]

Although the Arvizos often indicated or straight up told people that they were in need of money to pay Gavin’s medical bills, in reality the family had an insurance which covered all of Gavin’s medical expenses. This did not stop them from trying to solicit money from not only celebrities but also from regular people, using Gavin’s illness for sympathy.

On May 23, 2005 **Connie Keenan**, editor of the Mid Valley News, a community newspaper in the City of El Monte, testified at Michael Jackson’s trial about how Janet Arvizo manipulated her newspaper and its readers for money. She told that one day in 2000 Janet Arvizo called them and asked them to run a story about Gavin’s illness and ask their readers to donate money for him. Keenan was not sure about running the story, because it was not in the profile of the paper but she eventually had an intern, Christie Causer write an article about it, although she was suspicious about the money Janet Arvizo claimed Gavin’s treatment cost. For example, she claimed that one chemotherapy injection cost more than \$12,000. The story appeared in the newspaper and then Janet Arvizo asked them to run it for a second time, because they did not raise enough money from the first article. Keenan a couple of months later called the Kaiser Permanente Hospital that treated Gavin and found out that she and her readers had been “*duped*”, as she put it, because Gavin’s medical bills were fully covered by insurance. [12]

Janet Arvizo admitted in her testimony that all of their medical costs had been covered by insurance, but she denied being aware of anyone donating money to them to cover medical expenses. When asked about that particular request that she made to the Mid Valley News for donations to cover medical bills she gave vague and elusive answers.

“Did you withdraw thousands of dollars from that account?

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Yes, I sure did.

Was any of that money used for medical expenses?

No, there was no need for medical expenses in the hospital, because everything was covered through Kaiser.

Okay. And were you ever aware that anyone donated money to that account to help with medical expenses?

No.

Now, you've told the jury you told someone at the Mid Valley News about \$1200 per type of treatment, correct?*

And I was expressing to her that – that thank God our family is experiencing a lot of miracles, and that was covered.

And you never mentioned the word “chemotherapy” to that person, true?

I think I did. It was -- it was a little story about my son being ill.

Did you ever mention the cost of chemotherapy to Miss Causer?

MR. ZONEN: I'm going to object as asked and answered.

THE COURT: Overruled. You may answer.

THE WITNESS: I think what I was telling her was a story complete about the miracles that we were experiencing. That's it.” [13]

(*In her testimony Janet Arvizo claimed that she had told the Mid Valley News that one chemotherapy injection cost \$1200 not \$12,000, however, Connie Keenan in her testimony was positive that Janet Arvizo said \$12,000 and Keenan said that she even re-checked the tape that Christie Causer made of the interview with Janet Arvizo to verify it.)

Wholesome, innocent, naïve kids?

The prosecution tried to portray Gavin and Star Arvizo as wholesome, innocent little kids who were naïve about sexuality, had never cussed and had never drunk alcohol before Jackson allegedly corrupted them. Gavin and the prosecution also made sure to emphasize Gavin and his family's religiousness. Apparently this was an appeal to the emotions of a presumably conservative Santa Barbara jury and to the religious sentiments of the American general public. However, as we heard more and more testimonies about the family and the kids' past and their general behavior it became evident that this was a false portrayal of them.

In the previous chapters you could already read about the lies and changing stories that these kids and their mother had no problem telling under oath in this very case which in itself flies in the face of this “wholesome” portrayal, but there is more to tell about whether the Arvizo boys were really as innocent, naïve and wholesome as portrayed by themselves and the prosecution.

In the chapter [**The Changing Content of the Allegations and Contradictions**](#) you could

The Michael Jackson Allegations

read about how Gavin initially claimed that it was his grandmother who had told him that men have to masturbate, because otherwise they might rape women. By the time the case went to court Gavin claimed it was Michael Jackson who had told him that and when he was caught in the contradiction by Jackson's attorney Thomas Mesereau, to get out of it Gavin claimed that both Jackson and his grandmother had told him the same thing. This is important because Gavin's story was that this was how Jackson introduced him to masturbation and the molestation. He also claimed that before Jackson introduced him to masturbation and pornography he had no idea what they were and he acted as if he was a sexually clueless little boy before Jackson had allegedly corrupted him at the age of 13. However, there have been several accounts by people who knew them and other evidence which refuted this notion about the Arvizo boys.

Carol Lamere has known both Michael Jackson and the Arvizos independently for years before the Arvizos even met the singer. She used to work for Jackson as a hair stylist. Independently from that, she met the Arvizos in the mid-1990's when Janet Arvizo enrolled her kids in dancing lessons at a studio run by a friend of Lamere's, Arlene Kennedy.

In interviews that she gave to private investigators in 2004, among other things, she stated that the Arvizo kids had serious behavioral problems before they even met Michael Jackson. Specifically she described Star Arvizo as a "*horny nine year old*" and told about how at that age the boy was flirting with adult women in an "*unnatural manner*". She recalled an occasion in a restaurant when Star tried to pick up the waitress by offering her a \$5 tip. Then Star demanded the waitress' phone number and became vocally angered and irate when she refused, demanding his money back. Lamere also said that Star had a crush on her as well. [14]

Lamere also told that in 2000 the older sister of the Arvizo boys, Davellin lived with her for a while because she did not get along with her mother. Davellin told her stories about their mother physically abusing them, forcing them to shoplift and making them tell lies – among others about their father David sexually molesting Davellin. Lamere described the Arvizo children as "*trained con-artists*". [14]

Two young cousins of Michael Jackson, **Simone and Rijo Jackson** (siblings), were often present at Neverland while the Arvizos were there in February-March 2003. At the time Rijo was 10 years old and Simone was 14. Rijo testified at Jackson's trial in 2005 that on one occasion he stayed with Gavin and Star Arvizo in their guest unit and the Arvizo boys (who were 2-3 years older than Rijo) were watching an adult program on TV with nude women and started to masturbate under the sheets. They invited Rijo to join them, but he refused and ran away. [15] Rijo also recalled hearing the Arvizo boys talk about girls all of the time. [14]

Rijo testified that he had witnessed the Arvizo boys steal money and other items from the office of the house manager, Jesus Salas and from a drawer where a chef kept his belongings. [15] According to Rijo, looking through drawers and paperwork is how the Arvizo boys found out the various combinations to keypad locks on doors throughout the ranch, including the wine cellar. Rijo stated that he had seen the Arvizo boys frequently go to the wine cellar, although he could not tell if they were drinking because he had never joined them. He also stated that Gavin and Star had gone to Michael Jackson's room several times while the singer was not there [14].

Rijo's sister Simone testified in 2005 that one night she had witnessed Gavin and Star Arvizo steal wine from the kitchen. When Simone saw that she told them they were not allowed to

The Michael Jackson Allegations

do it, but they told her to be quiet and not to say anything to anyone [16]. Michael Jackson was not present [14].

Rijo and Simone's testimonies go against Gavin's testimony in which he claimed that he had never gone to the wine cellar and drunk alcohol without Jackson being present.

Did you ever go down there and drink any alcohol without Mr. Jackson being present.

No. [17]

In his testimony Gavin also claimed that before Jackson gave him wine he had never drunk alcohol outside of church [18].

No independent witness (ie. someone who was not a member of the Arvizo family) had ever claimed to have seen Jackson serve alcohol to the Arvizo boys. On the other hand, there have been witnesses who saw the Arvizo boys with alcohol and in the wine cellar on their own while Jackson was not there.

Simone also testified that while she was in the pool one time, Gavin and Star repeatedly urged her to take off her bathing suit top. When she refused *"Star called me a pussy and a bitch because I wouldn't take off my top. I called my mom and told her about it. They were really rude and wouldn't leave me alone."* [14] Simone's mother, Peaches Jackson called Michael Jackson's bodyguard, Chris Carter who in turn informed Michael Jackson about the incident. Michael Jackson asked Star to apologize to Simone telling him *"I can't make you, but I'm asking you to apologize."* [14] According to Simone, Star did apologize, but avoided her from that point forward. Simone also said that she had witnessed the Arvizo boys steal a laminated \$1000 bill from Jackson's desk in his office. [14]

Gavin also had an e-mail address with America Online, gblade2000@aol.com where his password was "Sexy". [14]

Other guests and staff at Neverland also reported a disruptive behavior by the Arvizo boys.

Julio Avila, an employee of Michael Jackson who operated the amusement park rides at Neverland, stated in a declaration that he found the Arvizo boys to be *"troublemakers"* and that *"the boys behaved as if they owned the place"* [19]. He stated that both Gavin and Star had spat at him and other employees while on the rides. They would also drop their shoes from the top of the ferris wheel trying to hit park personnel. They continued to misbehave even after they had been asked by several employees to stop. On one occasion the boys dangerously started a ride by themselves, although they were not allowed to. While confronted about operating the machinery without adult supervision they were belligerent and sarcastic. Avila also said that he had observed Star Arvizo writing the words "You suck dick" on a wall in one of the control rooms in the park. Avila stated that he had also witnessed Star bringing pornographic magazines to the park and he had hidden them in various places, including the control box of the park stereo and on the rides. When Avila asked him where did he got the magazines from Star told him he brought them from home [19]. Another Neverland employee **Maria Gomez** testified on May 16, 2005 that she had seen adult magazines in Star Arvizo's backpack while she had been once cleaning the guest unit where they had been staying [20]. An ex-employee of Jackson, **Kiki Fournier** testified as a prosecution witness that Star Arvizo once had pulled a knife on her in the kitchen, although

The Michael Jackson Allegations

she considered it a joke [21]. **Shane Meridith**, a security officer working for Jackson at Neverland testified that once he had witnessed the Arvizo brothers in the wine cellar with an open bottle of wine that was half empty. They were laughing and giggling. Michael Jackson was not there [22].

Even testimonies by prosecution witnesses who were put on the stand to vouch for the Arvizo family's integrity backfired at the Arvizos.

Louise Palanker was another one of the several comedians who the Arvizos befriended at the Laugh Factory. As a prosecution witness, under direct examination by prosecutor Gordon Auchincloss she portrayed Janet Arvizo and her children as honest and genuine people. The prosecution's strategy was to blame every less than honest thing that the family provably was involved in on David Arvizo, the estranged father and separate Janet Arvizo and their children from those actions. Their narrative was that it was David who forced his otherwise "honest" family into these dubious things. This was refuted by evidence about actions that can clearly be attributed to Janet and/or her children and show that Janet and their children did not have to be under David's influence to commit such dishonest acts (see the welfare fraud that Janet committed after she and David had already separated, Janet's actions in the J.C. Penney case as per Mary Holzer's testimony, the children's and their mother's demonstrable lies and changing stories in this very case, their manipulative behavior to celebrities even after Janet and David had separated etc.).

However, true to the prosecution's narrative, on direct examination Palanker was quick to point her finger at David Arvizo whenever she had to concede to anything that would put the Arvizo family in a bad light. For example, she told about how when Gavin underwent chemotherapy she gave the Arvizos \$20,000 to renovate a sterile room in the house of Gavin's grandmother that he needed to recover. Palanker wrote them two separate checks for \$10,000. Palanker pointed out that it was David Arvizo who she handed the check to. She said that she was not pressured by the family into giving them the money, it was all her decision, but she also stated that *"very often from that point forward"* [23] David Arvizo kept asking her for money for such things as paying the rent and utilities. According to Palanker, David claimed that they had already spent the money she had given them and they needed more money. Palanker admitted that she did not believe this was true, but again, the prosecution's and Palanker's narrative was that this was all just David Arvizo. Palanker admitted that she had later learnt that the family had actually paid the contractor only \$800 for the renovation – just his bare costs, but they never had paid him for the labor. The contractor eventually decided that he would write off the rest of his fee as a gift to Gavin, although this was not what he and the family had agreed upon previously. [23]

On cross examination, however, it came out that in an earlier police interview Palanker's opinion about the Arvizos, and not just David Arvizo, was less favorable. For example, in an interview with the sheriff's investigators on January 7, 2005 Palanker stated that the Arvizo family was *"out of balance"* and that she felt that *"the kids collaborated in what she [Janet Arvizo] was saying. I just wanted to be out of it."* [23] This was in the context of her \$10,000 check to the family. It is curious why she would say the kids collaborated in what Janet Arvizo was saying if she felt that David Arvizo was the mastermind behind all the schemes. Also the two \$10,000 checks that she gave to David Arvizo were deposited into the bank account of the mother of Janet Arvizo. Palanker was not aware of this until a private investigator for the defense informed her about it during the preparations for the trial. This suggests that Janet Arvizo was involved in these things just like David Arvizo was.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

In the same police interview Palanker also stated *“This family can be as whacky as they want to be”* and *“I know that Janet’s unbalanced. I think she’s totally bipolar”* and *“Janet needs to see a psychologist”* [23]. She also admitted that she felt that the children were coached to ask her for a laptop computer as a gift. She also said in her police interview in January 2005 that *“these people [the Arvizos] are teaching their kids to lie”* [23]. On the stand she explained that it was not her opinion of them, but that of George Lopez and his wife - as if that would make it better.

In the same interview Palanker also stated *“They would go over to his house anytime they encountered a celebrity if they felt to be important. They would go over the top with cards and phone calls. And at first I thought, after I found out what — maybe they saw celebrities as a lifeline to get out of her [Janet Arvizo’s] situation — to get her out of her situation that she had gotten into at 16.”* [23] Meaning that Janet Arvizo was a teen mother at the age of 16.

It has to be noted, and perhaps this explains Palanker’s change of tone between her police interview in January and testimony in March 2005, that Palanker had a romantic relationship with one of the case’s prosecutors, Ron Zonen. A few years later they eventually got married.

Another prosecution witness, **Cynthia Ann Bell**, a flight attendant for XTra Jet International testified about her experiences with Michael Jackson and the Arvizo family on the airplane that took them from Miami back to California in early February 2003. Besides Michael Jackson, his children, Janet, Gavin, Star and Davellin Arvizo there were a number of other associates of the singer on that plane. The prosecution made much of the fact that Jackson drank wine from a soda can on the plane and the Arvizo boys claimed that Jackson gave them alcohol from that soda can but Bell testified that she never saw Jackson give alcohol to the kids. In actuality, Bell testified that Jackson’s intention with drinking the wine from a soda can was exactly that he did not want children to see him drink alcohol. The singer regularly flew with that flight company and Bell testified that he usually drank wine on the plane because he was a very nervous flyer. He usually drank alcohol from *“a plastic thermal, like, mug-looking thing”* [24] but on that flight there was not any available and it was Bell’s idea to put the wine in a soda can instead. Bell testified that she had never seen Jackson behave inappropriately with any child. She had nothing, but nice things to say about the singer.

“Well, he’s very soft-spoken, and typically because of — he’s very polite and very soft-spoken, I would have to kneel and gain eye contact with Mr. Jackson. And, you know, he is very, you know — you know, would touch my arm when we were communicating. I don’t mean touchy-feely like in a weird sort of manner. Just sort of a polite, gaining eye contact, you know, maintaining, you know, communication that way.

You never found Mr. Jackson to be rude or impolite, did you?

Absolutely not, neither him or his children.” [24]

She had the polar opposite impression of the Arvizo children and specifically Gavin. She described Gavin as *“very rude”* [24] and she further stated *“The individual was unusually rude, discourteous, very — I remember him talking about, “I got this watch from Michael, and it’s really expensive,” and just — altogether just not — just loud, obnoxious, like, “Serve me my food. This isn’t warm. This isn’t the way it’s supposed to be.” And he was just unintelligent. It was embarrassing to have him on board, actually.”* [24] and *“Well, he was*

The Michael Jackson Allegations

just incredibly rude. And I find that behavior unintelligent, and strange.” [25]

Bell also made it clear that Gavin had behaved in this unacceptable way during the whole flight and that his mother, although witnessed her son’s behavior, did nothing to discipline him.

“BY MR. MESEREAU: How soon after Gavin got on that plane did the rude behavior start?

Immediately.

And when you say “immediately,” where was Gavin when the rude behavior began?

When he came up the stairs to enter the aircraft.

And what was the first rude thing he did?

He threw his book bag at me and started ordering me around the cabin as to where he wanted placement of his items.

And how did you respond to that?

Polite and efficiently.

Was his mother near him when he began the rude behavior?

Yes.

And if you recall, where was his mother when Gavin began this rude behavior?

She entered the aircraft behind him.

Was it obvious to you that she could see his rude behavior?

Absolutely.

What’s the next rude thing you recall him doing on the plane?

He was just very demanding throughout the entire flight, with wanting to get his needs met, whether it was, you know, more ice in his orange soda, to no cole slaw on his plate with his chicken, more mashed potatoes. It seemed like nothing — his chicken wasn’t warm. He — you know, “I want a side of cole slaw. I don’t want it on the same plate.” Just unusual things, like just very — like, you can tell that, like, he was a newcomer to these sort of flights. Either you have people who are really polite or lovely, or you have people who are really demanding, and they feel like they need to be that way to make them feel important. I’m not sure why. But he was very demanding throughout the entire flight.” [25]

On redirect examination, prosecutor Gordon Auchincloss attempted to blame Gavin’s rude behavior somehow on Jackson by asking the question “*Did it seem odd to you that Mr. Jackson didn’t do anything to stop this young boy from being what you said was rude?*” [25],

The Michael Jackson Allegations

even though Gavin's mother was on the plane, witnessed her son's behavior and it was her place to discipline him, not anyone else's. Bell, however, pointed out that Jackson's own children were very well mannered and disciplined and that Jackson always intervened when they misbehaved.

"BY MR. AUCHINCLOSS: Does he [Michael Jackson] intervene when his children —

Absolutely. They're very well disciplined and polite." [25]

Bell also testified that while she had never served alcohol to the boys, she had served their older sister Davellin Arvizo alcohol on the plane although she too was still a minor – and that was because Davellin presented her with a fake identity document that stated she was over 21 years old. She stated firmly that she had never seen Jackson give alcohol to Davellin or the Arvizo boys. [24]

The Arvizo family and the prosecution attempted to spin Gavin's behavior that flew in the face of their "wholesome, innocent, naïve little boy" portrayal and suggest that he was just acting out as a result of Jackson's alleged sexual abuse of him. Gavin's sister Davellin, for example, told police investigators in the interviews that were conducted with the family in 2003, that Gavin was a "loving little boy" who only became aggressive and argumentative after their stay at Neverland, and Janet Arvizo claimed similar things [26]. Gavin's brother, Star Arvizo said in a deposition regarding the J.C. Penney incident that Gavin would not steal because he wanted to become a priest (even though he *did* steal in that incident) [27]. However, testimonies like Bell's clearly refute this because they show that Gavin was very disruptive and far from innocent and wholesome, even before the date of the alleged molestations.

According to the prosecution's Statement of Probable Cause, Star Arvizo also claimed to them about that flight that Jackson "was acting funny on the plane. Michael was poking others in the 'butt' with his foot. He was making crank calls on the plane to unknown people and asking, 'Does your pussy stink?'"[27]. Star also claimed that it was Jackson who taught them to curse and he wanted them to curse [27]. This behavior would be very uncharacteristic for Jackson. By every account, he was the polar opposite of this description and it was very important for him to teach children to be polite and well-mannered and speak nicely. His own children were a testament to that. However, the behavior described by Star, as you could see above, was very much characteristic *for the Arvizo boys*. It appears that a lot of their allegations were made up of stories in which they projected their own behavior and character onto Jackson.

Also well before date of the alleged abuse by Jackson, Gavin had a reputation of being argumentative and impudent with teachers in school. During his cross-examination at the trial, he had this exchange with Jackson's attorney Thomas Mesereau.

"I don't really remember what I said. It probably happened, because a lot of times there was -- I would stand up to the teacher. A lot of the kids would kind of congratulate me, and then --

You were kind of a hero for standing up to teachers.

Sometimes.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

[...]

Okay. Did you have problems with your conduct --

Yes.

-- in Mr. Finklestein's class.

Yes.

Please tell the jury what those problems were.

Same problems with every other teacher.

And what do you mean by that.

I was kind of argumentative sometimes, and I shouldn't have been. I didn't like the way he taught because I wasn't learning anything.

And what did you do in his class that caused a disruption.

I would argue sometimes about the way he would teach, and that he wouldn't use our textbooks. And I asked him why we have these textbooks, if he didn't let us use them.

And were you disciplined at all.

Yes, sometimes he would send me out of class." [18]

This line of questioning does not only show Gavin's behavior problems way before the alleged abuse, but also that he was not the kind of child who would have been easy to victimize. Gavin could not hide his brazenness even on the stand during the Michael Jackson case.

"BY MR. MESEREAU: Okay. Do you remember when you were in front of the Santa Barbara Grand Jury, [lead prosecutor] Mr. Sneddon told you there was an order that you not talk to the media, and your response was, "Oh, man, I was going to have a press conference". Do you remember that.

That was probably a joke.

That was a joke.

Yeah.

So you're in front of the Santa Barbara Grand Jury talking about this case and you're telling a joke.

Yes." [7]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Sources:

- [1] Memorandum regarding the use of J.C. Penney issues in defense opening statement (February 28, 2005)
<http://www.sbscpublicaccess.org/docs/ctdocs/022805memojcp.pdf>
- [2] Janet Arvizo's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (April 18, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [3] Mary Holzer's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (May 24, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [4] Janet Arvizo's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (April 15, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [5] Felony Complaint for Arrest Warrant Against Janet Arvizo (August 23, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2017/05/janet-arvizo-welfare-fraud-charges.pdf>
- [6] Mom of Jackson's Accuser: I'm Only a Small Fraud (TMZ, August 1, 2007)
<http://www.tMZ.com/2007/08/01/mom-of-jacksons-accuser-im-only-a-small-fraud/>
- [7] Gavin Arvizo's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (March 15, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [8] Chris Tucker's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (May 24, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [9] Chris Tucker's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (May 25, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [10] George Lopez's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (March 28, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [11] Jay Leno's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (May 24, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [12] Connie Keenan's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (May 23, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [13] Janet Arvizo's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (April 18, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [14] Notice of Motion and Motion to Admit Evidence of Gavin Arvizo and Star Arvizo's Sexual Conduct (March 11, 2005)
<http://www.sbscpublicaccess.org/docs/ctdocs/030105motadmevidgsa.pdf>
- [15] Rijo Jackson's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (May 18, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [16] Simone Jackson's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (May 17, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [17] Gavin Arvizo's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (March 10, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [18] Gavin Arvizo's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (March 14, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

The Michael Jackson Allegations

[19] Motion to exclude or limit the testimony of witnesses Julio Avila and Prudence Brando (May 23, 2005)
<http://www.sbscpublicaccess.org/docs/ctdocs/052305motexclbrando.pdf>

[20] Maria Gomez's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (May 16, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[21] Kiki Fournier's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (March 17, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[22] Shane Meridith's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (May 16, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[23] Louise Palanker's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (March 22, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[24] Cynthia Ann Bell's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (March 29, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[25] Cynthia Ann Bell's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (March 30, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[26] Statement of Probable Cause (filed by the Prosecution on November 17, 2003)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/plugin-111703stmtpc.pdf>

[27] Star Arvizo's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (March 8, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

Lawyers being hired and the formation of the allegations

On March 24, 2003 Janet Arvizo formally hired William Dickerman as her attorney and Dickerman began writing letters to Jackson's attorney, Mark Geragos on her behalf demanding the return of furniture, clothes, documents and various other items which were put in a storage locker after the Arvizos moved out of their Los Angeles apartment on March 1-2. The storage locker was rented in Bradley Miller's name, who was a private investigator working for Geragos. There were numerous back and forth letters between the two attorneys about the issue of where and how the Arvizos would take possession of their belongings and who would pay the outstanding bill of the storage locker.

In his letters Dickerman also claimed that Jackson's people harassed and followed around the Arvizo family after they had left Neverland. However, nowhere in his letters there are claims of child molestation, claims of false imprisonment or claims of providing alcohol to a minor. From William Dickerman's cross-examination by Jackson's attorney, Thomas Mesereau:

Q. BY MR. MESEREAU: Nowhere in this letter of March 26th that you wrote to Mr. Geragos on behalf of the Arvizos is there any mention of alcohol, correct?

A. Correct. [1]

and

Q. Now, in this letter of March 26th to Mr. Geragos, there is no mention of the Arvizo family ever being falsely imprisoned, correct?

A. I believe that's correct.

Q. And in this letter of March 26th to Attorney Mark Geragos, there's no mention of the Arvizo family ever being kidnapped, correct?

A. Correct.

Q. In this letter of March 26th, 2003, to Mr. Geragos that you wrote, there's no mention of any extortion, right?

A. I believe that's correct. I haven't read this word for word, but it sounds right.

Q. Okay. When you sent this letter to Mr. Geragos on March 26th, 2003, two days after you had been retained by the Arvizos, did you ever call the police to complain about false imprisonment, kidnapping, molestation or alcohol?

A. No. [1]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

and

Q. In that letter, you never mention anything about molestation, correct?

A. That's correct. The only purpose of the letter was to get the items that I had written about before.

Q. In the April 3rd letter, 2003, you mention nothing about alcohol, correct?

A. That's correct.

Q. You mention nothing about false imprisonment, correct?

A. Correct.

Q. You mention nothing about any alleged kidnapping, correct?

A. That is correct.

Q. You mentioning nothing about any alleged extortion, correct?

A. Correct. [1]

Dickerman never mentioned any such complaint in his verbal communication with Geragos either:

Q. Now, in all of these conversations you had with Mark Geragos on behalf of the Arvizos, at no time did you mention to him anything about child molestation, correct?

A. Well, I don't think I had more than one or two conversations.

Q. And you never mentioned anything about child molestation, correct?

A. That's correct. That wasn't the purpose of the communication.

Q. You never mentioned anything about wine allegedly being given to any of the Arvizo children, correct?

A. Correct. There was no reason to do that. [1]

According to his own testimony, in early May of 2003 William Dickerman entered into a fee-sharing agreement with attorney Larry Feldman. Feldman in his own testimony confirmed that they had a fee-sharing agreement, although he suggested it came "not right at the beginning", but he did not specify when.

Larry Feldman was the same civil attorney who negotiated the settlement for the Chandlers in 1993-94. According to the Arvizos' later story, at this time Gavin had not yet disclosed his alleged abuse to anyone, including his mother or Dickerman, so at this time there were no allegations of child sexual abuse by the Arvizos yet. So why would Dickerman refer them to

The Michael Jackson Allegations

the same attorney who dealt with the first child abuse allegation against Jackson in 1993-94? In his 2005 testimony he explained it this way:

Q. All right. Did you file a lawsuit on behalf of Janet Arvizo or her family?

A. No.

Q. At some point in time, did you refer this matter to another attorney?

A. Yes.

Q. All right. Who was that other attorney?

A. Larry Feldman.

Q. And why did you do that?

A. Excuse me. I began representing the Arvizos in February. And by the time I met with Mr. Feldman, it was the beginning of May. In that period of time I had learned a lot of things. There were a lot of allegations being made, and I realized that the best thing for my clients to do, and for me personally as their attorney, was to get some expert input as to matters of Michael Jackson. The initial things I didn't think I really needed to do that with, but as things developed, I wanted to get some input. So I met with Mr. Feldman, whom, by the way, I knew — not "by the way." It was very important. I knew that he was — by reputation, he was one of the top trial lawyers in California, if not the United States.

And actually, previously, not knowing him except by reputation, I had referred a case to him, tried to refer a case to him that I could not handle for various reasons of an old client of mine. And I knew that he was the go-to guy with regard to Michael Jackson matters. Of course, I knew about the 1993 case, so I met with him, with the idea of picking his brain, actually, not to refer any matters to him. And afterwards, he met with them, and they — we all associated together. The Arvizos hired both him and me.

Q. All right. Have you filed a lawsuit as of this time on behalf of the Arvizos or anybody else?

A. No.

Q. Is it the case that the extent of your dealings with them so far, in terms of your communicating with others, has been for purposes of getting their property returned or dealing with the consequences of "Living with Michael Jackson," the documentary?

A. Yes.

Q. Do you have an understanding with Mr. Feldman that should there be a lawsuit in the future, that —

The Michael Jackson Allegations

THE COURT: They're not hearing you.

MR. ZONEN: I'm sorry?

THE COURT: Behind; these people can't hear you.

MR. ZONEN: I'm terribly sorry.

Q. Is there an arrangement that, should there be a lawsuit in the future, that there would be compensation for you in any form of a settlement even if you're not participating in that lawsuit? Do you know what I mean?

A. Well, we have an agreement.

Q. Okay.

A. It doesn't say anything about participation or not. We were retained together, and I have a fee-sharing arrangement with Mr. Feldman.

Q. Which means what?

A. Which means I will get — if there is such a lawsuit anytime in the future, that I will be entitled to a sliding scale, depending on whether there's a settlement or a judgment.

Q. Okay. What kind of lawsuit do you anticipate?

A. I don't anticipate any lawsuit. My understanding is that there isn't one in the offing. Nobody's talking about one. And I suppose if there were to be one — well, that would be speculation. [1]

It is not clear what Dickerman refers to when he says: “*In that period of time I had learned a lot of things. There were a lot of allegations being made*”, because according to the Arvizos’ own story, they had not disclosed anything about alleged child sexual abuse to Dickerman at that point yet. The claim is that they contacted Dickerman to get back their stuff from the storage locker, to stop alleged harassment by Jackson’s people and to deal with the Arvizos’ issues with the media – i.e. writing letters to various media outlets to make them stop using the Arvizos’ photos and footage from the Martin Bashir documentary, unless they could show that the Arvizos had given their legal consent.

Feldman had previously dealt with only one case regarding Michael Jackson and that was the allegations of child sexual abuse by the Chandler family in 1993. There is no other claim for him being “*the go-to guy with regard to Michael Jackson matters*”. But we are to believe that Dickerman contacted him just to help him get back some old furniture from a storage locker or to help him write letters to the media and they even entered a fee-sharing agreement over that? Because remember, this was all happening **before** Gavin first made allegations of sexual abuse against Michael Jackson.

After being referred to Feldman by Dickerman, Feldman sent the Arvizos to Dr. Stanley Katz, a psychologist whose field is child sexual abuse. Moreover, Dr. Katz is the same

The Michael Jackson Allegations

psychologist who evaluated Jordan Chandler in 1993 and with whom Larry Feldman first worked together in 1987. Dr. Katz was formerly also involved in the highly controversial McMartin preschool trial. He was the Director of Training and Professional Education at the Children's Institute International (CII). Kee McFarlane, who initially interviewed the McMartin children, worked under him. On cross-examination at Jackson's 2005 trial, Dr. Katz testified that he did the assessments of the McMartin children. [2] The CII's role in the McMartin case has been widely criticized in professional circles. Their interviewing techniques are considered coercive and manipulative which may lead children make false allegations about sexual abuse. [3]

Again, keep in mind that the claim is that the Arvizos were sent to Feldman regarding the storage locker, the alleged harassment and the media issues. Gavin testified in 2005 that the first person he ever made his allegations to, was Dr. Katz and that he had not made any such allegations to either Dickerman, Feldman or his mother. Yet, he was sent to the same lawyer who negotiated a \$15 million settlement for the Chandler family in 1993 in a child molestation lawsuit and this lawyer then sends him to a child abuse psychologist – the same one who had also evaluated the 1993 accuser.

In his testimony Feldman claimed that Dr. Katz reported his findings to him in a verbal conversation in his office. Next Feldman called the Arvizo family back in his office to tell them about it.

From Feldman's testimony:

Q. At some point in time, did you receive a report back from Dr. Katz about his initial contacts with the family?

A. Oral. I got an oral — I had an oral conversation with him.

Q. Do you recall whether it was in person or over the phone?

A. I think it was in person, quite frankly. I think he came to my office.

Q. Now, after you received this report, did you do anything?

A. Yes.

Q. What did you do?

A. I called the Arvizo family, Mrs. Arvizo and the three children, back into my office for a meeting.

Q. All right. And in that meeting, what was the topic discussed?

MR. MESEREAU: Objection to the extent it calls for hearsay.

MR. SNEDDON: All right.

THE COURT: Overruled. The subject matter only.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

THE WITNESS: The subject matter only. The subject matter was the options — well, what Dr. Katz had told me, and their — the options that existed at that point for that family. Different courses of action that were available to them at that point in time. [4]

This is yet another contradiction among the many contradictions in the Arvizos' story. In actuality, there are four differing accounts by the accusing side about how Janet Arvizo had found out about the alleged abuse of her son as shown in the chapter entitled **The Changing Content of the Allegations and Contradictions**. In another version, that can be found in the prosecution's Statement of Probable Cause document (November 17, 2003) it is claimed that Janet Arvizo did not learn about her son's alleged abuse until September 2003 when the police informed her about it after talking to her children. It actually does not make much sense that a child is sent to a psychologist who is a child abuse expert and the parent would not be informed of the alleged findings of that interview until months later, nor would she enquire about them.

Although Feldman represented the Arvizos, according to television and radio host Larry King, in a private conversation shortly before Jackson's trial began, Feldman admitted that he did not believe them, that he felt they only wanted money and that the mother was a "whacko". King testified about it at Jackson's trial, but due to the hearsay nature of his testimony the jury was not allowed to be present and to take his testimony into consideration. Earlier in April, in his own testimony Larry Feldman denied making these remarks.

It should be also noted that the California law that allowed the Chandlers to push the civil trial ahead of the criminal trial in 1993-94 was changed since – according to Santa Barbara District Attorney, Thomas Sneddon, directly because of what happened in the Chandler case. Because of that change, an accuser in a sexual assault case cannot pursue a civil lawsuit right away and the new law restricts a civil trial from preceding a criminal trial in a related matter. It is for this reason that the Arvizos could not use the same strategy as what the Chandlers did in 1993. Even though they went to civil lawyers, they had no choice but to begin a criminal trial first. And if they had won the criminal case that could have been used to secure an automatic win for them in a civil court too, as we have learnt from the cross-examination of William Dickerman by Thomas Mesereau:

Q. But you certainly know that if someone has a judgment of a criminal conviction against them for sexual assault, you can use that in a civil court to establish liability and not have to incur the expenses and the time involved in a trial on liability, right?

A. I would assume that to be the case.

Q. The only issue at that point would be how much money you get in a civil courtroom, correct?

A. I don't know if there are other issues, but I think as the judgment, that's true of any criminal action, that you don't then have to go, once again, and prove exactly what was proved with a higher burden of proof. [1]

Larry Feldman's testimony under cross-examination confirmed this:

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Q. Isn't it true that a judgment of conviction in a criminal case for anything related to child molestation could be dispositive in a parallel civil suit alleged for the same facts?

A. As long as it's a felony conviction, that's right.

Q. In other words, if Mr. Jackson were convicted of felony child molestation in this case, either Gavin Arvizo or Star Arvizo could use that conviction to essentially win a civil case regarding similar alleged facts against Mr. Jackson?

A. That's correct.

Q. If there were a conviction for felony child molestation in this case, and if Star or Gavin elected to sue in a civil case based on the similar alleged facts of sexual abuse, essentially the only issue remaining would be how much money you get, correct?

A. Probably. I think that's — it's close enough. I mean, nothing is that simple, as just stated. You know it as well as I. But essentially I think that's what would happen. [4]

Whatever Larry Feldman privately thought of the Arvizos, on June 13, 2003 he called Lieutenant Jeff Klapakis at the Santa Barbara Sheriff's Office and reported to him Gavin's allegations. The Santa Barbara Sheriff's Office was not new to the case. Like mentioned earlier, they were already investigating Jackson between February-April 2003 and their investigation had started before the alleged molestations even happened according to the Arvizos' final timeline. Klapakis was personally involved in that investigation since the beginning.

In July-September, 2003 investigators conducted several interviews with Gavin, Star, Davellin and Janet Arvizo. These interviews contain several contradictions with each other, as well as with the later versions of the Arvizos' story. I addressed those and other contradictions of the Arvizos' allegations earlier in this document.

According to Larry Feldman's testimony, in about August, September or October of 2003 (he was not sure of the exact month) he wrote a letter to the Arvizos saying he was not going to represent them. However, from his testimony we have learnt that later he and his law firm did represent various members of the family in related and other matters. For example, in 2004 on behalf of the Arvizos he filed a claim with the Los Angeles County Department of Child and Family Services, seeking monetary damages, because the DCFS's report from February 20, 2003 got leaked to the public.

On November 18, 2003 an arrest warrant was issued for Michael Jackson based on Gavin Arvizo's allegations. Jackson at the time was in Las Vegas, but at the news of his arrest he returned to California and turned himself in. He was then released on a 3 million dollar bail. The same day, in Jackson's absence, 70 sheriffs raided his home, the Neverland Ranch, to carry out a search warrant.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

The Prosecution's Statement of Probable Cause (November 17, 2003) document, on which the search and arrest warrants were based, reasoned the request for the warrants as follows:

"The mere fact of forty-five-year-old Jackson's three-year-long interest in the adolescent Gavin is corroborating in itself; it would strike a reasonable person as grossly abnormal. So is the way that interest manifested itself: endless telephone conversations with the youngster, inappropriate and relatively public touching, kissing, licking and cuddling of him; expensive gifts, cross-country flights, the relocation of the family from their modest quarters in Los Angeles, his efforts to have them take up residence in Brazil."
[5; page 66]

As you have seen earlier in this document, in reality Jackson did not have a "three-year-long interest in the adolescent Gavin" and "endless telephone conversations with the youngster". In actuality, Gavin himself complained on the stand that Jackson was actively avoiding him during those three years and did not take and return his phone calls. The so called "inappropriate, public touching, kissing, licking and cuddling" was conveniently always only observed by other members of the Arvizo family and there were no independent witnesses to confirm them.

As for expensive gifts, Jackson was generous with everyone – children and adults alike. The only cross-country flight (there were no cross-country flights in plural) took place on February 5-6 when the Arvizo family, including the mother, went to Miami with actor Chris Tucker for a press conference which eventually was called off. The claim about an attempt to relocate the family, to have them "take up residence in Brazil" is also a gross misrepresentation of what really happened (details in the chapter entitled **The Conspiracy Charge**).

The case went to Court in 2005 and Jackson was found not guilty on all charges on June 13, 2005.

Sources:

[1] William Dickerman's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (March 30, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[2] Dr. Stanley Katz's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (March 30, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[3] See for example: Learning From the McMartin Hoax (1989)
http://www.ipt-forensics.com/journal/volume1/j1_2_7.htm
Suggestive interviewing in the McMartin Preschool and Kelly Michaels daycare abuse cases: A case study (5 May, 2005) http://digitalcommons.utep.edu/cgi/viewcontent.cgi?article=1014&context=james_wood

[4] Larry Feldman's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (April 1, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[5] Statement of Probable Cause (filed by the Prosecution on November 17, 2003)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/plugin-111703stmtpc.pdf>

[6] Janet Arvizo's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (April 18, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

Frequently Asked Questions (FAQ)

The Michael Jackson Allegations

In this section of the document I will address some frequently asked questions that are not specifically in the realm of either the Chandler or the Arvizo allegations, but generally are related to the molestation allegations against Michael Jackson.

Has child pornography ever been found in Michael Jackson's possession?

Warning: In this chapter photographs with nudity will be shown.

From time and time again you may read people on various Internet websites, gossip blogs, comment sections and even in the mainstream tabloid media claim and gossip that during the searches of Michael Jackson's premises in 1993 and/or 2005 child pornography has been found. However, the claim is not true, as even prosecutor Ron Zonen admitted the last time tabloids rehashed this allegation in 2016 in a campaign lead by the online tabloid Radar Online [1]. (I will address that in detail later in this article.)

Police extensively searched Jackson's premises both in 1993 and in 2003 and there was nothing illegal found, not in physical or digital format (ie. on computers). In actuality, when the police searched Jackson's premises in 1993 they stated: ***"the search warrant didn't result in anything that would support a criminal filing"*** [2]. **Nor did they find anything illegal in 2003.** Child pornography is illegal to possess and the possession of it is a crime in itself, so had there been any child pornography found in Jackson's possession he would have been charged with that crime. He was never even charged with such a crime, let alone convicted of it.

What is usually used against Jackson as "child porn" or "child erotica" on those Internet gossip blogs and tabloids are legal art books and art photography that have been found. To convince their unsuspecting readers these gossip blogs often use a prosecution motion filed on January 18, 2005 as "evidence" [3]. Remarkably in Internet folklore it is often circulated as a list of "child pornography" that was found in Jackson's home, when not even the prosecution claimed it was. Most of the art books and magazines listed in that motion do not even have children in them, but the prosecution seemed to have confiscated anything with a nude or semi-nude person in it. Later in this chapter you will see a full survey of all the material that was confiscated and you will be able to see the nature of this material and the context of it.

You also have to keep in mind that this is a *prosecution* motion which is just the biased stance of one of the parties at a trial and is worded as inflammatory against the Defendant as possible and it mirrors the prosecution's theories and opinions, not proven facts. For example, on page 5 of the motion you can read: *"taken together they reveal a predominantly male orientation"* [3]. In actuality, as you will see it when I break down the content of this material in this chapter, Jackson's actual pornography was heterosexual. The "male oriented" material are a couple of art photography books with nudity and Jackson had many art books with female nudity as well.

As if it would bring them closer to proving that Jackson molested children the prosecution argues in the motion that Jackson's possession of a couple of art books with nude men found in boxes among other art books is evidence of homosexuality (somehow the books with nude

The Michael Jackson Allegations

females get ignored in that theory) but his possession of a great number of heterosexual pornography, his actual pornography, found in places such as his nightstand, is not evidence of his own sexuality but evidence of “grooming young boys” [3]. The prosecution claims in the motion that Jackson used this material “to seduce young boys” [3] in order “to satisfy his lewd desires” [3], but once again it is important to stress that this was just an unproven prosecution theory, not a fact. In actuality, the prosecution failed to prove this theory in Court.

Since the list of confiscated material is long this will be a long chapter but I find it important to show what kind of material we are talking about so that you will get an overall impression of everything that was confiscated in its context. Michael Jackson’s relationship with art photography and books belongs to that context as well, so I start with a discussion of that then we get to the confiscated material.

Michael Jackson and Art Photography

The police confiscated around 26 art books from Jackson – three of them in 1993 and the rest in 2003. The majority of these books are not pornographic or sexual and those that are do not have any children in them. They are legal art photography books that you can buy in any book store and with photos that you can see at art photography exhibitions. The common theme based on which the prosecution seemed to have picked them is if they had some level of nudity or even just semi-nudity in them.

Michael Jackson had a huge library, he owned over a million books, much of them in storage, and there were about 10,000 books in total in the areas of Jackson’s home where the Santa Barbara police had focused their search. District Attorney Thomas Sneddon attempted to downplay the number of books Jackson owned [4], but the prosecution’s own detectives testified that there had been thousands of books in the areas that they had searched and that it had not been possible to count them all [5] [6].

According to people who knew Jackson, he was a “prolific” and “voracious” reader who would frequently spend thousands of dollars at a time in bookstores. In their 2014 book *Remember the Time: Protecting Michael Jackson In His Final Days* two of his bodyguards Bill Whitfield and Javon Beard wrote the following about Jackson’s love for books:

Javon: That’s how he filled all those hours by himself: books. He’d read anything and everything he could get his hands on. History. Science. Art. There were so many trips to Barnes & Noble. It was almost a weekly thing. He would go into bookstores and drop five thousand dollars like he was buying a pack of gum. At one point, he actually bought a bookstore— I’m talking about an entire bookstore. He paid cash for it.

Bill: It was on his way back from Tokyo, during those couple days he spent in L.A. He went to visit this used bookstore. It had a lot of rare books from the personal libraries of some pretty famous people, Hollywood stars. These were books that Humphrey Bogart had signed, books that Ingrid Bergman had signed. He asked the owner how much it would take to buy all of his books. The owner didn’t take him seriously. So he made an offer of \$ 100,000. Said he’d pay cash on the spot. Couple weeks after he got back from L.A., this U-Haul filled with all these books showed up at the house in Vegas. [7]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Jackson also had an extensive interest in photography and had done so since he was a child. CBS executive Ray Newton spoke about having met Jackson in 1979 and discovering how well versed Jackson's love for photography was:

"About an hour later we picked up the professional photographer who was coming with us to radio. The photographer gets in the front seat of the limo says hello and then starts to assemble his camera. Once his camera is assembled he points it at me and Michael in the back seat of the limo. I instruct him not to shoot us so Michael can relax. Looking back, that would be a cool photo to have now but I was looking out for Michael's well-being. Michael sees the camera and starts this deep photography discussion. I was in the discussion for about a minute then it got so deep that I just dropped out and that's when the photographer looked at me and I looked at him with the looks saying check this out – Michael Jackson is knee deep in photography discourse. I asked Michael if he was a photographer and he said "No, I just like photography!!!"



A young Michael Jackson with his camera

So Michael continues engaging in this very deep photography conversation with the photographer where he mentions something that the photographer said he needed to look into further. This went on for about 5 minutes, and the only thing that stopped that topic was that the photographer said something that Michael didn't know and Michael got quiet.

Let me translate how deep Michael's photography discussion was: imagine if someone says in the middle of a general conversation – pataflafla swiss 6 accented parafliddle lesson 25 around the set groove. You would not only have to be a drummer but a drummer with not just a knowledge of rudiments but an advanced knowledge of rudiments that one can apply and play around the drumset and make them groove to know what that person was talking about." [8]

Photographer Todd Gray who worked with Jackson from 1979-1982 said of Jackson in his book *Before He Was King*:

"When Michael did find time to relax, he loved to leaf through photographic picture books. He would bring his favorite books with him on tour and buy more books while on the road – the bus weighted with an increasing number of boxes as we left each city. The Triumph Tour began in Memphis with no boxes; by the time we got to Dallas, a few days later, I noticed two; then came Houston; and by the time we hit San Antonio, I noticed a score of boxes being loaded onto the bus. He especially loved books on Hollywood glamour from the 1930s, richly illustrated children's books, and coffee-table books on

The Michael Jackson Allegations

photography. Michael would usually hole up in the rear of the bus, while the others spent their time together in front. I also preferred the quiet at the back, and I would sit down with him while he was engrossed in a book of Hollywood glamour photographs from the 1930s. Looking at a particularly striking photo, he would say, "This is magic. They don't make photos like this anymore." He studied the pose, eyes, make-up, and expression – everything that went into a great glamour photo.

Michael also loved books that showed children from around the world. One day on the bus I remember him saying "I wish I could write a book about the children of the world. I could go to every country and show how everyone on earth is beautiful. I want to go to India and show the poverty and suffering of the children there, and maybe I could help improve the situation. Africa, too, where there is so much starvation and disease. Todd, would you want to do that with me?" I was stunned, both because I wondered how Michael would ever find the time and also that he wanted me to be the photographer. I suggested that he take a look at the photographs of Lewis Hine, the influential photojournalist whose work helped spur the introduction of child labor laws in the early twentieth century." [9]

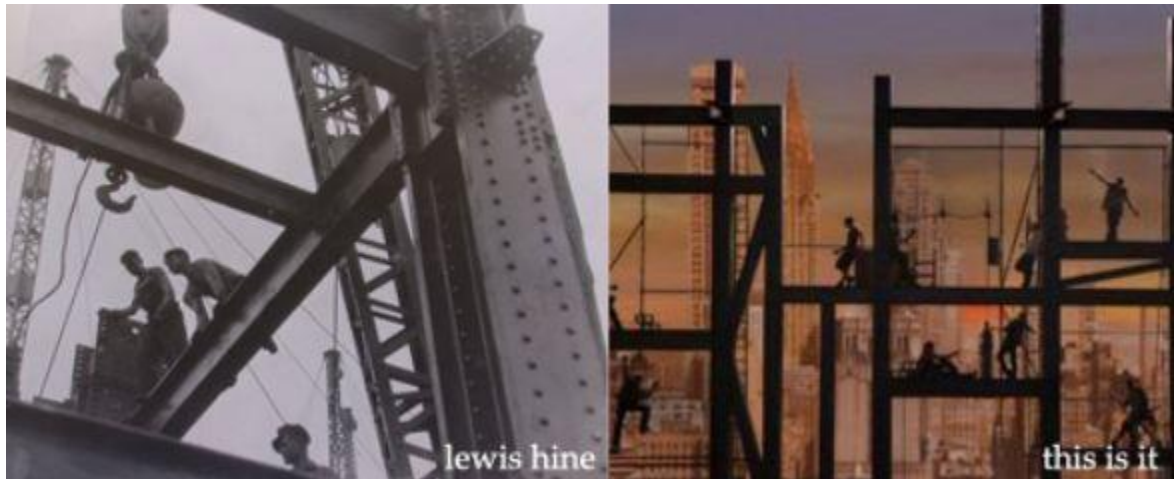
Jackson would also use photography books as the inspiration for some of his costumes, sets and other works. His long time guitarist Jennifer Batten said that her HIStory outfit had been inspired by something someone had shown him in a book:

"Somebody had shown Michael an art book that was kind of S&M based and all the paintings looked really beautiful. So he had that in mind but when it came to real life it wasn't too beautiful anymore," she laughs. "I just had to remind myself that it was all about the theatre, you know? It's not just about the music." [10]

Bernt Capra who worked with Jackson on the preparations for the *This Is It* concert series before the singer died said in 2009:

"Michael Jackson was very well read and he loved art, and he knew his photography, and he liked this photographer, Lewis Hine, who had been a social worker in the depression era and shot photographs of victims of child labor – four, five, six year olds working in mills and mines. He was also very well known for a collection of photos of the construction of the Empire State Building which are very valuable now. Michael loves this guy and he based "The Way You Make Me Feel" choreography and set design on the photos of the men constructing steel beams as if they were on the top of a skyscraper having a lunch break." [11]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

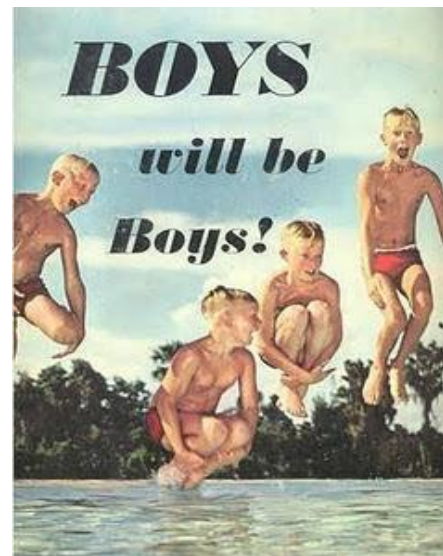


The Art Books

Now let's see all the confiscated material, first the art photography books.

The books confiscated in 1993

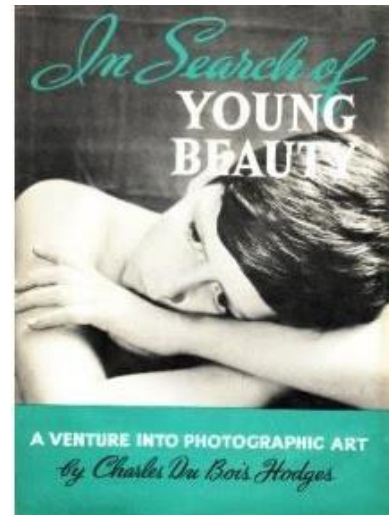
Two of the three books confiscated during the house search in 1993 is what you will see most used against Jackson, as they included nude photographs of young boys. Often you will not find mentioned though that at least one of those books, entitled *The Boy: A Photographic Essay* (Georges St. Martin, Ronald C. Nelson, 1964), judging from the inscription in it, was a gift Jackson received from a fan. The inscription read: "To Michael: From your fan, "Rhonda" ♥ 1983, Chicago". The other entitled *Boys Will Be Boys* (Georges St. Martin, Ronald C. Nelson, 1966), had an inscription in it by Jackson himself which gives an insight into what he saw in those pictures. It read: "Look at the true spirit of happiness and joy in these boys' faces. This is the spirit of boyhood, a life I never had and will always dream of. This is the life I want for my children, MJ. [12]"



Cover of the book "Boys Will Be Boys"

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Since the two books are rare vintage books from the 1960s and sequels to each other it is possible that they both were gifts from the same fan who inscribed one of them. They contain pictures of boys in various situations by different photographers, including pictures taken during the filming of the 1963 *Lord of the Flies* movie. They do include nude photographs of children, but the photographs are not pornographic or sexual. They show the children in various non-sexual activities, playing, swimming etc. The third book, that was confiscated in 1993 *In Search of Young Beauty: A Venture Into Photographic Art* (Charles Du Bois Hodges, 1964) which contains both boys and girls, mostly dressed, but some nude or semi-nude. All three of these books are in the United States' Library of Congress [13].



Cover of the book "In Search of Young Beauty"

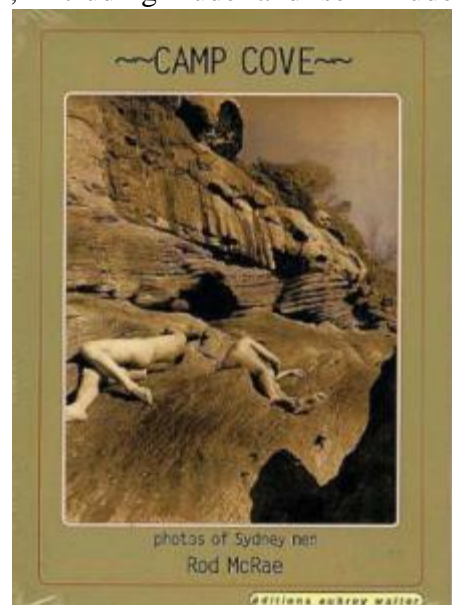
These books were not found in the context of an excessive collection of nude photographs of children but they were found in the book collection of a man who was generally interested in photography, art photography, art history, book rarities and vintage books and not specifically focused on nude photographs of children. As you have seen, at least one of them also seems to have been a gift from a fan.

The books confiscated in 2003

Rod McRae – Camp Cove, Photos of Sydney Men (2001)

A book with artistic, non-sexual photos of adult men, including nude and semi-nude photographs in various settings both indoors and outdoors. The author is a renowned artist.

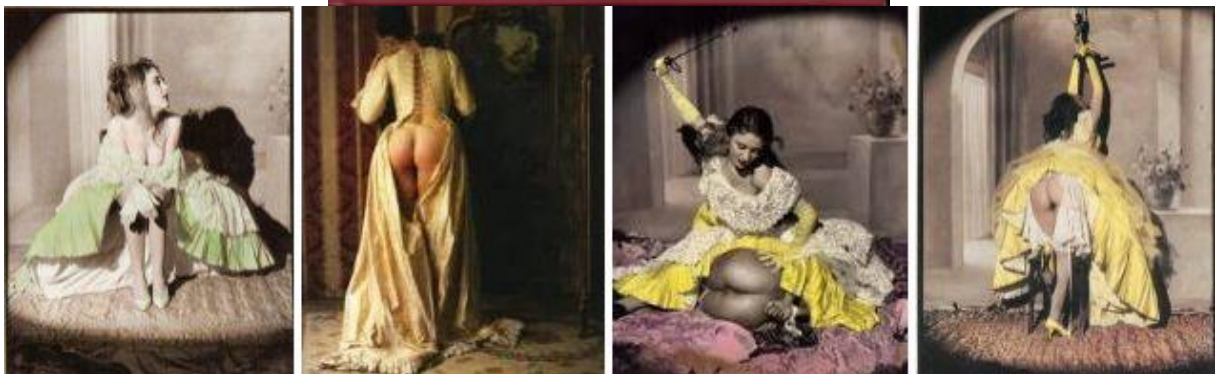
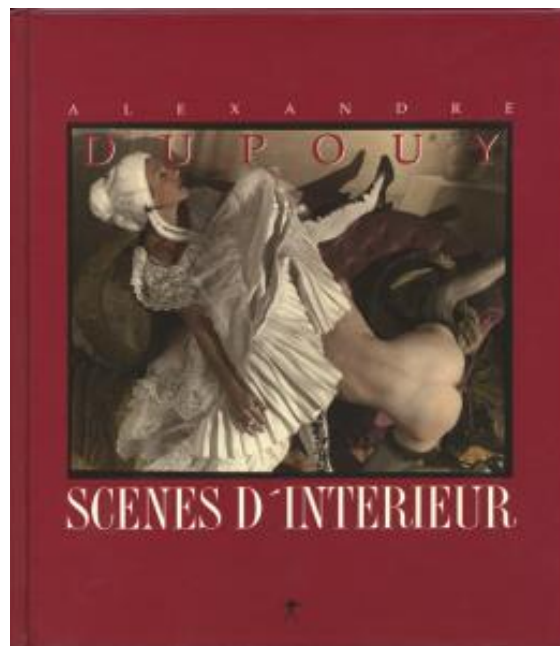
“Rod has exhibited work around the world with exhibitions in Australia, as well as Italy, France, Spain and Japan. He has received accolades for both his artistic and teaching ability, including both the TAFE Award for Teaching Excellence and the NSW Department of Education and Training’s Teacher of the Year Award in 1999. Rod was a finalist in the Wynne Prize for the Australian landscape/figurative sculpture, Art Gallery of NSW in 2007 and again in 2010, and is represented by King Street Gallery in Sydney. Presently he is working with 20 invited Australian Artists in a residency program at Taronga Zoo to raise funds for animal conservation projects around the world. Rod has been selected for the 2011 Sculpture by the Sea exhibition.” [14]



Alexandre Dupouy – Scenes d’Interieur (2000)

The Michael Jackson Allegations

A book with photos of adult women, nude or semi-nude, many in sexually explicit poses.

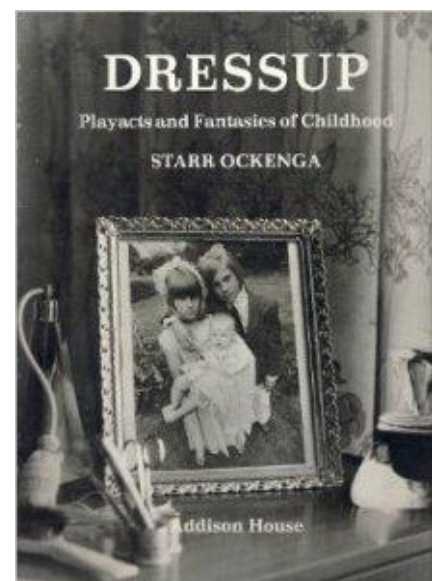


Starr Ockenga – Dressup: Playacts and Fantasies of Childhood (1978)

A collection of black and white photographs of children dressing up in various roles and settings.

The author is a renowned photographer:

*“Starr Ockenga won national acclaim for her first book on gardens, *Earth on Her Hands: The American Woman in Her Garden*, which received an American Horticultural Society Book Award for 1999. She continued to document American gardens with *Eden on Their Minds: American Gardeners with Bold Visions*, published in 2001. Her work has appeared in numerous national publications, including *Horticulture* and *Country Home*. She received her master’s degree in photography from the Rhode Island School of Design and has been granted fellowships from the National Endowment for the Arts and the Massachusetts Artists Foundation. Her photographs have been exhibited in museums and galleries across the United*



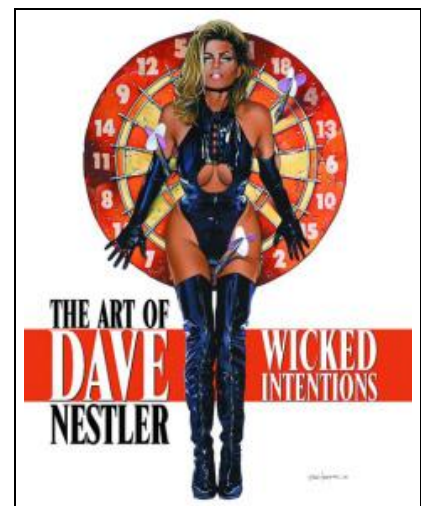
The Michael Jackson Allegations

States and abroad. Formerly an associate professor of photography at the Massachusetts Institute of Technology, she now divides her time between a studio in New York City and her garden in the Hudson River Valley” [15]



Dave Nestler – The Art of Dave Nestler: Wicked Intentions (2002)

Nude and semi-nude erotic animations of adult women.

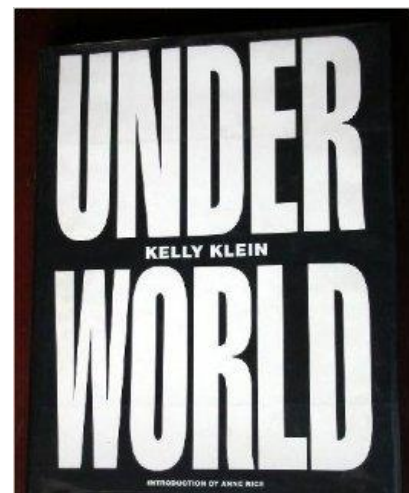


The Michael Jackson Allegations

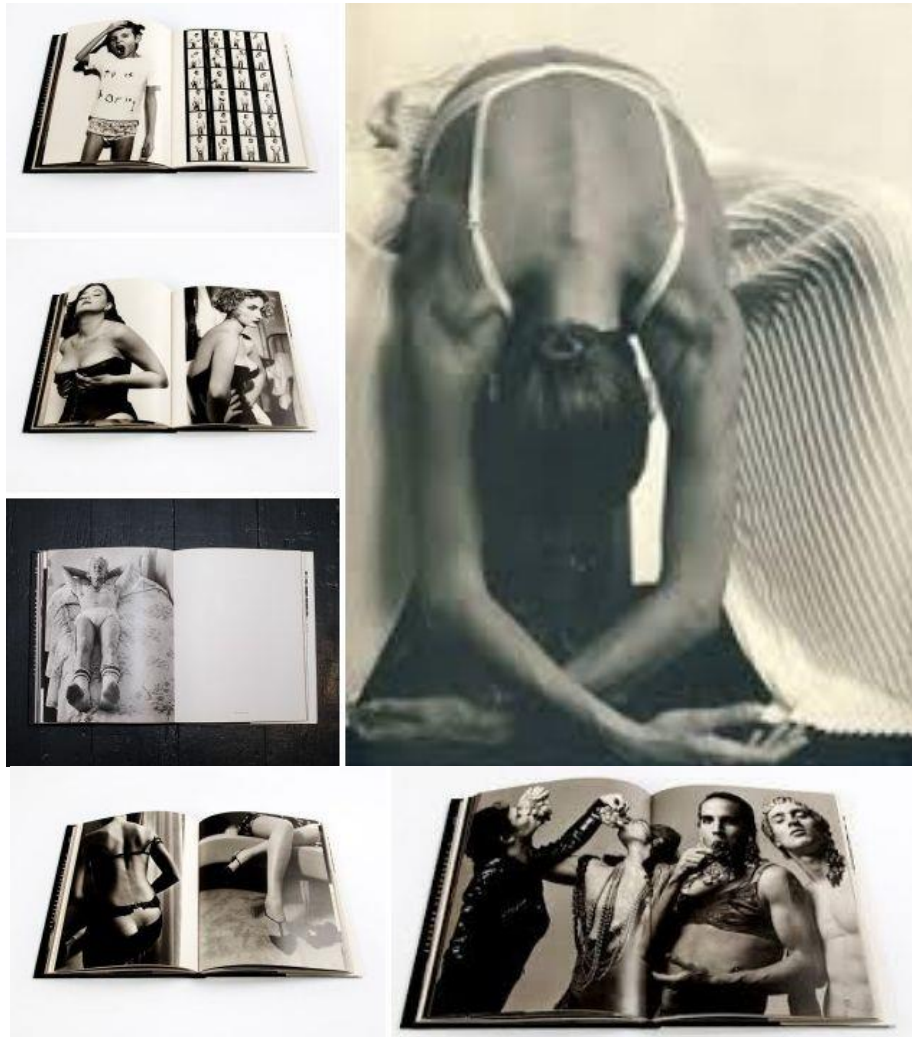


Kelly Klein – Underworld (1995)

A book about underwear by Kelly Klein, the ex-wife of Calvin Klein. Kelly Klein works as a photographer. The book contains artistic photographs of people in underwear. Among them are the rock band The Red Hot Chilli Peppers.

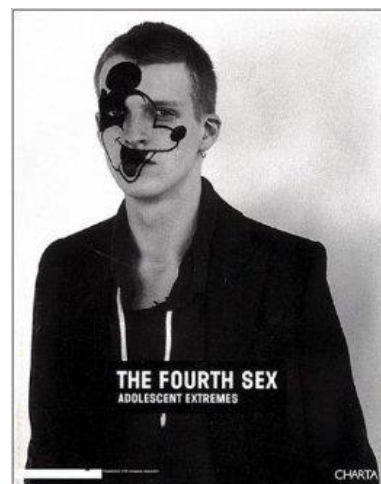


The Michael Jackson Allegations



Jake Chapman , Dinos Chapman, Gillian Wearing, Tracey Emin – The Fourth Sex, Adolescent Extremes (2003)

Artistic photographs of youth counter culture.



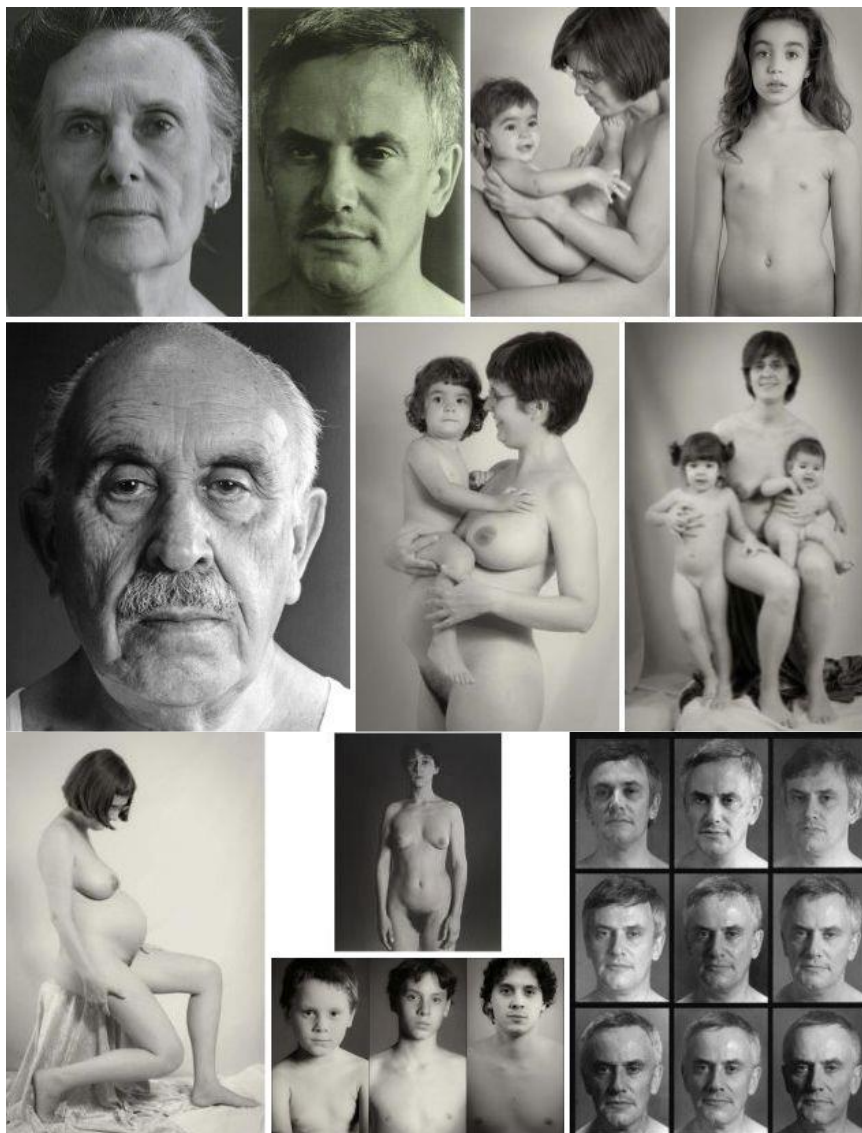
The Michael Jackson Allegations



The Michael Jackson Allegations

Pere Formiguera – Cronos (2000)

“This book documents Pere Formiguera’s Chronos project, in which he took subjects whose ages ranged from two to seventy-five at the project’s beginning, and photographed them once a month over a ten-year period.” [16]



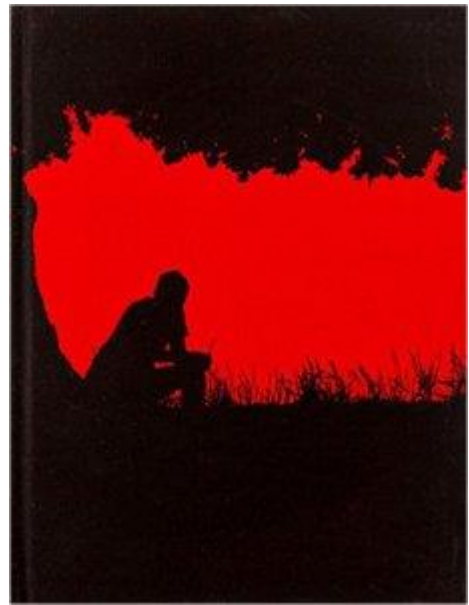
John Patrick Salisbury – Drew and Jimmy (1995)

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Artistic photographs of two teenage boys in rural Louisiana. According to the prosecution, they confiscated it because in some of the photos the subjects were wearing swim-trunk type of clothing. The author is a renowned photographer who worked with celebrities, among others Alanis Morissette.

“Raised on a working farm in Walnut Grove, Calif., Salisbury was interested in art from a young age but decided to make a life of it after the car accident that killed his younger brother Burton. His brother’s memory was the inspiration for “Drew and Jimmy” and the book opened many doors for him to professional photography.

In Los Angeles, he landed jobs photographing celebrities and shooting album cover art, including one assignment for the debut album of the then-unknown singer Alanis Morissette.” [17]



Rineke Dijkstra – Beach Portraits (2003)

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Artistic photographs of young people in a beach setting in swimwear. The author Rineke Dijkstra is a Dutch photographer.

“Rineke Dijkstra might be the most important photographer of portraits alive today. She channels August Sander through her own poet-soul photographing youth with brutal, unyielding generosity. Her people emerge from beaches, hospital rooms, indefinable space, to haunt us with their imperfect beauty and their fierce necessity of existence. These photographs heroicize individuals in a brazen way. Dijkstra isn’t content with confirming that banality is truth. She gives us the truth of fiction, the theatrics of the psychological complexity. She lets us way, way inside. The smudged blood on the collar of a bullfighter is in dialogue with the thin stream of blood running down a new mother’s leg as she clutches her hours-old infant with an uncertainty that is astonishing. From Rineke Dijkstra: “In the end, it’s the individual that I’m after.” [18]



The Michael Jackson Allegations



Mayumi Lake – POO-chi (2002)

A book in which human armpits are photographed in a deceptive manner as if they were female genitalia. Janet Williams, the police officer who confiscated the book, said on the stand at Jackson's trial that she was "*shocked*" by the content of this book [19]. So let's see the content that "*shocked*" this seasoned sex crime detective.

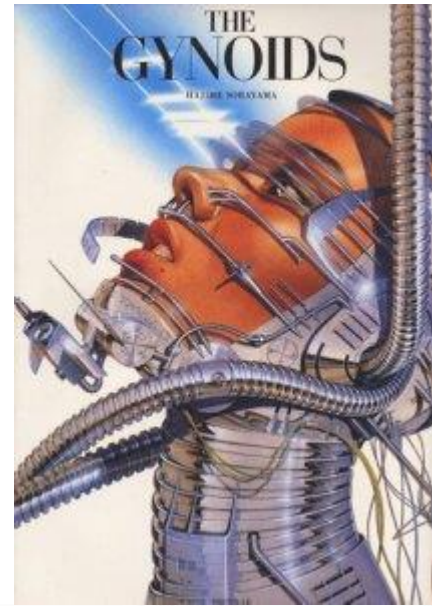


The Michael Jackson Allegations

Sorayama Hajime – The Gynoids: Genetically Manipulated (2001)

Animations of erotic female cyborgs, or as the author Sorayama Hajime calls them, Gynoids.

Hajime's work also appeared among others on the cover of the 2001 album *Just Push Play* by the rock band Aerosmith.



Album cover of Aerosmith's Just Push Play

The Michael Jackson Allegations

James Bidgood and Bruce Benderson – Bidgood (1999)

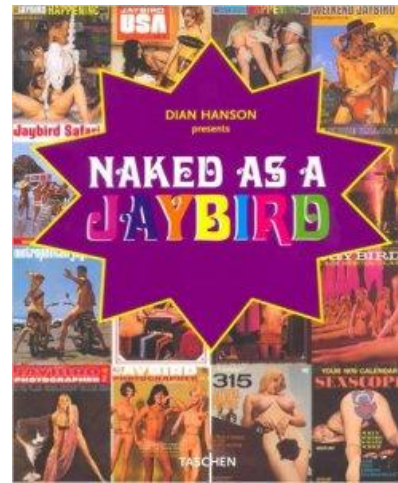
A book about the life and work of American artist, photographer, filmmaker James Bidgood. The book includes nude or semi-nude artistic photos of men in various, non-sexual, fairy tale-like settings. The book was published by the publisher Benedikt Taschen who specializes in art, photography and art history books. Jackson's attorney, Thomas Meserau mentioned at the 2005 trial that Taschen has sought to work with the Jackson family and that he sent this book to Jackson [20]. There were also other Taschen publications among the confiscated books (see further below).



The Michael Jackson Allegations

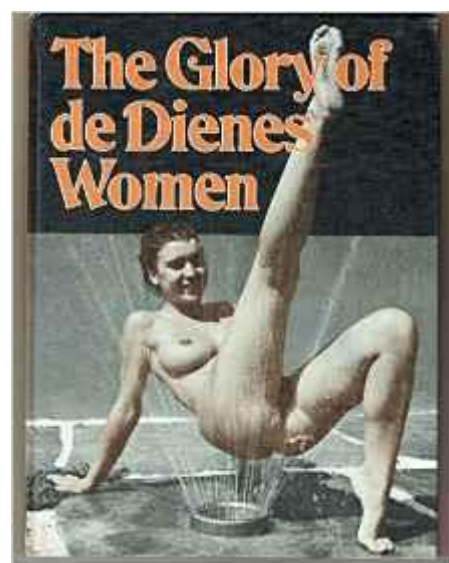
Dian Hanson – Naked as a Jaybird (2003)

Another book published by Taschen that the prosecution confiscated. This one was described by them as “*nude adult male and female erotica; very graphic*”. The book is about the history of the American nudist magazine “Jaybird” that was published in the 1960s.

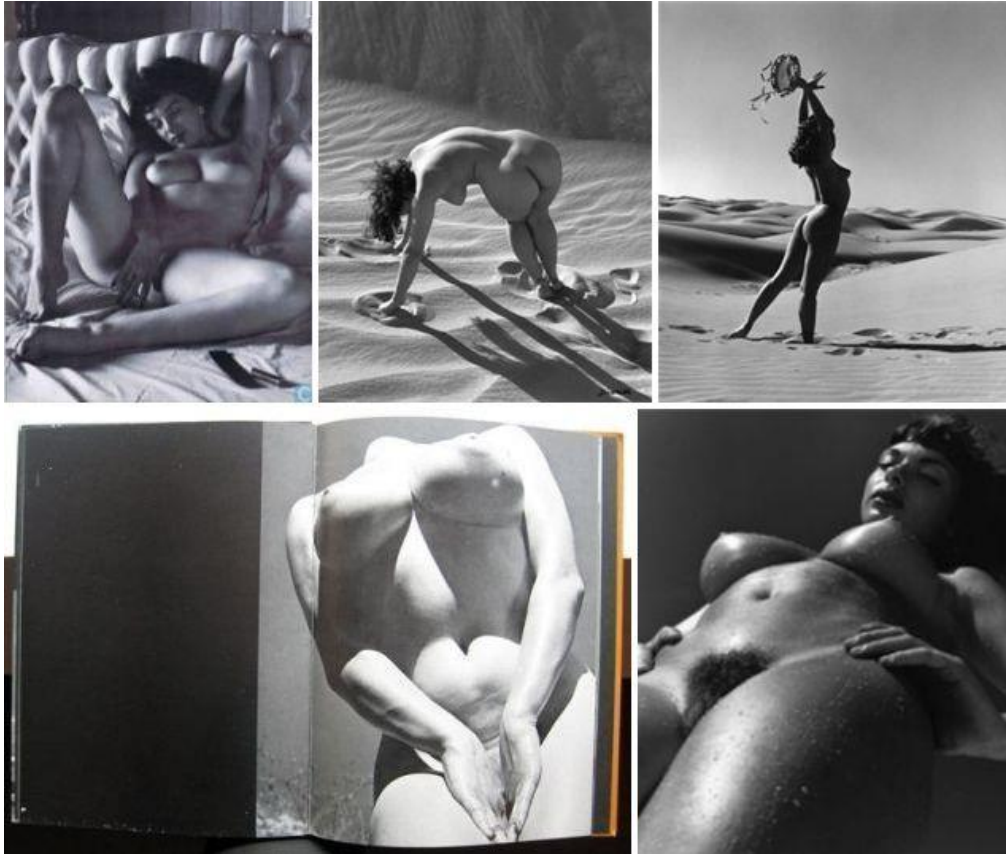


Andre de Dienes – The Glory of de Dienes Women (1967)

Photos of nude women by Andre de Dienes who, among others, famously photographed Marilyn Monroe.



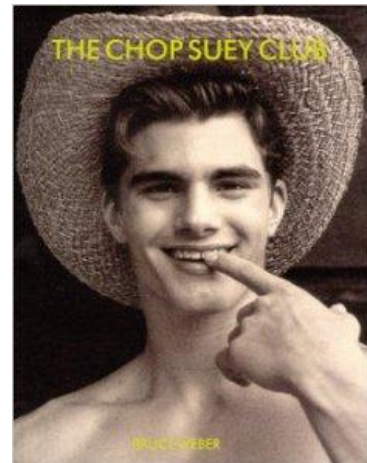
The Michael Jackson Allegations



Bruce Weber – The Chop Suey Club (1999)

Artistic photos of a young man by Bruce Webber. In the vast majority of the photos the subject is clothed. Out of around 150 photos in the book there are about 5-6 nude photos. The book also includes photos of the subject with various celebrities, for example, Pamela Anderson and it has brief texts by artists and celebrities such as Bruce Springsteen.

Webber is very much renowned for his uniquely stylish and elegant photography and worked on many ad campaigns for Calvin Klein, Ralph Lauren, Pirelli, Abercrombie & Fitch, Revlon, and Gianni Versace, as well as with magazines such as Vogue, GQ, Vanity Fair, Elle, Life, Interview and Rolling Stone.



Webber also directed music videos for artists like Chris Isaak and the Pet Shop Boys and he famously photographed many celebrities, among them Madonna, Halle Berry, Leonardo di Caprio, Channing Tatum, Natalie Portman, Brad Pitt, Bruce Springsteen, David Bowie and Michael Jackson. He first worked with Jackson in the 1970s when Jackson was still a member of the Jackson 5, then again in 2007. Jackson's defense at his 2005 trial indicated that Weber had sent this book to Jackson unsolicited [21].

When Weber photographed Jackson for L'Uomo Vogue magazine in 2007 he said of their relationship:

The Michael Jackson Allegations

"I first met Michael Jackson in the late 70s. Andy Warhol asked me to photograph a group of kids called the Jackson Five for Interview Magazine. They were staying with their tutor while on tour at a hotel in mid-town New York City. Their tutor was an elegant lady – almost like a character out of a George Cukor's film, The Women. When I started taking the photographs, Michael and his brothers were having a pillow fight, and she was trying to make them behave like gentleman. Michael wasn't posing; he was only interested in reading the newspaper and looking for his reviews.

That was almost 30 years ago, and since then I've had the chance to know his charming sister Janet and shared good friends like Muhammad Ali's manager Bernie Yuman, the film director Brett Ratner and a lady who is beyond description, Elizabeth Taylor.

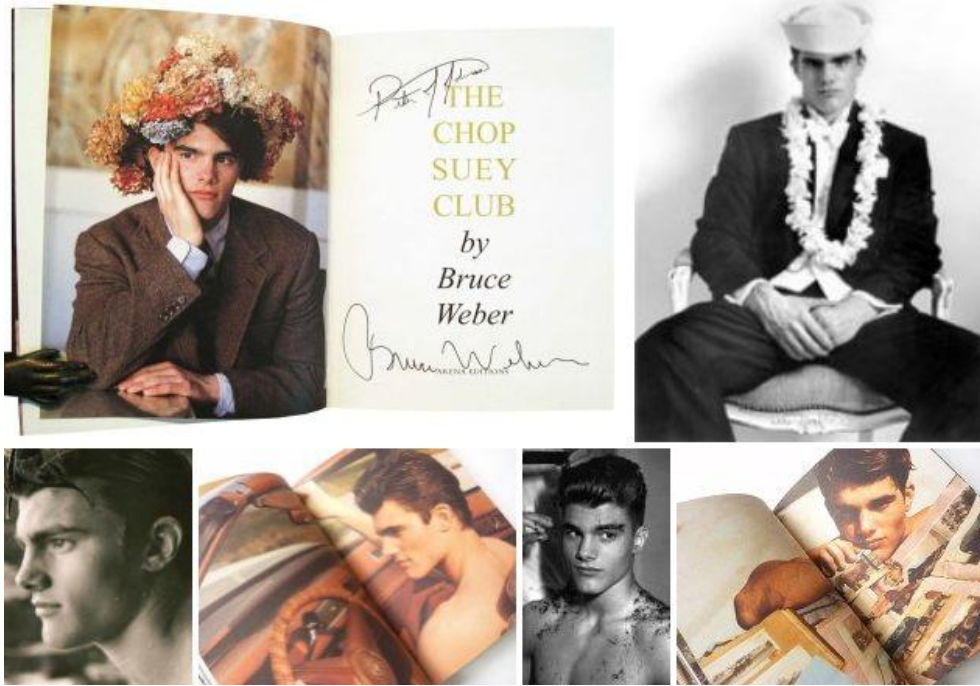
For years Michael and I have talked about taking photographs, but it never happened again until now, because our busy lives kept us at different ends of the globe. Luckily this time, we both found ourselves in New York City at the same time. I wanted to photograph Micheal instead of sending him a thank you note explaining all the joys I've had listening to him sing and watching him dance. Each of these times were marked as celebration in my crazy life: falling in love, driving my dream car, getting a new dog, photographing my family, or hanging out with a friend over a few beers. If I had to count how many times Michael's music has given a life to my photographs, that number would be in thousands. Because of the music's rhythm and soul, I would end up taking so many photographs that I would run out of film and all my cameras would break down.

So Michael, accept my gratitude for you have a big place in a lot of people's hearts. As they say on the street "Michael's in the house and lets just do it!" – "Lets just get down and take some pictures and see if we land once again on the moon."

*Bruce Weber
New York City
2007 [22]*

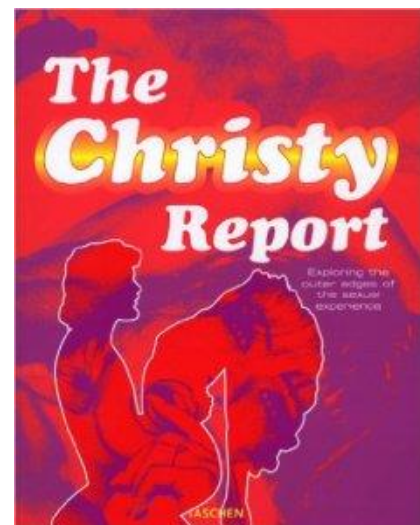


The Michael Jackson Allegations



John Quinn – The Christy Report – Exploring the Outer Edges of the Sexual Experience (2002)

Another Taschen book. This book is about the history of heterosexual pornography and it includes legal, adult heterosexual photos from the 1940s to recent.

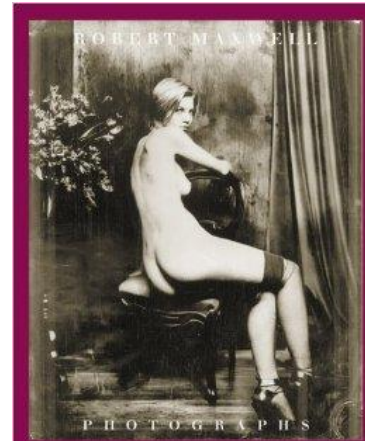


The Michael Jackson Allegations

Robert Maxwell and Genevieve Field – Robert Maxwell Photographs (2000)

A collection of artistic photography by Robert Maxwell. The book includes some nude and semi-nude photos. It was indicated by Jackson's defense at his trial in 2005 that Maxwell is a personal friend of the Jackson family. He is another photographer who has worked with a number of celebrities including Angelina Jolie, Yoko Ono, Natalie Portman, Johnny Depp.

The book is in the United States' Library of Congress [23].

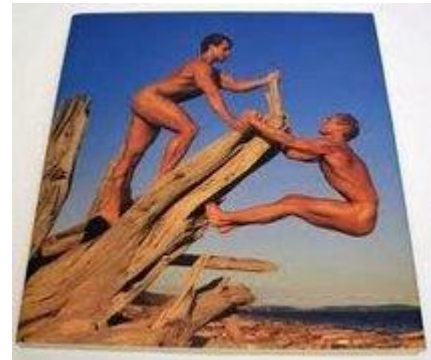


The Michael Jackson Allegations

Tom Bianchi – Bob & Rod (1994)

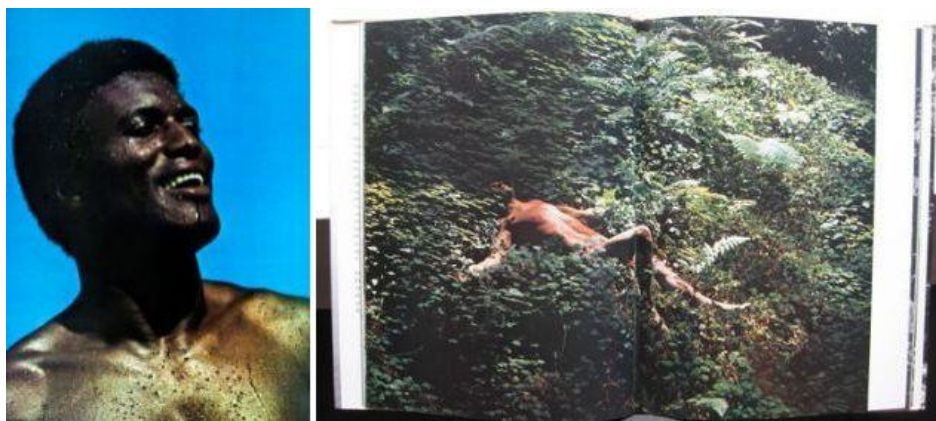
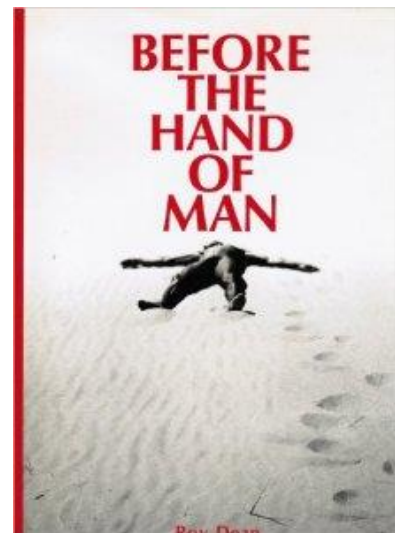
A compilation of non-sexual, artistic photographs of two males who are mostly nude or semi-nude. The subjects are Bob Paris and Rod Jackson who were one of the first famous gay married couple in the United States, appearing on many talk shows – including Oprah Winfrey – in the late '80s-early '90s.

The book is in the United States' Library of Congress [24].



Roy Dean – Before the Hand of Man (1972)

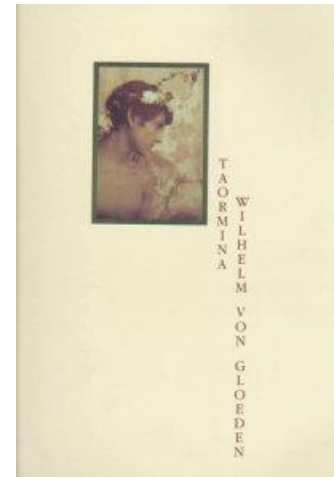
Non-sexual, artistic photos of nude men. The book is a rare, vintage book published in the 1970s. It is in the United States' Library of Congress [25].



Wilhelm Von Gloeden – Taormina (1998)

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Non-sexual, artistic photos of males, many nude or semi-nude. The photos are old, historic ones from the late 1800s.



Ed Templeton – The Golden Age of Neglect (2003)

An artistic photographic book about youth culture and neglected youth by the renowned photographer Ed Templeton. Again, the police confiscated it because it includes some nudity.

You can find a video on Vimeo which takes you through the whole book: <https://vimeo.com/54012676>



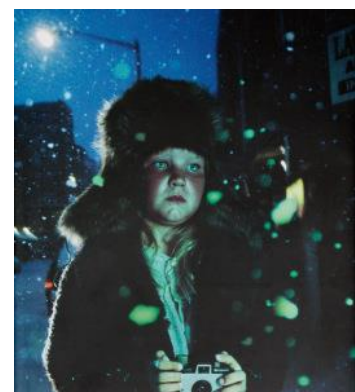
The Michael Jackson Allegations



Simen Johan – Room to Play (2002)

A book with surrealistic photographs/animations of children.

The author about his own work: “*My photographs are composites of multiple-image fragments that I digitally manipulate and combine, including both images that I have photographed myself and found images. By combining different elements, my objective is to create artificial scenarios that appear vaguely familiar and produce numerous associations. I want to evoke a sense of familiarity that will seduce the viewer into allowing his or her own experience, imagination, and understanding of existing popular imagery to become tools for interpreting my work.*” [26]



The book is in the United States' Library of Congress [27].

The Michael Jackson Allegations



Larry Stevens – A Sexual Study of Man (1970)

A compilation of photographs, drawings, cartoons and writings about homosexual activity between adult men. This book was particularly emphasized by the prosecution and was even brought up in their closing statement. Probably because it was the only publication in Jackson's possession which depicted male on male sexual activity. The prosecution suggested that this vintage book rarity from 1970 that Jackson had in a cardboard box among hundreds of other books showed that the singer was homosexual while the dozens of heterosexual adult magazines that he possessed, bought on a regular basis and kept in places such as his nightstand were not an indication of his sexuality – according to the prosecution's theory at least.

Most of these books were found in the library or in big cardboard boxes among hundreds and thousands of other books. Many were vintage books or rarities possibly from second hand stores. As demonstrated above Jackson had a habit of buying hundreds of books at once, often without even fully looking through what he was buying and then he had the books

The Michael Jackson Allegations

carried to his home in big boxes. There is no evidence that Jackson had seen or opened all of these books but in any case they are mainly regular art books or photography books, none of them is illegal (many of them are even in the US Library of Congress) and they are certainly not “child porn”, as you have seen.

Below on the photos you can see the locations most of these books were found.



The downstairs area of the bedroom complex. The arrow drawn on the photo points to a pile of boxes full of books. Many of the confiscated books listed above were found in one of these or similar boxes, among other books of all kinds. (Photo in courtesy of Aphrodite Jones)



The upstairs area of the bedroom complex. As you can see this area too is full of piles and boxes of books. By all accounts Jackson was a voracious reader and was especially interested in art photography. (Photo in courtesy of Aphrodite Jones)

The Michael Jackson Allegations



The so called master bathroom of the complex looked more like a sitting room. It had a hi-fi equipment, a TV, a book shelf, a table, chairs and a great number of books.

The Nudist Magazines

The prosecution also confiscated and introduced to the Court a number of nudist magazines that they found in Jackson's possession during the 2003 search. These were old, vintage magazines from the 1930s, some from the 1960s. Nudist magazines from this time period are collectible items and can reach upwards of \$500 or more on auction sites.

In the January 18, 2005 prosecution motion that was referenced at the beginning of this chapter District Attorney Thomas Sneddon claimed that the nudist magazines were found in a box at the foot of Jackson's bed [3] and then again he repeated this misinformation in his opening statement at Jackson's 2005 trial [28]. However, his own witness, the police officer who confiscated this material, debunked him in her trial testimony. Janet Williams testified that she had found these magazines inside one the big cardboard boxes that contained many books in the downstairs area of Jackson's bedroom and it is not known if Jackson had ever opened them [6]. (Jackson's bed was upstairs. The downstairs area of his room was more a sitting room type of area. As Williams described that area: *"The area appeared to be similar to a sitting room. It had a piano, large screen televisions and chairs, and some books. Fireplace. That kind of area [6]."*) By the way, this demonstrates that just because something is claimed in a prosecution motion it does not mean it is necessarily a fact.

The confiscated nudist magazines are:

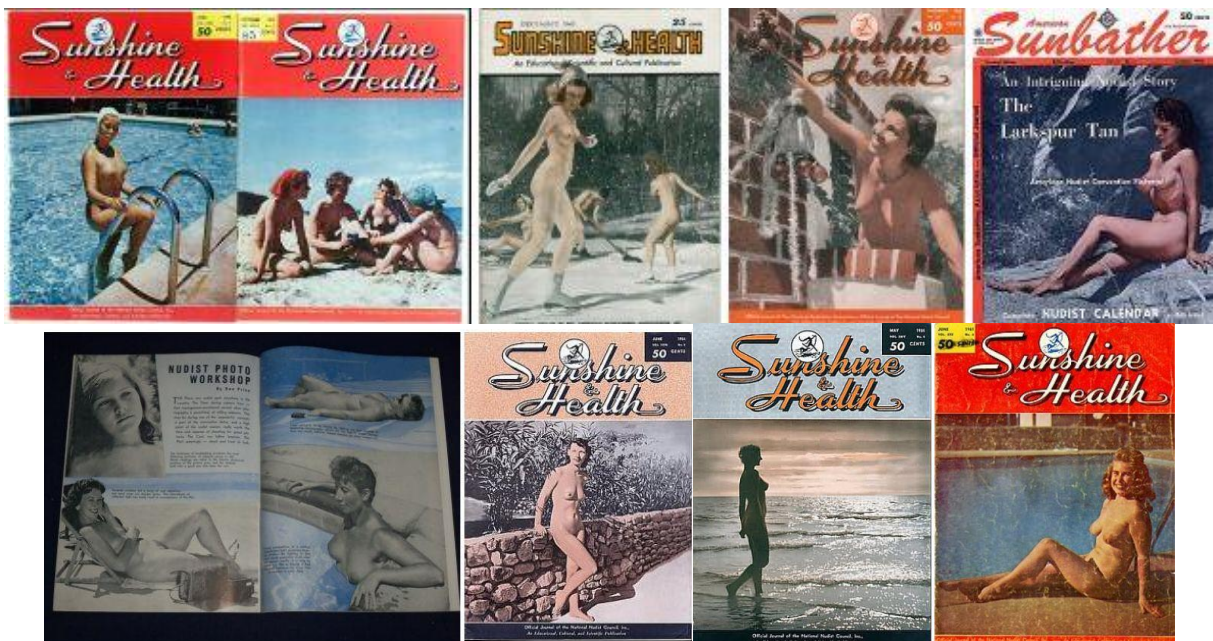
- Solaire Universalle Day Nudisme Volume 11 #5 May 1961; Eden Quarterly Issue 13, Copyright 1963
- Nudist- March 1935
- American Sunbather, May 1961
- Nudist, February 1935
- The Nudist, May 1935
- The Nudist, June/July 1935

The Michael Jackson Allegations

- The Nudist August 1935
- Sunshine and Health, The Nudist, May 1937
- The Nudist, February 1936
- The Nudist, June 1936
- The Nudist, August 1936
- The Nudist, October 1936
- Sunshine and Health, The Nudist, April 1937
- Sunshine and Health, The Nudist, December 1937
- Sunshine and Health, The Nudist, October 1937
- Sunshine and Health, The Nudist, February 1937
- Sunshine and Health, The Nudist, January 1937
- Sunshine and Health, The Nudist, December 1937
- Sunshine and Health, The Nudist, September 1938
- Sunshine and Health, The Nudist, July 1939
- Eden Quarterly, Issue 7
- Sunshine and Health, The Nudist, November 1937
- Sunshine and Health, The Nudist, November 1937
- Sunshine and Health, The Nudist, February 1938
- Sunshine and Health, The Nudist, March 1938
- Sunshine and Health, The Nudist, September 1937
- Eden Quarterly, Issue 8
- Sunshine and Health, The Nudist, June 1937 [6]

The prosecution tried to argue that Jackson kept these magazines because they had a couple of nude images of children, however, the fact is that the main, overwhelming focus of these magazines are nude *women*. (By the way, there exist nudist magazines with a focus on males, but none of those were found in Jackson's possession, only ones with a focus on women.)

Here are the type of nudist magazines Jackson possessed:



The Michael Jackson Allegations



A few years earlier, circa 2000, Jackson had openly purchased some photos of women from nudist magazines while shopping at Recycled Records Store: *“He also bought a bunch of old nude stuff-clipped out pictures from nudist magazines and old shots of posed nude women.”* [29]

By the way, characteristic for the prosecution’s “no stone unturned” approach they even used an Alternate Light Source (ALS) detector on these magazines to see if they find anything that they can use. According to an evidence sheet by The Santa Barbara County Sheriff’s Department, because ALS testing showed some fluorescents on the surface of these particular magazines, they sent them to the Santa Barbara Department of Justice to further testing [30]. What happened then was explained in trial testimonies by the prosecution’s forensic experts who told the jury that ALS is a device that detects anything of biological origin: hair, fiber, saliva, blood, semen, sweat. If such a fluorescent shows up on one surface of an item then the item is sent to a laboratory for further analysis (eg. DNA analysis) to see what it is exactly and whom the DNA belongs to.

From the March 24, 2005 testimony of Lisa Susan Roote Hemman, a senior identification technician in the forensic unit of the Santa Barbara County Sheriff’s Department:

“Could you explain that for us, please?”

I was asked to do a visual inspection of the contents, and I used an alternate light source which goes into the UV wavelengths. And when you look — search for body fluids, they will fluoresce under UV light, and anything that seemed to fluoresce, it could be body fluids, but it could also be other things. My job was to find items that weren’t on the paper when they were published, they were placed there later. It

The Michael Jackson Allegations

could be anything that fluoresced. And I separated those items out for further testing. And when I did that, I repackaged them into another bag and I sent them to the Department of Justice Lab to find out what those fluids or deposits were.

How did you mark on a specific item where you suspected there may be some kind of body fluid or other substance that was foreign to that magazine or picture?

I sent the entire item to be reinspected by the Department of Justice. I also put a yellow tab, a post-it note, on the page that I suspected, but I also requested that the Department of Justice reevaluate the entire magazine or piece of paper.” [31]

Later in Hemman’s testimony some more was explained about ALS and what it actually detects:

“Okay. Now, the alternative light source that you used during that one-week period from January 20 to January 26th was for the purpose of — oh — was for the purpose of determining whether or not there was bodily fluids?

Or any trace evidence, hair, fibers.

And an alternative light source, can you describe that briefly?

Yes. What —

Let me stop you for a second. We’ve already had a little testimony. What color is it, and did you wear goggles, or was there a different color? What did you do?

Yes, it’s basically a light source that goes through numerous wavelengths, mainly in the UV, and I wore orange goggles which narrows the band down and helps you see things fluoresce, or absorb the light, turn dark. And so basically I just went page by page, wearing those orange goggles, and using the UV light and examining each piece of paper.

All right. Is this destructive of the evidence to do that?

No. The CSS — the light source has dials on it, which dial each wavelength, and the CSS is the one that we use mainly for searching for body fluids, and that one is not, as far as I know, destructive to DNA evidence.

Okay. It’s not destructive to the paper?

No.

Okay. So when you do an alternative light source examination of that sort, you can then do other tests on the materials —

Yes.

—freely thereafter, right?

The Michael Jackson Allegations

It's harmless to the evidence that we looked at." [31]

On the same day a senior criminalist of the California Department of Justice at the Santa Barbara Regional Crime Laboratory Charlane Marie testified about the results of their analysis of the fluorescents that were sent to them by the Santa Barbara County Sheriff's Office and she stated that they had found nothing that could be used against Jackson.

"Okay. And your job was to look at that with an alternative light source, correct?

Yes.

Did I ask you this? On 766, that's your handwriting on the notes around the pictures?

It is.

All right. And when you looked at the alternative light source, looked at the items with the alternative light source, did you find any suspected DNA to sample and analyze?

Well, the light source is just a presumptive searching tool, and all it's going to tell you is if something's glowing. If something's glowing, biologicals do glow, so that's one area that you might want to test.

Okay. Is that what you were looking for?

I was looking for biological material, yes.

Bodily fluids, pretty much?

Correct.

The question is, did you find any?

I did not.

So as far as you could tell, there was no DNA to be tested from the materials you were sent?

Well, there's no seminal material.

There's nothing you felt — just to make it clear, I'm not trying to trap you here, but there was nothing that you found and you said, "Ah-hah, we ought to send this off to Sacramento or have a DNA lab do a further analysis of this"; is that correct?

That's right.

You pretty much packaged it back up and sent it back to Santa Barbara?

I did, yes." [32]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

The pornographic magazines and DVDs

The pornographic magazines, posters from pornographic magazines and adult DVDs found in Michael Jackson's possession were all heterosexual (or the kind of lesbian themed which are also targeted to heterosexual men) and all legal.

The list of items seized:

- Photo of female image
- Photo of female image
- Photo of female image
- Photo of female image
- Photo of female image
- Hustler centerfold, 10 August 1992
- Playboy centerfold, Miss October
- Playboy centerfold, Miss November
- Playboy centerfold, 16 Miss March
- Hustler centerfold, June 1993
- Playboy centerfold, unknown date
- Penthouse Page No. 153-154
- Centerfold, Miss May
- Penthouse, Page 8
- Penthouse centerfold
- Playboy centerfold
- Penthouse centerfold
- Penthouse, August 1991
- Penthouse centerfold
- Club International centerfold
- Penthouse, double page 6/211
- Penthouse centerfold
- Penthouse, May 1992
- Hustler, Centerfold Special Holiday Honey 1991
- Penthouse centerfold
- Penthouse centerfold
- Penthouse, November 1991
- Playboy Magazine, Centerfold Miss November
- Playboy Magazine, Centerfold Miss February
- Playboy Magazine, Centerfold Miss December
- Al Golstein's 100 Best Adult Videos Advertisement
- Playboy Magazine, Centerfold
- Hustler Magazine Cover, May 1992
- Page from Unknown Magazine
- Stiff Dick for Lynn Magazine (In Notebook)
- Barely Legal Magazine
- Just Legal Magazine, (Premier Issue) (In Notebook)
- Finally Legal Magazine (In Notebook)
- Playboy Magazine, February 1993 (In Notebook)
- Hustler Magazine, Barely Legal (In Notebook)
- Playboy Magazine, December 1994 (In Notebook)
- Playboy Magazine, May 1994 (In Notebook)

The Michael Jackson Allegations

- Hustler Magazine, Barely Legal (In Notebook)
- Penthouse Magazine (In Notebook)
- Visions of Fantasy Magazine, A Hard Rock Affair (In Notebook)
- Visions of Fantasy Magazine, Sam Jose's Black Starlett (In Notebook)
- Double Dicking Caroline Magazine (In Notebook)
- Big Tits and a Hard Stud Magazine
- Hustler Magazine
- Celebrity Skin Magazine (In Notebook)
- Oui, March 1998 in binder
- Over 50, Volume 5, #9, 1996 in binder
- XX rated, April 1995
- Close Up, April 1995 in binder
- Just 18, Volume 4, Issue No. 10
- Plumpers centerfold
- Hustler, August 1992
- Hustler, April 1998
- (No cover) in binder
- Penthouse, March 1992 in binder
- Juggs, June 1996 in binder
- 44 Plus, June 1996 in binder
- Plumpers, May 1996 in binder
- Club International, March 1998 in binder
- Live Young Girls, September in binder
- Finally Legal, July 2003 in notebook
- Finally Legal Freshman Class
- Orgy, August 2002 in binder
- Purely 18, October 2002 in binder
- Purely 18, December 2002 in binder
- Tight, November 2002 in binder
- Hawk, November 2002 in binder
- Hawk, January 2003 in binder
- Live Young Girls, June 2003 in binder
- Girlfriends in binder
- Live Young Girls in binder
- Parade
- Finally Legal, February 2003 in binder
- Girls of Barely Legal in binder
- Hawk, February 2003 in binder
- Girlfriends, Special Editions in binder
- White binder containing The Girls of Penthouse, August 19 2003 in binder
- White binder containing Barely Legal, July 200 21 in binder
- Gallery 5/2002
- Binder containing Playboy
- Couples Volume 2, Issue 2
- White binder containing Barely Legal, Anniversary 2002
- White binder containing Naughty Neighbors, December
- Hustler Barely Legal [33]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

DVDs:

- Pimps Up, Hos Down (1998 documentary)
- Fresh Picked Pink
- Dirty Teens Come Clean
- Hot! Wet! Tight! Pink!
- Fuck Me, I'm Legal
- Michael Ryan's Believe It Or Not
- Sloppy Dogs Presents: Fuck Me, I'm a Bad Girl
- Adult World #2

TWO ARTICLES:

- Page 28 from "G-Spot"
- "The Second Female G-Spot" Article (In Notebook) (see: [The Second Female G-spot](#))

The prosecution never claimed this material to be illegal. They admitted that all of this was legal, commercially produced material and none depicted any illegal activities such as child porn. They claimed, however, that Jackson used these to "groom" children for sexual abuse because the accuser in the 2005 case Gavin Arvizo and his brother Star Arvizo alleged that Jackson showed them such material. I addressed this claim extensively in an earlier chapter while we discussed the Arvizo allegations (see [The Changing Content of the Allegations and Contradictions](#)), so here I only note that this is a totally unproven claim that originates from an accuser with serious credibility problems (for more details about the Arvizos' allegations see [The 2005 Allegations](#) section of our document).

Most of these adult magazines were found in Michael Jackson's nightstand, in a box at the base of his bed and in a briefcase in a closet of his bedroom suite. Some others were found in a cabinet in his office bathroom and in the master bathroom inside his bedroom suite. Jackson's fingerprints were found on some of them and his attorney Thomas Mesereau admitted in his opening statement that they were Jackson's magazines:

*"The prosecutor told you that there were girlie-type magazines and sexually explicit material in Mr. Jackson's home, and there were. Mr. Jackson will freely admit that he does read girlie magazines from time to time. And what he does is he sends someone to the local market, and they pick up Playboy and they pick up Hustler, and he has read them from time to time. **He absolutely denies showing them to children.**" [34]*

(Emphasis added.)

The prosecution spent a great amount of time with displaying the magazines that they had confiscated from Jackson's bedroom on a big screen [35]. Observers wondered what point they were trying to make with the detailed, graphic presentation of this completely legal collection that only pointed to Jackson's sexual interest in women, especially that several of the presented magazines had publishing dates after the accuser had long left Neverland. Many felt that by this presentation the prosecution was just trying to publicly humiliate Jackson and prejudice a presumably conservative Santa Barbara jury against him in the absence of real, relevant evidence.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

The Internet pornography

In the 2003 search the police also confiscated sixteen computers from Neverland, including three computers (which contained four hard drives in total) from Jackson's bedroom, and sent them to the FBI for a forensic examination of their hard drives. None of the computers contained any illegal material or had any traces of access to illegal material on the Internet, including no attempts to find such material [36]. Once again, according to court transcripts and court motions, only legal adult heterosexual pornography and images of nude women were found cached in their hard drives from 1998 through 2003 and as Jackson's lawyer pointed out in his closing statement at the 2005 trial: *"No illegal child pornography, either in a website or anywhere else. No websites where you try to meet children, like pedophiles often do, and the rest [37]."*

Not even the prosecution could claim that any of this material was illegal but they argued that they wanted to introduce them to show that Jackson knew how to use a computer (something he never denied). Judge Rodney Melville, however, ruled that this material was irrelevant and did not allow the prosecution to refer to this evidence in Court [38].

A nude photo of Jonathan Spence?

Besides all the material shown above, the prosecution's January 18, 2005 motion also mentions two photographs allegedly found in the 1993 search. One is described as *"a photograph of a boy, believed to be Jonathan Spence; fully nude [3]"* (Jonathan Spence was one of Jackson's young friends in the 1980s), the other is described as *"a photograph of a young boy holding an umbrella; wearing bikini bottoms, partially pulled down [3]"*.

These claims, and especially the claim about the alleged photo of Spence, are sometimes used on various Internet forums and comment sections against Jackson as some major, bombshell evidence of his guilt, but in reality the prosecution never introduced these alleged photos to Court and never gave the defense a chance to see what they really were, where they came from and to cross-examine them, so they are unlikely to really be bombshell incriminating evidence.

As you have seen above the parties can claim many things in motions, but those claims are not always accurate and they can be exaggerated and they can be one-sidedly twisted or misrepresented. Prosecution motions are not proven facts, but they are theories, opinions and often exaggerations and biased claims by one of the parties. In actuality, in this case prosecution motions often included claims which were twisted or even turned out to be totally untrue in Court – some even refuted by the prosecution's own witnesses, as you could see already earlier in this document.

This prosecution claimed these photos in this one motion but when they finally got to introduce their 1993 findings to the Court, after the Judge ruled on the admissibility of "prior bad acts" evidence in March 2005, they only introduced the art books found in the 1993 search that was discussed above. There is no evidence of these photos being what they are claimed to be in this motion, nor is any context given to them. When Jackson's lawyer Thomas Mesereau was asked about these alleged photos in a recent podcast by King Jordan Radio he said he had never even seen any such photos, so apparently they were never even shown to the defense, as you are obliged to do with any evidence that you attempt to introduce to Court as a prosecution.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

For the record, Jonathan Spence never claimed any wrongdoing or inappropriate behaviour by Jackson and his family still talks fondly of the entertainer.

Nevertheless, the prosecution tried to claim that Jackson molested or was inappropriate with boys who themselves denied that. Among them, Jonathan Spence. However, when the prosecution tried to introduce testimony about Jonathan Spence on March 28, 2005, the Judge turned it down exactly because all the prosecution could offer regarding him were testimonies about the alleged “grooming” of Spence (at least that is how the prosecution characterized the fact that Jackson bought him gifts, which in reality was not unique to boys, he was very generous with a lot of people, boys, girls, children and adults alike – I will address this in detail in a later chapter entitled [Grooming or a Generous Heart?](#)). Jackson buying him gifts was all the evidence the prosecution could offer to the Court about Spence and that is why he was not allowed by the Judge to be introduced to the Court as one of Jackson’s alleged victims. [39] A nude photo of Spence found in Jackson’s possession would have been just what the prosecution needed to be able to point to more than just “grooming” and be able to introduce him as an alleged victim, but they never produced any such photo. One has to wonder why if this is indeed the bombshell evidence that it was turned into in Internet folklore.

Keep in mind that this prosecution was very zealous against Michael Jackson, throwing everything but the kitchen sink at him, but the only material evidence they could come up with in this case were art photography books, old nudist magazines and legal, heterosexual adult material. They spent a lot of time with presenting Jackson’s heterosexual adult magazines to the Court which puzzled the jury because they felt it was irrelevant and did not prove the charge. That the prosecution was forced to harp on such irrelevant evidence instead of real, damning evidence is a good indication that they did not really have any damning evidence.

Tabloid media forgeries

At the beginning of this chapter I mentioned Radar Online’s campaign against Jackson in June 2016. The tabloid website published a series of malicious articles in an effort to tarnish the singer’s reputation only a few days before the seventh anniversary of his death. I would like to briefly address that here because Radar Online went as far as to post forged documents during that campaign, claiming that certain material was found in Jackson’s home that in reality was not.

They posted a prosecution document from the 2005 case that listed some of the confiscated material but instead of posting the original document they inserted photos and claims in it that were not a part of the original document. The inserted parts came from books and other material that were **not** found in Jackson’s home and were not even published until well after the search and even after the singer’s death.

People magazine was the only publication that took the effort to actually ask the authorities about it. Most other publications, including media that is not considered tabloid, did not bother to check out the veracity of Radar Online’s claims and the document they posted before copy-and-pasting them and making them go viral as if they were a fact.

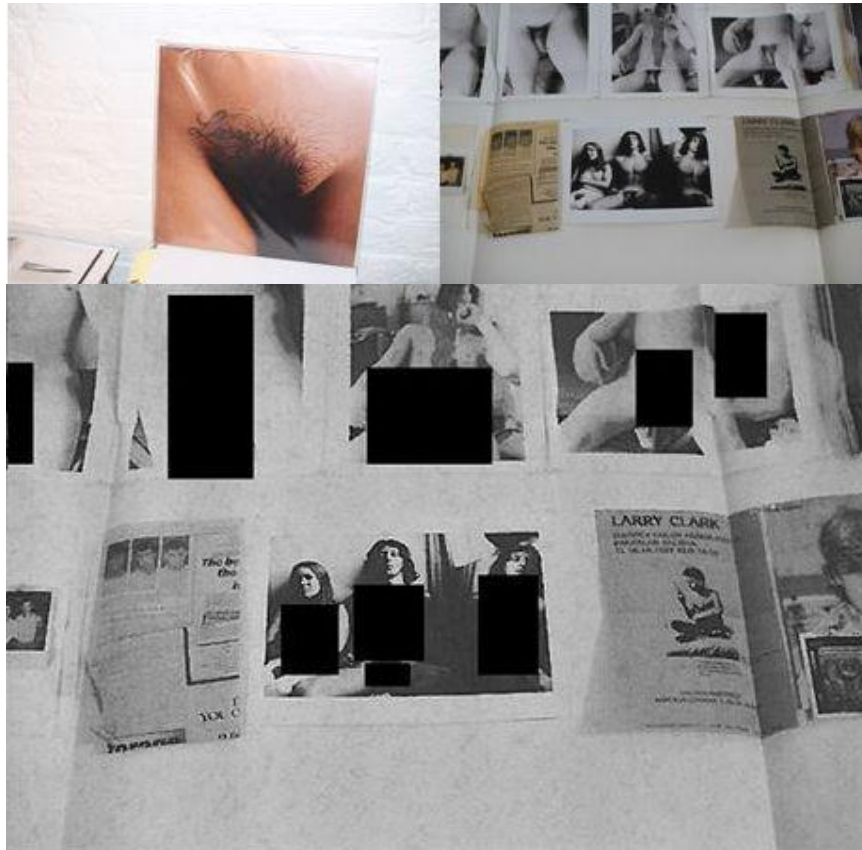
Kelly Hoover, a spokeswoman for the Santa Barbara Sheriff’s Office told People magazine that some of the material Radar Online posted seemed to have been taken from the Internet

The Michael Jackson Allegations

and is not a part of their original document: *“Some of the documents appear to be copies of reports that were authored by Sheriff’s Office personnel as well as evidentiary photographs taken by Sheriff’s Office personnel interspersed with content that appears to be obtained off the internet or through unknown sources. The photos that are interspersed appear to be some evidentiary photos taken by Sheriff’s investigators and others are clearly obtained from the internet.” [1]*

(Emphasis added.)

Some of the photos that Radar Online added to the original material:



Photos from the book entitled Larry Clark: Berlin 2012 (published in 2012)

Radar Online claimed that these photos were from the book *The Fourth Sex: Adolescent Extremes* but that is not true. We discussed that book earlier in this chapter and you can see there what type of photos really are in that book. These particular photos are not from that book but from a book entitled *Larry Clark: Berlin 2012* by Larry Clark. The book was published in 2012, so of course it could not have been found in Jackson’s possession in 2003.

Other photos that Radar Online inserted were from a book entitled *Lynn Valley* by Richard Prince that, again, was not found in Jackson’s possession. The book was published in 2007.

The Michael Jackson Allegations



Photos from the book entitled Lynn Valley (published in 2007)

It appears that Radar Online (or whoever gave them the manipulated document) took these photos from an article from the Internet where the editor of *Dazed and Confused Magazine*, Isabella Burley talks about her favourite books. Burley mentions *Fourth Sex: Adolescent Extremes* among her favourite books, so it seems that when Radar Online (or whoever gave them the manipulated document) googled the title of that book it brought up that article and they simply took *all* the photos from that website, even though these particular photos are **not** from the *Fourth Sex: Adolescent Extremes* but from other books mentioned by Burley in the same article. [40]

Regarding another photo that they added to the original document the artist himself who created the photo called Radar Online out.

The Michael Jackson Allegations



So the media is reporting that my #AmericanIdol image was found in #michaeljackson's hidden "Porn" stash... Considering that #InThePlayroom didn't debut to the public until 2010... i call bull shit on the whole story. That, or the picture was planted in the investigation files.

Jonathan Hobin calling out Radar Online on his Instagram

The tabloid media suggested that this photo meant that Jackson found pleasure in the torture of children. Not only it would not mean that, of course, but it was not even found in Jackson's possession. It could not have been because, as the artist Jonathan Hobin stated it, it was not even created until 2008 and was not published until 2010. [41]

We may want to give Radar Online the benefit of a mistake, however, they never apologized for the false rumours they created. They never reposted the police's comments that pointed to the document's manipulation, nor the comment by prosecutor Ron Zonen where he clearly stated that no child porn had ever been found in Jackson's possession [1], nor Jonathan Hobin's statements about the origin of his photo [41]. What they did was that they quietly removed the added photos from the document and acted as if nothing happened. They made no mention of the inaccuracy of their initial claim in any of their articles and made no attempt at a fair and ethical reporting of the facts.

Sources:

[1] Christine Pelisek – Michael Jackson's Estate Blasts New Pornography Reports as Sheriff and Former Prosecutor Weigh In (People.com, June 22, 2016)

<http://www.people.com/article/michael-jackson-estate-blasts-porn-reports>

[2] Jim Newton and Sonia Nazario – Police Say Seized Tapes Do Not Incriminate Jackson: Investigation: Officials continue to interview children in connection with molestation allegations. (Los Angeles Times, August 27, 1993)

http://articles.latimes.com/1993-08-27/news/mn-28516_1_jackson-case

The Michael Jackson Allegations

- [3] Plaintiff's Request to Admit Evidence of Erotic Materials to Demonstrate Defendant's Intent, Plan, Scheme and Motive (January 18, 2015)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/january-18-2005-prosecution-motion.pdf>
- [4] Closing Statements by Thomas Sneddon (June 3, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [5] Testimony of Detective Steve Robel (March 15, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [6] Testimony of police officer Janet Williams (April 19, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [7] Bill Whitfield, Javon Beard, Tanner Colby – Remember the Time: Protecting Michael Jackson In His Final Days (Weinstein Publishing, 2014)
- [8] Ray Newton and his influence on Michael Jackson's "Off The Wall"
<https://www.vater.com/vaternews/post/Vater-Artist-Ray-Newton-and-%22Off-The-Wall%22.aspx> – the original article is no longer available, for a secondary source see: <http://mike.bestforumlive.com/t498-topic>
- [9] Todd Gray – Michael Jackson: Before He Was King (Chronicle Books, October 2009)
- [10] Charles Thomson – Play That Funky Music, White Girl (March 2010)
<http://charles-thomson.net/jennifer-batten-interview.html> (the link is no longer active)
- [11] Cassandra Wiseman – Tour Set Dies with Michael Jackson (Topanga Messenger, July 16, 2009)
http://www.topangamessenger.com/story_detail.php?SectionID=17&ArticleID=3581
- [12] Court Documents and Transcripts from Jackson's 2005 trial, for example, Closing Arguments by Thomas Mesereau (June 2, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [13] The Boy: A photographic essay in the US Library of Congress:
<https://catalog.loc.gov/vwebv/holdingsInfo?searchId=1547&recCount=25&recPointer=0&bibId=8457502>
Boys Will Be Boys! in the US Library of Congress:
<https://catalog.loc.gov/vwebv/holdingsInfo?searchId=1539&recCount=25&recPointer=1&bibId=6595584>
In Search of Young Beauty – A Venture Into Photographic Art in the US Library of Congress:
<https://catalog.loc.gov/vwebv/search?searchArg1=64021361&argType1=phrase&searchCode1=K010&searchType=2&combine2=and&searchArg2=&argType2=all&searchCode2=GKEY&combine3=and&searchArg3=&argType3=all&searchCode3=GKEY&location=all&place=all&type=all&language=all&recCount=10>
- [14] Sculptor & Head Teacher, Design and Entertainment – Rod McRae
<http://www.sit.det.nsw.edu.au/imagine/ambassadors/rod-mcrae>
- [15] <http://www.penguinrandomhouse.com/authors/22650/starr-ockenga>
- [16] <https://www.abebooks.com/Cronos-Pere-Formiguera-ACTAR-Centre-dArt/12821193436/bd>
- [17] Ian McNulty – ARTIST PROFILE: John Patrick Salisbury
<http://www.myneworleans.com/core/pagetools.php?pageid=9829&url=%2FNew-Orleans-Homes-Lifestyles%2FMay-2007%2FARTIST-PROFILE-John-Patrick-Salisbury%2F&mode=print>
- [18] <https://www.vincentborrelli.com/pages/books/101174/rineke-dijkstra-james-rondeau-caroline-ehlers/rineke-dijkstra-beach-portraits>
- [19] Testimony of police officer Janet Williams at Jackson's 2005 trial (April 19, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [20] Testimony of Shawn O'Grady at Jackson's 2005 trial (March 17, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

The Michael Jackson Allegations

- [21] Testimony of Steve Robel at Jackson's 2005 trial (March 15, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [22] The last photoshoot with the King of Pop by Bruce Weber for L'Uomo Vogue (L'Uomo Vogue magazine, October 2007)
- [23] Robert Maxwell – Photographs in the US Library of Congress
<http://lccn.loc.gov/00132757>
- [24] Tom Bianchi – Bob & Rod in the US Library of Congress
<http://lccn.loc.gov/94018486>
- [25] Roy Dean – Before the Hand of Man in the US Library of Congress
<http://lccn.loc.gov/72075166>
- [26] https://books.google.hu/books/about/Room_to_Play.html?id=JkneNwAACAAJ&redir_esc=y
- [27] Simen Johan – Room to Play in the US Library of Congress
<http://lccn.loc.gov/2004297659>
- [28] Opening Statements by Thomas Sneddon at Jackson's 2005 trial (February 28, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [29] Andrew Rush – Michael Jackson visits Recycled Records (June 26, 2009)
http://chuckprophet.com/blog/michael_jackson_visits_recycled_records_-_by_andrew_rush/
- [30] The Santa Barbara County Sheriff's Department evidence sheet
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2017/05/page-44-45-als-detector.pdf>
- [31] Lisa Susan Roote Hemman's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (March 24, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [32] Charlane Marie's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (March 24, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [33] Court Transcript from Jackson's 2005 trial (March 25, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [34] Opening Statements by Thomas Mesereau at Jackson's 2005 trial (March 1, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [35] Jackson a "Playboy" Man (E!Online, March 23, 2005)
http://uk.eonline.com/news/jackson_playboy_man/49506
The original article is no longer available, for a secondary source see:
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/uk-eonline-com-jackson-a-playboy-man.pdf>
- [36] A link to the FBI document regarding the forensic examination of the hard drives of Jackson's computers with repeated notations of "nothing" being found on any of them:
<http://vault.fbi.gov/Michael%20Jackson/Michael%20Jackson%2062%20File%20Part%203%20of%203/view>
- [37] Closing Statements by Thomas Mesereau at Jackson's 2005 trial (June 2, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>
- [38] Judge may exclude Michael Jackson porn evidence (Associated Press, March 23, 2005)
http://www.cp24.com/servlet/an/local/CTVNews/20050323/jackson_porn_050323?hub=CP24Sports
The original article is no longer available, for a secondary source see:
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/judge-may-exclude-michael-jackson-porn-evidence1.pdf>

The Michael Jackson Allegations

[39] Court Transcript from Jackson's 2005 trial (March 28, 2005)

<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[40] Liv Siddall – The top five books of Dazed and Confused Editor, Isabella Burley (September 16, 2014)

<http://www.itsnicethat.com/articles/isabella-burley>

[41] Mario Carlucci – Ottawa artist angry over unauthorized use of photo in online gossip rag (June 24, 2016)

<http://www.cbc.ca/news/canada/ottawa/ottawa-artist-photo-michael-jackson-1.3651598>

Is it true that the FBI had evidence of Michael Jackson paying “hush money” to dozens of young boys?

The claim that the FBI had evidence of Michael Jackson paying off dozens of young boys after molesting them originated from a British tabloid and then was uncritically copy-and-pasted, referenced and spread by the rest of the media, but it is not true. As you will see from this chapter, fake news clearly are not just a problem of social media.

On June 30, 2013 the British tabloid, Sunday People published an “exclusive” article in which they claimed that they had insight into “secret FBI files” which *“reveal Michael Jackson spent £23million (about \$35 million) buying the silence of at least two dozen young boys he abused over 15 years”* [1].

The publication claimed that these files were in the possession of a private investigator, Anthony Pellicano who had worked for Jackson in 1993 during the Chandler case. As the story goes, when Pellicano was arrested for illegal wiretapping and illegal possession of weapons in 2002 (in an unrelated case), the FBI confiscated these documents. This narrative is how the Sunday People linked these documents to the FBI and how they claimed them to be “FBI files”.

In the article they cite a private investigator who claimed that he had worked with Pellicano in 1993 on the Jackson case. That is the unnamed source they rely on throughout the article. The man is claimed to have kept copies of the documents that he now presented to the Sunday People – so the narrative of the story.

The article claims that Pellicano was hired by Jackson to pay-off other “victims” when the singer was accused of child molestation by Jordan Chandler in 1993. The sloppy tabloid article manages to contradict itself on how many boys were allegedly paid-off: in some parts of the article (including the title) they claim 24 boys (two dozen), in another part they claim 17 boys and in yet another part of the article their source talks about three.

Despite the contradictions, the sloppiness of the article and the lack of supporting evidence, the “news” spread like wildfire. Apparently throwing in the term “FBI files” was enough to convince many people, including other journalists who did not bother to check out the veracity of the story, that the tabloid’s claims were true. In no time many other publications and websites ran the story stating it as a fact. The fake news even crossed-over to mainstream, non-tabloid media, who were just as quick and irresponsible in their uncritical copy-and-pasting of a tabloid article as other tabloids. Apparently they ignored all the red flags with this story for the sake of a sensational, click-bait headline. No one asked the logical question: if the story was true how come that this evidence had never been presented to Court at Jackson’s 2005 trial and had never even been raised by the prosecution? And what evidence does Sunday People have for its claims at all?

In actuality, Sunday People did attach documents to its article that they claimed were the evidence for their claims, but in their misleading of the public they relied on people’s unawareness of what those documents really were and where they really came from. When

The Michael Jackson Allegations

we review those documents they do not prove what is alleged in the article, nor do they represent an official stance by the FBI. Evidence of abuse and pay-offs, let alone the FBI verifying anything, is nowhere to be found in them. For those who are familiar with the details of the allegations against Michael Jackson, it is easy to spot what these documents really are – and they are not what the tabloid claims them to be.

Let's see them one by one.

Document 1

FAX July 26, 1993
TO: ANTHONY PELLICANO
FROM: [REDACTED]

Jackson's former lawyer, [REDACTED] who specializes in corporate law stated money was paid to [REDACTED]. No money was paid to [REDACTED]. According to source, Jackson has paid off child victim's parents dating back to the summer of 1992. Jackson settled with the mother of child actor/dancer wantara [REDACTED], AKA [REDACTED]. I was unable to obtain copy of said settlement worked out by lawyer named Howard Weitzman reads as follows:

1. On this seventh day of July 1992 by and between the Michael Jackson organization, herein referred to as the "organization" and [REDACTED], herein referred to as "claimant". Witnesses said, in consideration of the mutual covenants and agreements to be kept and performed on the part of set parties hereto, respectively as here and stated said party of the first part, the organization does hereby covenants and agree that it shall, 1. Have no contact of any sort, written verbal or telephonic with claimant and claimants minor child, [REDACTED]. Furthermore, the sum of six hundred thousand dollars [\$600,000] shall be paid to claimant upon execution of this agreement. In addition, the organization shall make no attempt to extort, intimidate, harass, impede or liable in any way claimant, either now or in the future. In said party of the second part claimant covenants and agreements that it shall, in

2. In consideration of receipt of above stated monies, in the amount of six hundred thousand dollars, [\$600,000] refrain from any and all contact with media and communications, newspapers, television, radio, film, books. Furthermore, claimant shall make no attempt to extort, intimidate, harass, impede or liable in any way the organization, either now or in the future. This agreement shall be binding upon the parties by their successors assigned the personal representatives. This agreement shall be enforced according to the laws of the state of California, County of Los Angeles. Seventh day of July 1992

In the end, Jackson allegedly paid off the following victims:

Device Type	Percentage of Respondents
Smartphone	92%
Tablet	78%
Smartwatch	65%
Smart TV	58%
Smart Home Hub	52%
Smart Car	48%
Smart Thermostat	42%
Smart Light Bulbs	38%
Smart Door Lock	32%
Smart Alarm System	28%
Smart Garden System	22%
Smart Pet Feeder	18%
Smart Smoke Detector	15%
Smart Water Leak Detector	12%
Smart Air Purifier	10%

Apparently this is a fax sent to Pellicano on July 26, 1993. The name of the sender is blacked out. The sender claims that a source (which is unnamed) told him or her that Jackson “*has paid off child victim’s parents dating back to the summer of 1992*”. Then the sender elaborates on a supposed \$600,000 pay-off to the mother of a “*child actor/danceer (sic) wantobe*” by quoting what is alleged to be the settlement agreement. The actual agreement is not presented. Instead we are just supposed to take the words of this person for it, of whom we do not even know who he or she is as the sender’s name is blacked out.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Fortunately we have another source for this story, which source, unlike the Sunday People, also provided a context for these claims, as well as the names which are blacked out in the document provided by the Sunday People.

Eight years before the Sunday People's article, during Michael Jackson's trial in 2005, journalist Roger Friedman, who worked for Fox News at the time, received audio tapes from a private investigator and tabloid broker *Paul Barresi*. The tapes contained recordings by a tabloid journalist, *Jim Mitteager* (National Enquirer, Globe), who had a habit of secretly taping his conversations. When he died, his wife gave the tapes to Barresi. The tapes were known in journalist circles. They, among many others, included some conversations about Michael Jackson. One of those conversations sheds light on the above mentioned document, as Friedman wrote about this story extensively in 2005:

"Mitteager, at least in the case of Jackson, relied heavily on a sketchy stringer named Taylea Shea. Her veracity consequently became integral to a lot of tabloid reporting at the time.

Shea, who seems to have gone by a number of aliases and had a long list of addresses and phone numbers, could not be contacted for this story, despite many tries.

Neighbors at the Los Angeles address at which she lived the longest do not remember her fondly. They recall a hustler and con woman who was always on the take.

"She should be in jail, if she hasn't been already," one former friend and neighbor said.

On one tape, Shea reads what sounds convincingly like a legal document drawn up between Jackson and a 12-year-old boy named Brandon P.

Richmond, who is represented by his mother, Eva Richmond.

Brandon, according to the document, received \$600,000 from Jackson. He and Jackson would no longer have any contact with each other.

Shea read the document, which is dated July 1992, to Mitteager the following year.

This would have been a blockbuster, if true, because it would make Brandon, not the differently-named boy who settled with Jackson in 1993, the first of Jackson's accusers.

Shea also says on the tape that the legal document came from the offices of famed Hollywood lawyer Bert Fields, Jackson's attorney at the time.

No reason is given why Jackson and Brandon Richmond should be separated.

The implication, however, is clear." [2]

So we learn from this article that the original source of this story was a "sketchy stringer", a woman who is recalled by her neighbors as a hustler and a con woman. The text of this alleged agreement is far too sloppy to be an agreement drawn up by professional top lawyers. It sounds like an amateurish attempt at mimicing an agreement (compare it to Jackson's [settlement agreement document with the Chandlers](#)). Also, Jackson never had a company called "Michael Jackson Organization". Moreover, there was never a Brandon P. Richmond around Jackson. Just like Jackson's company that is named in the alleged agreement, the boy and his mother seem to be completely fictional.

Because no one found any evidence that a Brandon P. Richmond ever existed in Jackson's life, tabloids speculating about Shea's story suggested that the boy in question might be

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Brandon Adams, a boy who played in Jackson's 1988 movie Moonwalker. Besides sharing the same first name, Adams was an actor and a dancer just like the fictional Brandon P. Richmond. However, Friedman contacted Adams and his family in 2005 and they denied that they had ever been paid off by Jackson. Nor does the name of Brandon Adams's mother bear any similarity to the mother's name in Shea's story. Friedman wrote in 2005:

"The Globe published the story without using names. Over time, it was assumed that Brandon P. Richmond was in fact Brandon Adams, a boy who had appeared in Jackson's "Moonwalker" video.

Discussions on the tapes indicate that the tabloids also believed the two Brandons were one and the same. But there's a problem with Shea's story: Nothing adds up.

For one thing, a source close to Fields says the document uses language uncommon to their usual agreements.

Then there's the actual family.

According to the Adamses, whom I met in January, they don't know an Eva Richmond.

Brandon Adams' mother is named Marquita Woods. And Brandon's grandmother assures me she knows nothing of a \$600,000 payment. The family has lived in a modest home in Baldwin Hills, Calif., for 30 years. Brandon Adams, who is now 25, is a struggling actor. He appeared in "D2: The Mighty Ducks" and the indie film "MacArthur Park," and is currently working on building a music career.

"I wish I had \$600,000," he said. "I'm broke."

The Adamses pointed out that Brandon never visited Neverland, just the Jackson family home in Encino.

For a short time they were friendly not only with the Jacksons, but with Sean Lennon and his mother Yoko Ono, who were also part of "Moonwalker." But the relationship seems to have ended well before Taylea Shea's big scoop."

[2]

Brandon Adams was contacted and asked about this story again on his Twitter when the Sunday People article came out in 2013. Here is what he said:

Question: "Hey, there's a British tabloid today claiming again that MJ paid you off in 1992, can you deny it once again?"

Brandon Q Adams: "smh... Lol.. Not me!"

"they luv 2 tell lies about people... I guess it just comes with the territory #MJ #Greatness" [3]

Friedman concluded that Shea likely made up the story: *"Was Shea simply lying to Mitteager to collect a big fee? It would seem so."* [2] The prosecution in the Jackson case never brought up this story in Court or elsewhere either.

Back to the document posted by the Sunday People: at the end of it the writer says: *"In the end, Jackson allegedly paid off the following victims"* and then gives a list of names that are all blocked out. No source is given as to who alleges that and based on what. If that is supposed to be the Sunday People's "evidence" of Jackson paying off dozens of boys then it is about as compelling as the fictional Brandon. All of this is nothing but a rumour

The Michael Jackson Allegations

originating from a very questionable, unreliable source, not an established fact, and it is definitely not information verified by the FBI.

In actuality, anyone who wants to give credit to the claim that the FBI had evidence that Jackson had paid-off dozens of boys, must ask the question: why then that evidence was never introduced to Court at Jackson's 2005 trial? The FBI cooperated with the prosecution during that trial, but no such evidence ever emerged.

Document 2

To: Anthony Pellicano

From: [REDACTED]

Investigative Report

[REDACTED] alleges her son [REDACTED] and other young boys were molested by Michael Jackson. [REDACTED] told her friend [REDACTED] that when the Jackson criminal case is over, she will sue Jackson for molesting her son.

The police do not want [REDACTED] to talk to [REDACTED] however private investigator [REDACTED] (Associates) found her. [REDACTED] gave [REDACTED] Hard Copy and LA Times. She got \$20,000 from Hard Copy and supposedly regrets doing it because after her segment aired the cops put her under wraps.

Detectives [REDACTED] escorted [REDACTED] yesterday, March 2nd, to [REDACTED] house. [REDACTED] has only a sixth grade education. [REDACTED] says she went along to help [REDACTED] feel more comfortable and to translate English if necessary. Specifically, the cops are looking for copies of agreements between Jackson and parents of children who [REDACTED] allegedly eye witnessed being molested including [REDACTED].

[REDACTED] appeared before the grand jury. She said nothing to harm Jackson. She made no allegations. The detectives believe [REDACTED] is lying. Eerily, according to my source, [REDACTED] suspected Jackson was molesting children because the only boys that never slept in his room were his nephews. Source told me [REDACTED] knew her son was being molested but turned a blind eye to it. [REDACTED] confided because it didn't bother her son, it didn't bother her. Detectives are looking for another boy, last name, [REDACTED] and they are interested in [REDACTED] and [REDACTED].

Detectives also want to talk to [REDACTED]. The two DA's, Los Angeles and Santa Barbara, might come together and make it a state case, because this all started in the Encino home and the Century City apartment. Detectives believe that so many people have been bought off, there is nobody to talk to. [REDACTED] is going back to [REDACTED] refused to cooperate, entirely. The witnesses who testified before the grand jury in Santa Barbara, who are hostile, are [REDACTED].

This is apparently a note written by someone to Anthony Pellicano. The sender's name is blacked out here as well. On this document there is no date given, but from the text we can derive it was probably in March 1994 ("*Detectives [REDACTED] escorted [REDACTED] yesterday, March 2nd, to [REDACTED] house*").

This part of the text, as well as the full first half of the document, is about Blanca Francia. She was the maid who received \$20,000 from Hard Copy for an interview in 1993 in which

The Michael Jackson Allegations

she claimed that she had witnessed Jackson being inappropriate with boys and that possibly her own son was molested by the singer. She and her son were prosecution witnesses at Jackson's 2005 trial so their allegations are no new revelations either. You could read about Jason Francia's allegations and how they fared in Court in the earlier chapter entitled [Jason Francia](#).

On January 26, 1995 the British tabloid *Today* reported that *"it had been discovered that Blanca Francia had used a National Enquirer reporter, Lydia Encinas, as her translator when she was interviewed by police in 1993/4 as part of the criminal investigation of Jackson"*. [4] That story was based on Mitteager's tapes:

"Paul Barresi, tabloid broker and investigator – after listening to a series of illicitly taped conversations recorded by reporter Jim Mitteager (now deceased) and left to Barresi when Mitteager died – discovered that an Enquirer reporter, Lydia Encinas, had helped to transcribe Francia's interview statements with the police in 1993. Back then, the Enquirer, were actively offering substantial incentives to anyone with a 'molestation' story to sell on Jackson – all sanctioned by the Enquirer's then editor, David Perel." [4]

and

"On April 4, 2005, journalist, Michelle Caruso, then working at the Daily News, reported in a piece about the upcoming 'prior acts' testimonies in Jackson's 2005 trial, that the 'Mitteager Tapes' included sessions with then Enquirer editor – David Perel, telling Mitteager on March 23, 1994, that: 'the reason why Lydia Encinas is involved is because she speaks Spanish and she's got a good relationship with Blanca.' [4]"

Caruso talked to detective Russ Birchim, who interviewed Francia in 1993-94.

"Caruso reported that Birchim told her, "Lydia Encinas was not the translator. But I did meet with her in Los Angeles." Caruso also noted, that when asked to explain why, in the course of a criminal investigation, he had met up with a National Enquirer reporter in the first place – Birchim refused to elaborate." [4]

All this seems to corroborate that the above document is some kind of note about what is on Mitteager's tapes and can be traced back to Paul Barresi – just like the previous document.

Instead of revealing new, previously unknown allegations, the document simply records Blanca Francia's dealings with the tabloid media. At Jackson's 2005 trial Blanca Francia admitted that besides Hard Copy, she had also contemplated selling her story to the National Enquirer but then she did not [5]. From this document it appears that this was because after her Hard Copy interview *"the cops put her under wraps"*. We also learn from this document that Blanca Francia had already contemplated a civil lawsuit against Jackson well before the criminal proceedings were even concluded: *"[She] told her friend that when the Jackson criminal case is over, she will sue Jackson for molesting her son."*

The Michael Jackson Allegations

The document further states that *“the cops are looking for agreements between Jackson and parents of children who [blocked – presumably Blanca Francia] allegedly eye witnessed being molested including [blocked].”* The cops might have been looking for such agreements at the time, but it is safe to say they found none as no such agreements have ever been presented despite a decade long investigation.

The second part of the document contains more rumours and speculations by unnamed “sources”, nothing that was ever confirmed or proven. It also states: *“Detectives believe that so many people have been bought off, there is nobody to talk to”.*

Detectives’ uncorroborated “beliefs” are not evidence. It is well documented that investigators in the Jackson case were biased and very hostile against the entertainer from the beginning (for examples, see our chapters [The Prosecution’s Hunt For Other Victims](#) and [Jason Francia](#).), so when their preconceived opinion about Jackson’s guilt was not supported by evidence and testimonies, they excused that by “believing” that the reason for that was that Jackson *“bought off”* people. However, there was never any evidence in support of that belief. Jackson was put to trial in 2005 and after more than a decade of investigation, there had never been any evidence presented of him “buying off” people.

Once again, instead of any evidence that Jackson has paid off dozens of boys, what we find in this document are speculations on the part of a desperate and biased prosecution and media to excuse their lack of evidence against the singer.

Note: These so called “hush money” rumours are not to be mistaken with the settlements of civil lawsuits Jackson had with Jordan Chandler and Jason Francia in 1994 (to learn more about those settlements please see the chapters [The Settlement](#) and [Jason Francia](#)). Even though the media sometimes characterizes those as “hush money” as well, in reality we are talking about two different things. Those were settlements well after those allegations went public and after authorities had already been notified about them. They were not a secret to the public and authorities. They were also not new information for the Sunday People in 2013 and not something that the trial jury in 2005 did not hear about.

Real “hush money” is what is paid to a family for not going public and to authorities with allegations of sexual abuse. The “secret pay off” rumours, such as this one by the Sunday People, refer to such things since the purpose of these rumours is to try to boost the number of Jackson’s alleged victims and try to make it look like he had many victims who are hiding because he had paid them off. However, there is no evidence of Michael Jackson ever paying such money to anyone. In actuality, even when the Chandlers demanded “hush money” from him for not going public and to authorities with their allegations in 1993, Jackson turned them down. For more about that see our article [The Chandlers’ Monetary Demands](#).

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Document 3

Excerpt of conversation Globe Bureau Chief Jim Mitteager and Anthony Pellicano December 10, 1993

PELLICANO: You understand. I'm not stopping you or asking you to stop you from running with anything.

JIM: Okay. What kind of situation, (story) would you want stopped? See, I don't quite understand...

PELLICANO: Nothing. I don't care.

JIM: You don't care?

PELLICANO: No, because...Listen, to me. Do you want to talk logic or do you want to talk emotions?

JIM: I want to talk reality.

PELLICANO: Well, reality is logic.

JIM: Okay.

PELLICANO: Okay, the reality is it doesn't make any difference what anybody says. The only thing that makes a difference is the time of the trial. So, logically I would like there to be every single story that you could possibly imagine coming out now, so that when the trial comes out there is nothing left to talk about.

JIM: Oh, okay.

PELLICANO: Are you guys going after [REDACTED]

JIM: It's been done. A while ago.

PELLICANO: Did you see the People Magazine article?

JIM: No, not yet. Why?

PELLICANO: Just get this week's People. And, the new Vanity Fair is out. You should read that story...about Michael. It just hit the stands.

JIM: Okay. It's not standing up the (inaudible) abuse?

PELLICANO: No, with this kid.

JIM: Oh, the Chandler kid?

PELLICANO: Yeah.

JIM: What would be news is if another kid stepped forward.

PELLICANO: There is no other kid. Now that's the thing that nobody is paying any attention to. They keep looking and looking and calling and calling. There is no other kid.

JIM: What about Wade Robson? They (Enquirer) are going to send me after her (his mother Joy) if they don't send me tomorrow.

PELLICANO: For what?

JIM: To see if she wants to talk. I mean, they told me to call her and I didn't.

PELLICANO: Call her.

JIM: Well, she's not going to talk to me.

PELLICANO: Well, call her and see what happens.

JIM: Well, we talked about you smoothing the way.

PELLICANO: Yeah, I know but...

JIM: Is that too dangerous?

PELLICANO: Well, I can't let people know we know each other.

JIM: Okay, well that's fine.

This is a document that appears to record a conversation between Jim Mitteager and Anthony Pellicano on December 10, 1993. It is a mystery what it is supposed to prove regarding the Sunday People's claims, because it actually contradicts them, as here Pellicano is telling Mitteager that there is no other accuser than Jordan Chandler.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

“There is no other kid. Now that’s the thing that nobody is paying any attention to. They keep looking and looking and calling and calling. There is no other kid.”

Please also consider that the date of this alleged conversation is December 10, 1993, which is around the time when Pellicano stopped working for Jackson or was on his way out. Pellicano worked not directly for Jackson, but for one of Jackson’s lawyers, Bert Fields and in December 1993 they left the case together, because they did not agree with the direction that some of Jackson’s other lawyers were taking the case (ie. a direction towards giving in to the Chandlers’ settlement demands – see our chapter [The Settlement](#)). Upon leaving, Pellicano stated that he believed in Jackson’s innocence and his leaving was no indication of otherwise.

The Sunday People chose not to include it, but there is another conversation between Pellicano and Mitteager that is recorded on Mitteager’s tapes. It was recorded months after Pellicano had left the Jackson case, in September 1994. This transcript was posted on the website of reporter Aphrodite Jones. On the tape Pellicano talks about his belief in Jackson’s innocence and about a conversation that he had with Jordan Chandler, who told him that Jackson never molested him and that his father only wanted money.

“PELLICANO: You have to understand something. I have nine kids. Michael [Jackson] plays with my baby. They crawl all over him. They pull his hair. They pull his nose. Sometimes he wears a bandage across his face. If I let my own kids (unintelligible) do you think there’s a chance?

MITTEAGER: Well, all things being equal, I would say, no.

PELLICANO: Not only that. If you sat this kid [Jordie Chandler] down like I did, as a matter of fact, he couldn’t wait to get up and go play video games. I said, “you don’t understand how serious this is. Your dad [Evan Chandler] is going to accuse Michael of sexual molestation. He going to say all kinds of stuff.” He [Jordie] says, “Yeah, my dad’s trying to get money.” As a matter of fact, I (unintelligible) for 45 minutes. Then I tried tricking him. I mean, I want you to know, I’m a vegetarian. I picked this kid with a fine tooth comb. So we’re there (unintelligible) with this kid... and If you sat down and talked to this kid, there wouldn’t be any doubt in your mind either. And I said Michael is all upset. We went over and over. I tried to get him to sit down and he wants to play video games while I’m sitting there. I’m sitting there with the kid’s mother [June Chandler] and David Schwartz walks in and (unintelligible) what’s this all about? And [Barry] Rothman (unintelligible) asking questions. There is no question that Rothman (unintelligible) what this is all about.” [6]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Document 4

Philip and Stella LeMarque audio taped interview – Aug 28, 1993

PHILIP: Basically, We worked on Michael's ranch seven months...Ahhh, ten months.

STELLA: Nine months.

PHILIP: Yeah, we were living on the ranch.... The only ones living on the ranch. Everyone else comes in the morning and leaves at four.

██████: Wait. You're talking together.

PHILIP: The ranch has several buildings where he has a theater and arcade. The main house has twenty-eight rooms. Something like that. And, guest rooms for the kids.

██████: And, some places that were private, right? Like the theater?

PHILIP: Well, in the theater, he has...The theater is like a regular theater. He's got seventy seats.

STELLA: And behind the wall, he has two bedrooms. Sometimes he would be there with the kids. I wanted to take a picture of the bedroom but I couldn't.

PHILIP: So he could watch porn movies.

██████: You say he watched porn movies?

This is the transcript of an audio taped interview that tabloid broker Paul Barresi conducted with a couple Philip and Stella LeMarque on August 28, 1993, shortly after the Chandler allegations broke to the public and tabloids were after any sensational story about the singer. So this document, like all of the above ones, can be traced back to Barresi as well.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

The couple, who worked for Jackson in 1991 for ten months, alleged on this tape that they had witnessed Jackson behave inappropriately with certain boys. The Sunday People presented these allegations as if they were some kind of bombshell news, never before heard allegations, even suggesting that the couple's claims were verified by the FBI.

In reality, the LeMarques' claims were nothing new and certainly not proven. The LeMarques' allegations were discussed in detail in an earlier chapter entitled **Phillip and Stella LeMarque**. Now, only a short summary: Phillip LeMarque testified at Jackson's 2005 trial about his allegation that he had witnessed Jackson put his hand in Macaulay Culkin's pants, but was discredited by Culkin himself [7]. Like neither one of these so called "third party witnesses", the LeMarques initially did not turn to authorities either, but tried to sell their story to tabloids for money. First their asking price was \$100,000 then they promised to further embellish their story if they got \$500,000 [8] [9].

Moreover, in a 1994 *Frontline* documentary entitled *Tabloid Truth* even Barresi, who conducted the above interview, expressed his doubt about the credibility of the couple. Barresi, a self-confessed opportunist, admitted that he did not care if the story he sold to tabloids was true or not, as long as he was paid [8].

Document 5-6

The image shows two property receipts. The left receipt is from the Office of District Attorney, Los Angeles County, Bureau of Investigation, Receipt No. 08860. It is dated 8-30-97 and signed by Carlos Perez. The description of the item is: "ONE, MICROCASSETTE, X860, OLUMPIA WITH DATE '8-28-97' WRITTEN ON SIDE B". The right receipt is from the United States Department of Justice, Federal Bureau of Investigation, Receipt for Property Received/Returned/Released/Seized. It is dated 12-3-03 and signed by [redacted]. The description of the item is: "3 Sony mini meg0 cassette, (a) 1/194 - 1/13-94, (b) 12/21/93, (c) Jackson (JMS) 9/9/93".

OFFICE OF DISTRICT ATTORNEY
LOS ANGELES COUNTY
BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION
Receipt No. 08860

RECEIVED OF: [redacted]
ADDRESS: [redacted] TELEPHONE: [redacted]
ONE, MICROCASSETTE, X860, OLUMPIA
WITH DATE "8-28-97" WRITTEN ON
SIDE B.

CASE NO. 44
DATE 8-30-97
BY: Carlos Perez
District Attorney

LEMARQUE INTERVIEW

UNITED STATES DEPARTMENT OF JUSTICE
FEDERAL BUREAU OF INVESTIGATION
Receipt for Property Received/Returned/Released/Seized

File # _____
On (date) 12-3-03
item(s) listed below were:
☐ Received From
☐ Returned To
☐ Released To
☐ Seized

(Name) [redacted]
(Street Address) [redacted]
(City) [redacted]

Description of Item(s):
3 Sony mini meg0 cassette,
(a) 1/194 - 1/13-94
JMS
(b) 12/21/93 [redacted]
(c) Jackson (JMS) 9/9/93

Received By: [redacted] (Signature)
Received From: [redacted] (Signature)

These documents are property receipts about someone providing audio tapes to the Los Angeles District Attorney's office and the FBI respectively. They were probably attached to the Sunday People's article in an attempt to give the documents some sense of "officialism" and somehow to link them to the FBI. However, the only thing they prove is that someone

The Michael Jackson Allegations

provided audio tapes to authorities. They do not reveal anything about the authorities' opinion about the provided material.

Thanks to the 1994 *Tabloid Truth* documentary, we know how and why Document 5 was produced. It is the property receipt about someone giving the audio tape of the LeMarque interview to the Los Angeles District Attorney's office on August 30, 1993. From the *Tabloid Truth* documentary we know that this was Paul Barresi himself, and that it is his name that is blacked out on the document attached by Sunday People. It depends on which upload of the documentary you are watching but [here](#) you can see it at around 35:27. It is exactly the same document that the Sunday People tried to pass on as some newly discovered "FBI file" in 2013. However, in the documentary Barresi himself explains what it really is and the purpose why it was produced. The relevant part is at 35:21-36:36 in the documentary. Barresi's explanation also gives us an insight into the manipulative tactics of the tabloid world:

"I knew how to play the tabloids like a harp."

If Barresi brought the tape to the DA he'd have nothing to fear for his illegal tape recording. Besides it would juice up the story. If the DA's working on it that's action, that's inside information!

"That was the edge that worked well. If my story appeared in the slightest innocuous they would throw it out the window. So this is one way to do it with grand style, certainly."

"So I called the editor of the Globe and I said: 'I have a tape, I'm on the way downtown to hand it to the District Attorney.' And his words were: 'Let us come with you.' And then I knew I had them. The next thought on my mind was I'm gonna ask for 30 thousand dollars. You always ask twice as much as what you hope to get. He put me on hold and within less than a minute came back and he said: 'well, we can't give you 30, we give you 10.' I said: 'Make it 15.' He said 'You have a deal'."

"Could you see the headline coming?"

"Oh, yeah. Sure. And I could see that money coming too." [8]

The Sunday People used the same manipulative tactics when they presented these documents as "FBI files", knowing that linking them to the FBI would give them a sense of credibility and officialness in many people's eyes, even though just because a paper or a tape recorded interview is submitted to the FBI it does not mean it is credible or that its contents are proven. Upon scrutiny, these documents fail to provide evidence for the Sunday People's claims and all can be traced back to Paul Barresi rather than the FBI. Barresi was probably the anonymous source behind the Sunday People's story, presenting himself as someone who worked together with Pellicano on the Jackson case in 1993. However, Barresi never worked for Jackson, he is simply an opportunistic tabloid broker.

The irony of the media's pay-off allegations

As you have seen, neither authorities or the media could ever come up with any evidence in support of this "hush-money" myth around Jackson. The singer was on trial in 2005, and

The Michael Jackson Allegations

during that trial the FBI closely co-operated with the Santa Barbara prosecution. There has never been any evidence presented that would show such payments. And here is the irony: the only evidence of pay-offs which came out at the trial was the money that the prosecution's several witnesses had received from the tabloid media for their allegations. It is ironic that the media, whose members demonstrably had paid out fortunes to people for the slander of Michael Jackson, accuse the singer of secret pay-offs with no evidence whatsoever. (For more about the media's role in the Michael Jackson allegations please read the earlier chapter [The Media's Role In The Allegations Against Michael Jackson](#).)

About two years after the Sunday People's above addressed article, in the April of 2015 the story was rehashed again by the media, thanks to a new version of it by a tabloid journalist, Stacy Brown. The story once again spread through the mainstream media like wildfire and none of the publications that copy-and-pasted it bothered to fact-check it. In actuality, this time the fake news spread even more than in 2013, and some publications still reference them as if they were a fact. In this 2015 version of the story, the sum that Jackson had allegedly paid out as "hush money" to the families of 20 of his alleged victims, was elevated even further: the \$35 million that was claimed in 2013 now turned into \$200 million.

The originator of this new version, Stacy Brown is a freelance tabloid journalist who used to be a Jackson family hanger-on until the early 2000s. Although he is still promoting himself as a "Jackson family insider", he was never in Michael Jackson's inner circle and was not close to the singer at all. He was associated with Jackson's eldest sister Rebbie Jackson and her husband Nathaniel Brown, but that is also in the past. Initially, in the early 2000s Brown had a positive attitude towards the Jackson family and Michael Jackson, but he changed his tune when it became clear that Michael Jackson did not want to associate with him. Since then he made it his mission to regularly write slanderous articles about the singer, his family and even his children. Earlier in this document I have mentioned the sensationalist book that Brown wrote together with Bob Jones during Jackson's trial. For details see the chapter [Bob Jones and Stacy Brown](#).

The 2015 version of the story was a rehash of the 2013 story with a couple of modifications, like the above mentioned huge increase in the sum of money allegedly paid out. The 2015 version claimed that evidence of these secret pay-offs was "excluded" from Michael Jackson's trial in 2005. This is demonstrably not true. All the court documents from the 2005 trial and the period leading up to it (like pre-trial motions) are [freely available online](#) and there is nothing in them about \$200 million being paid out by Jackson to 20 alleged victims. Nor is there anything about \$35 million being paid out to two dozen alleged victims, for that matter. There is simply nothing like that in those documents. Likewise, you will not find any such claim, evidence or any reference to such alleged payments in the [court testimonies](#). The prosecution, the FBI or any other investigating authority had never even offered any such evidence, so it was not a case of such evidence being "excluded" from the trial, such evidence simply did not exist. This prosecution was very zealous in its investigation against Jackson, they certainly would not have left any stone unturned if such evidence had existed. Just because a lie is repeated many times over it does not become true.

Howard Weitzman, attorney for the Estate of Michael Jackson said this to Entertainment Tonight regarding these claims:

The Michael Jackson Allegations

"We are aware of recent false 'reports' regarding Michael Jackson having, among other things, paid over \$200 million to 20 'victims,'" Weitzman told ET in a statement on Monday. "There is not a shred of evidence to support these ludicrous 'reports.' It is unfortunate that, even in death, Michael cannot be free of these types of allegations, but we are confident that the truth will prevail in the end, just as it did in 2005 when a jury fully exonerated him." [10]

Did Michael Jackson pay "hush-money" to a family in Brazil in 2003?

There is another "hush-money" story that lacks any factual evidence and was born under questionable circumstances, yet in Internet folklore you will sometimes see people refer to it as if it is a fact. As the story goes, Michael Jackson secretly paid "hush-money" to a mysterious Brazilian family, supposedly a certain Ruby and David Martinez, in 2003 for allegedly molesting their son years before.

The story originates from Jackson's former associate, Marc Schaffel. Schaffel formerly worked as an advisor for the star but in 2004, after he stopped working for Jackson, he sued him claiming that Jackson owed him \$1.6 million, then later \$3.8 million, for various endeavors he worked on for the pop star. Jackson counter-sued him claiming that Schaffel owed him money too. Eventually Schaffel was awarded some of his demands and Jackson too was awarded some of his.

The relevant thing for our purpose is that during the civil trial of that case, in an attempt to get the case settled out of court, at one point Schaffel out of the blue made a claim of \$300,000 that he had never claimed before. Then he made his rounds in the media, and especially appeared to feed articles written by Roger Friedman for Fox News, in which he suggested or downright claimed that this was some sort of secret "hush money" pay-off in November 2003 on behalf of Jackson for a family in Brazil, who *"felt their child was abused by the pop star"* [11].

In another article written by Friedman, a couple of days later the story got more confusing. Now Friedman claimed that Jackson wanted to adopt 3-4-year-old children from Brazil, a boy and a girl, and *"the \$300,000 secret payment that I told you about last week was going to be used for this adoption. When that didn't work out, the money (already in Brazil) was subsequently used to buy the continued silence of a family Jackson had quietly paid off years earlier when they claimed he'd had inappropriate relations with their son"* [12].

In each case the articles end with what seem like thinly veiled threats to make Jackson settle with Schaffel or else Schaffel would make more allegations, which could potentially harm Jackson's reputation:

"The Schaffel case continues Thursday in Santa Monica, although I cannot understand why Jackson doesn't borrow the money and settle out of court. More testimony in this direction, no matter how oblique, cannot be good for him." [11]

and

The Michael Jackson Allegations

“There’s more to this story, and it only gets worse. The reason all this is coming out, of course, is because the Schaffel v. Jackson trial continues without a settlement. The reason for this can be only one of two things: Jackson is either getting the worst advice ever from lawyers, who are also billing him at top dollar, or he simply doesn’t have the cash on hand to settle the case.

My guess is it’s both, and before this trial is over, Michael Jackson’s reputation will be even more thoroughly damaged than it was last year.” [12]

Despite of these threats, Jackson refused to settle the case.

Apart from Schaffel claiming it during that period of time when he was desperate for an out of court settlement with Jackson and tried to achieve that by threatening the star with bad publicity, there is not any evidence of this story’s veracity or even that such a family ever existed around Jackson at all, let alone secret allegations by them or “hush-money” payments to them.

Moreover, we learn from an Associated Press report that at the civil trial between Schaffel and Jackson, a forensic accountant Jan Goren testified that he had no reason to believe that this allged payment ever took place.

“Jan Goren, who showed jurors how he traced millions of dollars through the various bank accounts of F. Marc Schaffel, also said he found no substantiation for a \$300,000 payment Schaffel claimed he provided to a mysterious “Mr. X” in South America on Jackson’s behalf.” [13]

[...]

“On the purported delivering of \$300,000 to “Mr. X” in South America, Goren testified that Schaffel never claimed the amount until this year and “there is no check, no moneys leaving a bank ... no bank statements, no ledgers.”

“I have nothing that corroborates it from a documentary point of view,” he said.

He noted that the entry was coded “EFT,” which refers to an electronic fund transfer to another account. But he said the amount was never transferred to or from any account.

“My conclusion on this is it is not a valid claim,” Goren said.” [13]

During Goren’s cross examination Schaffel’s lawyer Howard King tried to prove this claim by showing a receipt of a withdrawal of \$258,000 from a Hungarian bank. However, the date of the withdrawal was three years before Schaffel claimed this alleged pay-off took place – at the time Schaffel had not even worked for Jackson yet. The sum did not match, the place did not match and the date was off by three years.

“On the issue of the \$300,000, King asked if Goren had seen a receipt from a Hungarian bank.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

“No, you can show me,” said Goren.

But it wasn't until redirect examination by Mundell that the receipt was displayed in court. It showed a withdrawal of \$258,000 from a Hungarian bank three years before Schaffel claims he was dispatched to South America on a mission for Jackson.

“Of course this does not influence my opinion,” Goren said. “This transaction took place three years before. So what? How does it end up in South America? I don't see the connection at all.” [13]

Before or after this civil case Schaffel never made this claim. He never went to authorities during the 2003-05 criminal investigation and the 2005 criminal trial against Jackson to report any knowledge about alleged secret “hush-money” payments. He also never made this claim again after this civil trial had ended. It was exclusive to this period when he tried to use this story to create bad publicity in order to make Jackson settle with him and, as you have seen, evidence presented at that civil trial did not support this claim.

Sources:

[1] James Desborough, David Gardner – Michael Jackson paid L23MILLION buying silence of at least TWO DOZEN young boys he abused over 15 years (Mirror.co.uk, June 30, 2013)

<http://www.mirror.co.uk/news/world-news/michael-jackson-paid-23million-buying-2011662>

[2] Roger Friedman – Was There an Unknown Jacko Accuser? (FoxNews.com, March 25, 2005)

<http://www.foxnews.com/story/2005/03/25/was-there-unknown-jacko-accuser/print>

[3] Brandon Q Adams Twitter

<https://twitter.com/BrandonAdams22/status/351200257968840704>

[4] Michael Jackson: The Making Of A Myth – Part 1

<http://www.stereoboard.com/pdfs/Michael-Jackson-The-Making-Of-A-Myth-Part-I.pdf>

[5] Blanca Francia's Testimony at Jackson's 2005 Trial (April 5, 2005)

<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[6] Taped phone conversation between Anthony Pellicano and Jim Mitteager (September, 1994)

It was originally posted on Aphrodite Jones' website at

http://www.aphroditejones.com/Michael_Jackson_Trial/Michael_Jackson_Trial.htm

The website has been since then reorganized and the Michael Jackson Trial section is not available anymore, but it is still available on Web Archive:

https://web.archive.org/web/20120317151926/http://www.aphroditejones.com:80/Michael_Jackson_Trial/Michael_Jackson_Trial.htm

[7] Macaulay Culkin's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (May 11, 2005)

<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[8] Tabliod Truth – The Michael Jackson Scandal (documentary by Frontline, February 1994)

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=BWoX4gd4JW0>

(Barresi talks about the LeMarques between 31:50-33:00 and 34:40-38:45.)

(Barresi talks about how and why he took the LeMarque tape to the Los Angeles District Attorney's office at 35:21-36:36.)

[9] Phillip LeMarque's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (April 8, 2005)

<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

The Michael Jackson Allegations

[10] Raphael Chestang – Michael Jackson Accused of Paying Millions in Hush Money to Alleged Molestation Victims (ET Online, April 6, 2015)

http://www.etonline.com/news/162324_michael_jackson_accused_of_paying_millions_hush_money_to_alleged_molestation_victims

[11] Roger Friedman – Jacko's Big Secret: \$300,000 Payoff to Another Family? (FoxNews.com, July 6, 2006)

<http://www.foxnews.com/story/2006/07/06/jacko-big-secret-300000-payoff-to-another-family/>

[12] Roger Friedman – Michael Jackson Tried to Adopt Brazilian Babies (FoxNews.com, July 10, 2006)

<http://www.foxnews.com/story/2006/07/10/michael-jackson-tried-to-adopt-brazilian-babies/>

[13] Linda Deutsch – Accountant Disputes Claims Against Jackson (Associated Press, 13th July 2006)

The original article is no longer available, for a secondary source see:

<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2017/01/accountant-disputes-claims-against-jackson.pdf>

What about Jackson's sharing his bedroom with unrelated children?

Some people base their own “guilty” verdict about Michael Jackson simply on his own statement of seeing nothing wrong with sharing a bed with unrelated children. To be sure, this statement (that directly led to [The 2005 Allegations](#)) and also the fact that he slept in the same room with children, accompanied with his wealth, fame and eccentricities, made him vulnerable to these kind of allegations. It is also understandable why this could make people feel uncomfortable, but once again a context should be given, and we should be careful with jumping to hasty conclusions, while disregarding everything else that is problematic with the allegations against him, as discussed in detail in this document.

Possibly the biggest publicity backlash that Jackson has received because of this “sharing bed” issue was after the airing of the 2003 Martin Bashir documentary, *Living with Michael Jackson*. In that interview the star talked about “sharing bed” with children. The infamous scene featured Jackson and his later accuser Gavin Arvizo holding hands while Jackson insisting that there was nothing wrong with “sharing bed” with unrelated children. He said that whenever a child wanted to sleep in his bed he would allow them, while he would sleep on the floor in a sleeping bag. He also said that sometimes he and children, like Macaulay Culkin and his brother Kieran, had slept in the same bed, but he usually would sleep on the floor. Jackson also stated that he had never asked children to come to his bedroom:

*“[W]e have guest units, but whenever kids come here they always want to stay with me, they never want to stay in the guest rooms. **And I have never invited them into my room, they always just wanna stay with me. They say, ‘Can I stay with you tonight?’**, so I go ‘If it’s OK with your parents then yes you can’.” [1]*

(Emphasis added.)

At the 2005 trial both the prosecution and the defense agreed that at the time of the Bashir interview there was no other occasion of Gavin sleeping in Jackson's bedroom than that one occasion in 2000 when other people also slept in the room. In the interview with Bashir Gavin also admitted that he had specifically asked Jackson to be allowed in his bedroom and sleep there with his brother Star:

*“Gavin: There was one night, **I asked him** if I could stay in his bedroom. He let me stay in the bedroom. And I was like, ‘Michael you can sleep in the bed’, and he was like ‘No, no, you sleep on the bed’, and I was like ‘No, no, no, you sleep on the bed’, and then he said ‘Look, if you love me, you’ll sleep in the bed’. I was like ‘Oh mannnn?’ so I finally slept on the bed. But it was fun that night.*

Jackson: I slept on the floor. Was it a sleeping bag?

Gavin: You packed the whole mess of blankets on the floor.” [1]

(Emphasis added.)

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Despite of the public outrage and the media frenzy that went into all kind of speculations about Jackson's relationship with Gavin due to that scene, few paid attention to what Jackson actually meant by "sharing bed" with Gavin. He meant giving up his bed to Gavin and his brother Star *while he would sleep on the floor*. Never in the interview is it claimed that Jackson and Gavin had slept in the same bed. In actuality, both state that Jackson slept on the floor, and at the 2005 trial Gavin testified that Jackson's friend and personal assistant, Frank Cascio had also slept in the room that night, as well as Gavin's brother, Star and Jackson's two children, Prince and Paris. All the children slept on Jackson's bed while the two adult men, Jackson and Cascio, slept on the floor [2]. In his 2011 book entitled *My Friend Michael: An Ordinary Friendship with an Extraordinary Man*, Cascio recalls that it were the Arvizo children who insisted that they wanted to sleep in Jackson's bedroom despite of the fact that Jackson was reluctant to let them.

"Gavin and Star kept begging, I kept saying no, and then Janet [Arvizo – the boys' mother] said to Michael, "They really want to stay with you. It's okay with me." Michael relented. He didn't want to let the kids down. His heart got in the way, but he was fully aware of the risk. He said to me, "Frank, if they're staying in my room, you're staying with me. I don't trust this mother. She's fucked up." I was totally against it, but I said, "All right. We do what we have to do." Having me there as a witness would safeguard Michael against any shady ideas that the Arvizos might have been harboring. Or so we were both naive enough to think." [3]

Nevertheless, this is the scene in the Bashir documentary that caused worldwide uproar and speculation about the nature of Jackson's relationship with children. The picture the media painted of Jackson was of a predator, who lured children into his bedroom with the intent of sexually molesting them while keeping away their parents. In reality, Jackson's two-storey bedroom was a gathering place for families, friends and the parents were allowed to stay there, as well as the children.

In his 2005 book entitled *Lost Boy*, Macaulay Culkin's father Kit Culkin wrote the following about these so called "sleepovers":

"Michael's bedroom (an enormous room with alcoves and dressing rooms and a fireplace and French doors leading out to a private garden, as well as a stairway leading to the entire upstairs) was almost always an open place to hang out in, as was most all of the rest of the house. My children would sit on the bed, as would I, to play cards or checkers, or watch television or whatever, but then we would do so most everywhere else also. They might of occasion fall asleep there, just as they might of occasion fall asleep most anywhere else, and at most any daylight hour. While they had a bedtime, I rarely enforced it, as they were, after all, at Neverland to play; and as is most always the case with children (as any parent will tell you), they never enforced it themselves, thinking that they should get some rest so as to be better rested to play again the coming day. Children don't worry about "the coming day". Therefore, I was constantly and most usually after suppertime, having to round them up and often carry them (sometimes by golf cart) to their accommodations. They'd fall asleep watching a movie at the movie theater or playing with the toy trains in the toy trains room, and there was one occasion,

The Michael Jackson Allegations

I well remember, when one of them was actually found asleep on the carousel!” [4]

He also wrote:

“First of all, I never saw or heard anything at all during my early days of knowing Michael to suggest that he was a pedophile. I would note that a busload or two of kids might arrive at the estate of an afternoon and be taken straight to the amusement park or the movie theater, and then just as swiftly be bused back off the grounds. In fact, I believe that there was an entire office in an adjacent building and an entire staff that was responsible for overseeing these visits; and I noted also that on no occasion at all did any of these children ever get asked to the house for any reason whatsoever. These were all strictly well-planned and well-supervised excursions, and the people who made them up quite apart from the people (such as those of my own family) who were actual guests. And while we’re on the subject of guests, this list was hardly confined to children. Indeed, adults roamed most everywhere, many of them from the world of government, including (just for instance) former President and neighbor Ronald Reagan, together with “Just-Say-No” Nancy, as well as Secretary of Defense William Cohen and not a few others that I’ve since forgotten; none of whom certainly gave one the feeling that the estate was (goodness knows) a den of pedophilia.” [4]

Even Jordan Chandler’s mother, June Chandler admitted in her 2005 testimony that she was allowed to go into Jackson’s bedroom and stay there whenever she wanted:

And why were you in the bedroom those ten times?

Because I’m Jordie’s mother. I’m allowed to go into the bedroom.

Were you dropping clothes off?

Oh, I might have. I don’t recall.

Did you ever sit down and watch T.V. or anything in there?

Yes.

How often did you do that?

A few times.

Did you ever have food delivered to you in Michael Jackson’s bedroom?

I don’t recall.[5]

In an interview that he gave to Larry King in 2004, Macaulay Culkin stated very firmly that all those years that he had spent time with Jackson as a child, including several occasions of sleeping in his bedroom, Jackson had never done anything inappropriate to him. He was more like a big kid who simply liked the fun of playing videogames, watching movies, going to the

The Michael Jackson Allegations

amusement park. According to Culkin, another reason why Jackson enjoyed children's company was that they did not care about his celebrity and that they talked to him in a normal way. Culkin also addressed the "sharing bed" issue:

Larry King: What happened at the house? That's what all these things... you know what people are concerned about.

Macaulay Culkin: That's so weird, you know. Nothing happened. You know, I mean nothing, really. We played video games, you know, we played in his amusement park. The thing with that whole thing is that, you know, they go 'oh, you slept in the same bedroom as him'. I don't think you understand. Michael Jackson's bedroom is two storeys and has like three bathrooms and this and that. So when I slept in his bedroom, yeah, but understand the whole scenario. And the thing is with Michael that he is not very good at explaining himself and he never really has been 'cause he is not a very social person. I mean we are talking about someone who's been sheltered and sheltered himself also in the last, like, 30 years. So he's not very good at communicating with people and not very good at conveying what he's actually trying to say to you. So when he says something like that, you know, he doesn't quite understand why people react the way they do. [6]

Another person who spent time with Jackson since an early childhood was Frank Cascio. Echoing Culkin's sentiments, in his 2011 book entitled *My Friend Michael: An Ordinary Friendship with an Extraordinary Man*, Cascio also attested to the fact that the media often misrepresented this issue. Cascio wrote in his book:

"In Bashir's interview, Michael was shown holding Gavin's hand and telling the world that kids slept in his bed. Anyone who knew Michael would recognize the honesty and innocent candor of what he was trying to communicate. But Bashir was determined to cast it in a different light.

What Michael didn't bother to explain, and what Bashir didn't care to ask about, was that Michael's suite at Neverland, as I've said before, was a gathering place, with a family room downstairs and a bedroom upstairs. Michael didn't explain that people hung out there, and sometimes they wanted to stay over. He didn't explain that he always offered guests his bed, and for the most part slept on the floor in the family room below. But, perhaps more important, he didn't explain that the guest were always close friends like us Cascios and his extended family.

One of the biggest misconceptions about Michael, a story that plagued him for years following the Bashir documentary, was that he had an assortment of children sleeping in his room at any given time. The truth was that random children never came to Neverland and stayed in Michael's room. Just as my brother Eddie and I had done when we were younger, the family and friends who did stay with Michael, did so of their own volition. Michael just allowed it to happen because his friends and family liked to be around him.

What Michael said on Bashir's video is true. "You can have my bed if you want. Sleep in it. I'll sleep on the floor. It's your's. Always give the best to the

The Michael Jackson Allegations

company, you know.” Michael had no hesitation about telling the truth because he had nothing to hide. He knew in his heart and mind that his actions were sincere, his motives pure, and his conscience, clear. Michael innocently and honestly said, “Yes, I share my bed, there is nothing wrong with it.” The fact of the matter is, when he was “sharing” his bed, it meant he was offering his bed to whoever wanted to sleep in it. There may have been times when we slept up there as well, but he was usually on the floor next to his bed, or downstairs sleeping on the floor. Although Bashir, for obvious reasons, kept harping on the bed, if you watch the full, uncut interview, it’s impossible not to understand what Michael was trying to make clear: when he said he shared his bed, he meant he shared his life with the people he saw as family.

Now, I know that most grown men don’t share their private quarters with children, and those who do so are almost always up to no good. But that wasn’t my experience with Michael. As one of those kids who, along with his brother, had any number of such sleepovers with Michael, I know better than anyone else what did happen and what didn’t happen. Was it normal to have children sleep over? No. But it’s also not considered especially normal for a grown man to play with Silly String or have water balloon fights, at least not with the enthusiasm Michael brought to the activities. It’s also not normal for a grown man to have an amusement park installed in his backyard. Do these things make such a man a pedophile?

I’m quite sure that the answer is no.

The bottom line: Michael’s interest in young boys had absolutely nothing to do with sex. I say this with the unassailable confidence of firsthand experience, the confidence of a young boy who slept in the same room as Michael hundreds of times, and with the absolute conviction of a man who saw Michael interact with thousands of kids. In all the years that I was close to him, I saw nothing that raised any red flags, not as a child and not as an adult. Michael may have been eccentric, but that didn’t make him a criminal.

*The problem, though, was that this point of view wasn’t represented in the documentary. Listening to Michael talk, people who didn’t know him were disturbed by what he was saying, not only because his words were taken out of context but also because Bashir, the narrator, was telling them they **SHOULD BE** disturbed. The journalist repeatedly suggested that Michael’s statements made him very uncomfortable. Michael was quirky enough without the machinations of a mercenary newshound, to be sure, but there’s no doubt that Bashir manipulated viewers for his own ends. His questions were leading, the editing misguided. As I watched the broadcast, it seemed to me that Bashir’s plan all along had been to expose Michael in whatever way he could in order to win the highest ratings he could for his show.” [3]*

Sources:

[1] Martin Bashir – Living with Michael Jackson interview/documentary (February 2003)

The Michael Jackson Allegations

[2] Gavin Arvizo's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (March 14, 2005)

<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[3] Frank Cascio – My Friend Michael: An Ordinary Friendship with an Extraordinary Man (HarperCollins, Kindle Edition, November 15, 2011)

[4] Kit Culkin – Lost Boy (May 09, 2005, the book was published and distributed exclusively through KitCulkin.com)

[5] June Chandler's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (April 11, 2005)

<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

[6] Larry King's Interview with Macaulay Culkin (CNN, 2004)

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=QeQFGT5Jbgo>

(The part about the "bedroom sharing" can be found at about 1:17.)

Grooming or a Generous Heart?

The prosecution and a part of the media often used the loaded term “grooming” while trying to describe Michael Jackson’s friendship with children, specifically young boys. Grooming in this context is meant as *“the act of attempting to gain the trust of a minor with the intention of having a sexual relationship with him or her”* [1].

Jackson often befriended various families and bought their children and/or the parents gifts, but that this was done with the intention of sexually abusing the children is not a fact, but once again, an unproven prosecution/media theory.

As always, it is important to put things into a context. The context is that Jackson was an extremely generous man, and that was the case since his childhood. He did not regularly give gifts only to young boys, nor only to children and/or their parents, but also to adult friends and even complete strangers. The prosecution and the accusers later tried to use his generosity against him and tried to turn it into something heinous, but their claims should not be taken as a fact, considering all their credibility problems that were discussed earlier in this document.

The reality is that Jackson was generous with everyone: male or female, young or old, friends or strangers. The overwhelming majority of the young people whom he befriended defended him from the allegations and said that they had never seen or experienced any nefarious intention by the entertainer.

There are many documented cases of Jackson’s generosity and in this chapter I will give you a by far not exhaustive list of examples to show that his generosity was not at all limited to his treatment of young boys, but he behaved like that with everyone he considered a friend or even complete strangers.

Generous as a child

Both of Michael Jackson’s parents remember him as very generous and giving from an early childhood. His father Joseph Jackson said in 2009: *“He wasn’t ever really interested in money. I’d give him his share of a night’s earnings and the next day he’d buy ice cream or candy for all the kids in neighbourhood.”* [2]

In a 1990 book entitled *My Family, The Jacksons*, written by Michael’s mother Katherine Jackson and Richard Wiseman we read:

“I asked that question regarding some of Michael’s other personality traits as he was growing up. There was the matter, for example, of his generosity. Occasionally it went too far.

One day when Michael was in the second grade I couldn’t locate a piece of my jewelry. “What happened to my bracelet?” I finally asked the kids.

Michael looked up and replied nonchalantly, “Oh, I gave it to my teacher.”

The Michael Jackson Allegations

I didn't punish him because I thought it was nice for him to want to give. But I didn't instruct him: "Don't do it again." But Michael didn't listen, and more of my jewelry disappeared." [3]

Female children

Laura Chaplin, the granddaughter of Charlie Chaplin

"Michael Jackson came three times to the mansion, he was like a child" "I was about 12 years old when Michael Jackson came to the mansion. Subsequently, he called me almost every day to chat. He sent me incredible birthday gifts. Huge cartons. I went up on stage with him in Geneva. He was a great friend of the family. " During his first visit, MJ had landed by helicopter in the garden of the domain. "I was pretty impressed," said Laura. The King of Pop, too, but the big dogs. "We had nine dogs and he was afraid. We had to lock them up before it happens. "At the time of eating, seeing the big table, Jackson sat down with the children. "He was very shy. He was doing pirouettes in the garden. We played the PlayStation. He was a great kid. "Smile", composed by my grandfather was one of his favorite tracks " [4]

The Taiwanese Ma Twins

"A Taiwanese fan Mrs. Ma Qi Zhen not only met Michael with her family, but also she became a close friends of Michael for many years. Mrs Ma had always kept a low profile about their 17 years family friendship with Michael Jackson. It was until Michael's sudden passing last June, did Mrs. Ma have spoken out for the first time about this in the media about her friendship with the King of Pop. She pays tribute on how kind, loving and approachable the King of Pop was. She shared her memories of an extraordinary friend and how she felt that Michael was misunderstood by many.

It was a fax message that leads to the friendship between Michael and the Ma Family. During the Dangerous Tour in Taiwan in Sept 1993, Mrs Ma and her husband had trouble of getting tickets for their nine month old twin daughters for the concert, as ticket will not be allowed to be sold to their 9 month old babies for safety concern. Ma wouldn't settle for it, as it was going to be the last day of Michael's concert in Taiwan. She decided to give it a try and send a fax message to the hotel that Michael was staying in. She directly address the fax message to ask him asking him to allow her twins to go to the concert. She didn't really expect that Michael would see it, next thing she knew was that Michael did read it and responded to it. He immediately sent down VIP passes for the family to be able to come to the concert and to meet him personally in his hotel room after the concert.

When the family arrived at his Presidential Suite, Michael was already in his pajamas, ready to go to bed. They find the superstar very kind and approachable, Ma recalled that he was so fascinated by the twins, he wanted to know everything about bringing up babies. The twin babies were crawling around in his room, at one point, one of the twins grabbed his CD player and started to bite it, Michael immediately went to pick up the baby and softly he said to her "Don't bite it, it'll

The Michael Jackson Allegations

hurt you.” Ma recalled that Michael was not yet a parent during that time but was very protective of children.

When they said goodbye, Michael personally escorted them off to the elevator and promised to invite them to come and visit him when he returned to America in his home Neverland. Ma family never took his words seriously, but Michael meant it! During the 17 years friendship Michael had with the Ma Family, the family had been able to visit 6 times as guests at his Neverland home, and even travels with him to other parts of world. Every time they said goodbye, he would cuddle them with words like “I’ll always love you”. He would seemed just simply wanted to be loved. Michael adored the twins, when he returned to Taiwan for the History tour in 1996, he invited the twins for an appearance to ” Heal the world ” Song with him on stage. He even invited the family to follow History tour with him. The twins was also featured in “Heal the world” in Durban, South Africa and it was said to be his last concert ever.

Michael had confided to Mrs. Ma things like his iconic sequins glove, was first used to hide his skin problem vitiligo that first appeared on his hand, and the glove had surprisingly become his signature trademark. Michael even referred himself as Chinese, as according to Michael, his mother Katherine was of a quarter Chinese descent. Michael did often expressed his strong desire to perform in China.

According to the the Taiwanese concert organizer Mr. Yu, during both his Dangerous and History Tour in Taiwan in the 90’s, Michael asked for his help to perform in China, though Yu did his best, During that time China was not yet ready to open up to Western pop performers.

Ma had seen the very sincere side of Michael, pure and innocent, like a big kid, love surprises, magic, very compassionate, very trusting and very caring. She hoped that by sharing her story, the world would know the true nature of Michael. The world not only loose a musical genius but a beautiful soul.” [5]



The Michael Jackson Allegations



Michael Jackson and the Ma Family

Kellie Parker

Kellie Parker was the young girl in Michael Jackson's 1988 movie Moonwalker. Shortly after Jackson's death in 2009 she gave the following interview.



*Michael Jackson and Kellie Parker
in the movie "Moonwalker"*

Kellie: "It's hard... (losing composure, pauses) I'll always feel that way. I'll always be waiting for him."

Steve Friess: "As I understand it you remained in contact with Michael up until very recently."

Kellie: "Yeah. I remained very close with Michael for about ten years. Then after that I continued to stay in touch with him but not as regularly, every couple of years and then I did actually see him a couple of weeks before he passed away."

Steve: "What was the occasion?"

Kellie: "I was working on a show he came to see, sort of randomly..."

Kellie: "I do know that in his life he would struggle with being so well known, that was sort of a constant struggle throughout his life. But I do have to say, I spent a lot of time with Michael alone on set, he and I had a lot of scenes together and he taught me so much. He was so dedicated. We would go through – before we even shot he and I would spend sometimes like half an hour together just improving, 'cause he was so committed to it."

[...]

"Michael was magic, pure and simple. He was a man who believed in the goodness of mankind and embodied pure unconditional love for the world. I am so sad on so many levels. For the loss of an innovative genius and who was music and dance personified, for the loss of a man who loved the whole world and touched so many lives, but mostly, for me personally, the loss of a friend

The Michael Jackson Allegations

*that I loved so dearly. Most people don't know about how close I was to Michael for many years following 'Moonwalker/Smooth Criminal' because I was never one to exploit that, even to this day I rarely talk about it, for that was a friendship that I honored and respected as private. I feel compelled at this time though, to speak of my amazing friend, as a witness to his life, and the gentleness of his soul. He taught me so much, both as an actor and as a person, he continually inspired me to reach beyond my boundaries. He and I spent a great deal of time, one on one, while filming 'Moonwalker.' I remember that he told me once to never rush an emotion, that everything in life has a rhythm, and that it is the pauses and silences that speak the truth. He understood this better than anyone, he had a way of quietly inspiring everyone around him to be better than ever thought they could be. He helped so many, and inspired us all. Michael believed in Magic, he believed that we could change the world, and **he had such unconditional love that when you were around him, you couldn't help but believe it too.** He is intertwined in all of who I am, I became a dancer because of him, I became an artist because he inspired me to dream, and a writer because he taught me the power of moving people through words and actions. I love you my friend, and I know you are in a better place, we were blessed to have you for as long as we did." [6]*

(Emphasis added.)

Nicole Richie, daughter of Lionel Richie

"Nicole, in particular, supported Jackson against the charges of improper sexual behavior with children. To that end, she offered tales of her own childhood romps at Jackson's Neverland Ranch, during which she often slept in Jackson's bedroom. "You know, a group of us would all sleep in the same room," she said. "It was like, absolutely nothing more than just...an adult kind of wanting to be a kid again. Just, you know, enjoying the company of children. I grew up with him. I have spent many evenings there and many days there." Noting that she could "only speak for myself," she still added "that absolutely nothing went on."

Nicole also said that she wouldn't have held her tongue had Jackson tried anything with her. "I'm not a quiet person," she said. "If there was something going on, I'd be like 'who are you?'... and I'd tell my parents. But my parents would never put me in hands that they thought were dangerous. I never had any complaints, and you know, I love him." [7]

Lala Romero

The Michael Jackson Allegations



Michael Jackson and Lala Romero

"I don't tell this story too often, in fact growing up I kinda learned to just keep it to myself.

Whenever people would find out I knew him, a gang of silly, dumb questions would follow, and I would always end up having to defend someone I loved so much.

When I was 5, my cousin Brian and I where

OBSESSED with Micheal Jackson. We had dolls, sleeping bags, lunch boxes, and OF COURSE the gloves. I was pretty convinced I was going to be him when I grew up, and nobody could tell me otherwise! Brian was older then me, and found out at school MJ actually lived in the Valley, we lived in. Anyone from LA pretty much knew the house. So we wrote him letters and enclosed a bunch of pics, you remember the ones from school you'd write on the bk, yeah well, lucky Micheal got about 25 of me!! Basically we told him we LOVED him & I told him I was a singer and dancer!!! We also asked him to come to our house & visit!! Our loca tia Carol (RIP) took us to his house and we rang the guard gate. His guard came out to us & took our letters. WE WERE SOOOOOOO HAPPY, we KNEW he would get em!! I honestly can say we were just happy enough to see his gate & meet his guard NEVER did we really expect what happened next.

About 4 days later, at 10:30 pm, my mom got the call from Carol, Michael Jackson was HERE, in our APT building, on her couch. I was 5 & anybody who knows a 5 year old also knows that it's damn near impossible to wake em up!! The pic you see of us is him holding me, cause I wouldn't wake up, he insisted my parents take da pic so I would truly know he came!! A few days later I was going into the hospital for surgery & he called me. I couldn't BELIEVE I was talking to Micheal Jackson & that he actually had my number!! Over the next few years he would invite Brian & I to his house, to watch him shot his videos & to his shows.

It's weird, when I was lil, I didn't really grasp FAME, especially his FAME. All I knew was he was my friend & I think that's why he liked me. My friendship with him changed my life. It was a HUGE influence, it made me believe having a singer career was in arms reach. My neighborhood didn't support BIG DREAMS but his friendship gave me confidence & assurance that ANYTHING & EVERYTHING is possible, if you work hard & aren't scared to try. His generosity & kindness inspires me daily. Here was the biggest super star in the world taking time out to come to a broken down apt building in Van Nuys CA to see his fans. He was ALWAYS about his fans & his community, and I really always knew that if I got my chance I would strive to be just like that!!

Even as a tiny lil girl I could see his sadness & his lonely. It was a part of him, I think his childhood, fame & money alienated him from most of the world. That's

The Michael Jackson Allegations

why he loved US cause we didn't care about the BS!! We just had fun!! He was so goofy & silly, we would jump on his trampoline and raid his candy shop.

Micheal was like Edward Scissorhands & Willy Wonka to me, SOOOOO AMAZING in the HEART but so misunderstood by most! I love him always for touching my life & showing me a different world then the one I grew up in.

I hope those babies of his really grow up understanding that they did have the best daddy in the world. His heart & spirit are what made him the GREATEST and so RARE.

One day I'll post more pics, and tell ya specific stories!! All the good things ya heard about him were ALL TRUE!! I promise!!

R.I.P M.J. YOU WILL BE MISSED AND ALWAYS LOVED!

This photo was taken on one of the VERY BEST DAYS OF MY LIFE!!! Michael called me, after a surgery I had & invited me to the set of his video for "The Way You Make Me Feel". Here's what stood out about the day, the biggest super-star in the world made me feel like the super-star. In the middle of all his hectic-ness he would come see me, take pics with me & make sure I was good between takes!! At 5 yrs old I sat & watched him shoot, take after take in this warehouse in San Pedro CA. He introduced me to everyone, his sister Latoya was there, his co-star, that beautiful girl he was SO shy to kiss Tatiana. Even at that young age I was very aware of how gracious & kind he was with EVERYONE on set. Looking back now I remember he was sooooo excited that all of the extras were real ex bloods, crips, gang members from LA. I remember him being so excited about giving them a chance to shine & a new opportunity. We sat in his trailer, I remember telling him I wanted to be a singer when I grew up & gave him pics of me from my dance recital. I remember eating w him & him being the very first vegetarian I had ever met! I was like u don't eat meat??? I was so confused!! Lol. Man writing this, thinking about this day & all the rest of the times I spent w him makes me smile!! As a lil girl I never really grasped how famous he was, honestly I think that's why he loved hanging out w me! To me & all the other kids, he was just a fun, crazy, silly guy, who sang our most favorite songs. I love him for being the most honest, pure heart I have ever known for showin me video shoots, recording studios, & concerts, up close and personal, making my dream seem possible. I was there in it, seeing it happen, he brought me into a world I would have never known existed without him. A lil girl from Van Nuys CA. I can't even begin to count the ways he changed my life. He helped create my dream. Records like Homegirlz & Sadgirl I know he would be proud of, he was always ALWAYS about giving back!! I miss him everyday & can't believe he is gone." [8]

Sky Ferreira

"My grandma worked with him for, like, 25 years and she became really close friends with him. I knew he was a singer and stuff but I think it was because he was always around that I never really thought much of it." [9]

[...]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Speaking to Newsbeat, she said: "We just became friends with him. When I was born I was raised around him, I always saw him. I had holidays with him and stuff like that. [10]

[...]

*"I've known Michael since I was born and he supported me about my singing and has helped my family very very much. **He was probably the nicest and most giving person I've ever known.** There will never be another Michael Jackson. Ever. I was so fortunate to actually know him. He is one of the biggest inspirations of music. Rest in peace Michael. Thank you for everything you've ever done." [11]*

(Emphasis added.)

Kidada and Rashida Jones, daughters of Quincy Jones

"Michael was like a member of my family, a surrogate son. He spent many hours with my daughter, Kidada who was a precocious child of eight at the time. They adored each other and totally communicated despite the age difference (he was twenty then). Her mother once found a phone bill showing Kidada made ninety-one long-distance calls to Michael in a single month. She played the telephone like Herbie Hancock plays the keyboards." [12]

[...]

"It's mostly little things that excite him or stir his emotions," says Jones. "Childlike things. He loves children a lot. He's been friends with my daughters for years. When he comes to my house, they think they're doing me a big favor by lending him to me so he can rehearse, because they think he's their friend. He's just got a very pure type of enthusiasm about simple things." And as for the snakes Jackson occasionally carts to work? "Now to me, that's the strange part," Jones says laughing. "When the dude brings in a fifteen-foot python — that's what I can't take." [8]

[...]

"Malibu Magazine: Do you have any crazy stories about Michael Jackson?"

Rashida: I remember Michael would take us to the mall to get toys, which was the most exciting thing ever. But he was always wearing a surgical mask, and I was so embarrassed to be seen with him! It just was not cool to be roaming around the mall with a dude wearing a surgical mask. But he was always so sweet to us, and so fun, just like a big kid, — like a really big kid. I feel so horrible for him. I feel so sad for his soul. He came into this world with so much talent, but he just didn't know how to protect himself. Michael was exceedingly aware of the fact that he didn't have a childhood, and he wanted to try to create a world in which he could try to make up for everything he had lost.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

MM: So, taking you guys shopping for toys was something he would do to make him feel in touch with his own youth?

Rashida: Yes, exactly.” [13]

[...]

“Michael basically grew up with us, so I have a million memories of him. We were at each other’s houses all the time,” the Parks and Recreation star shares. “He was definitely a little bit of an alien, for sure, and when I was young, it felt as if he was my age, not 18 years older, but with just a little bit more pep.”

“Later, we’d go out on the town together. He always wore those surgical masks. Once, my sister, Michael, Emmanuel Lewis and I got in a car with Super Soakers and went by a movie theater and supersoaked the hell out of people waiting in line. They had no idea they’d just been supersoaked by the King of Pop.” [14]

[...]

MORGAN: What was he like, Michael Jackson.

JONES: I’m not making any excuses. He was so wonderful. He was a big kid. He really was that. It wasn’t — he was so innocent and just a big kid. And to me, at that age, he just was like me but taller and very much more talented.

MORGAN: That guy just knew how to do it, didn’t he?

JONES: He did. But he was also had this like — this thing just bubbling over. He had no choice. I mean, when you sound like that and you dance like that, what choice do you have? You have to give it to everybody, you know.” [15]

Lottie Rose’s daughter

Lottie Rose was Michael Jackson’s hairdresser between 1981 and 1994.

“Lottie Rose: He would allow me to bring my daughter with me. She would stay the nights and slept in Michael’s bed. I would be working on him. At Neverland, because the drive was so long, I would stay and we would have our own little room.

Her daughter: I met MJ when I was 11 years old... Just so happens, I was at my mom’s hair salon on a Saturday when she received a phone call from Bill Bray, MJ’s right hand man at the time. He told my mom that MJ liked her work (she did the hair for the soft sheen print advertisements) they called soft sheen and they referred them to her.

My mom thought it was a joke until the limousine pulled up in front of the salon. She told me about MJ at the very last minute... I couldn’t believe it and went crazy while Bill was pulling the limousine around to the back of the salon. Let me tell you... it was the best night ever for an 11 year old.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Really nice guy, very friendly and the best part was that I practically had MJ's attention all to myself.

He was not shy at all. In fact, I was very shy and afraid to meet him at first because he was MJ. However, he was very friendly and helped me to warm up to him.

MJ and I talked mostly about me and my friends, what we did for fun, where we liked to go, what it was like to go to the mall, favorite stores, amusement parks, favorite rides, going to the beach, movies and more... He would also call me at home from time to time to chat on the phone.

Michael loved to play practical jokes. He would tell my mom that muscles or bubbles was around, and then would rub her leg to make her think it was one of the animals. She would hop around and scream sometimes... was really, really funny!" [8]

Sick children

Dave Dave

The story of Dave Dave (born David Rothenberg, but he changed his name to free himself to the memories of his father) was national news in the United States in the early 1980s. In 1983, during a custody battle between his parents, his father doused Dave with kerosene and set him on fire while the boy was asleep. 90 per cent of his body was burned. Michael Jackson heard of his story and befriended him. At Jackson's funeral in 2009 Dave spoke about the emotional support that the star offered him through the years.

"He heard about me and contacted me. He wanted to meet me. I was about 7 years old at the time. He befriended me. He took me into his life. He opened up his arms to me and accepted me as a very good friend of his. And throughout the years he never let me go. Michael was like a father to me".

"I turned around and there was Michael. At that moment we embraced and that embrace never ended throughout our whole entire friendship."

"I believe what people fail to realize is that Michael was a human being. Throughout the years he was kind of stigmatized by the media".

"He has been my friend throughout everything that I've been through. And he's my only friend that I can say that's been there for me always. He's really had an impact on my life – not because he is a celebrity. Becuase he's been through a kind of the same thing as I've been through."

"He was a great person. He never hurt a soul and I'm happy to have been his friend all these years. Michael offered a lot of emotional support for me. Michael was there for me whenever I needed to talk to him. He opened up Neverland to me as a means to get away. Metaphorically he was always like a father that I never had." [16]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

The friendship between Jackson and Dave never ceased. In his book entitled *Private Conversations in Neverland with Michael Jackson*, Dr. William B. Van Valin II mentions meeting Dave at Neverland in the early 2000s. According to this account, Jackson gave Dave a job as a kind of courier because no one else would employ him due to his condition. [17]



Michael Jackson with Dave and his mother in the 1980s

Ryan White

Ryan White was a young boy from Kokomo, Indiana who became famous in the United States due to his struggles as an HIV/AIDS patient. White was born in 1971. He was a hemophiliac and became infected with HIV from a contaminated blood treatment in the early '80s. He was diagnosed with AIDS on December 17, 1984.

His story became national news when at his school 117 parents and 50 teachers signed a petition for the banning of White from school because at the time many people believed that AIDS could be transmitted through everyday interactions. The Whites even had to face lawsuit threats and violence from the local community (once a bullet was shot through the Whites' living room window) and eventually they moved to another town, Cicero, where they were more welcome.

At the time several celebrities befriended Ryan and showed themselves openly with him, trying to help to dismantle the stigma around Ryan and AIDS - the most prominent ones being Elton John and Michael Jackson.

Jackson made several visits to the Whites and he also invited them to Neverland ranch. He also had many long phone calls with Ryan and gave him several gifts, including a red Mustang because it was Ryan's favourite car.

Ryan passed away on April 8, 1990.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Ryan's mother Jeanne White said of their friendship:

"JW: Michael was amazed that Ryan never talked about his illness. And he said he never wanted anybody to feel sorry for him. So I think they really had this good communication of respect for each other".

Q. You never had any hesitation about Ryan spending time with Michael Jackson?

JW: No!

... Michael was always interested in what Ryan was doing. He loved kids, and he didn't care what race you were, what color you were, what was your handicap, what was your disease – Michael just loved all children.

Q. He did something incredibly special when he learned what Ryan's favorite car was?

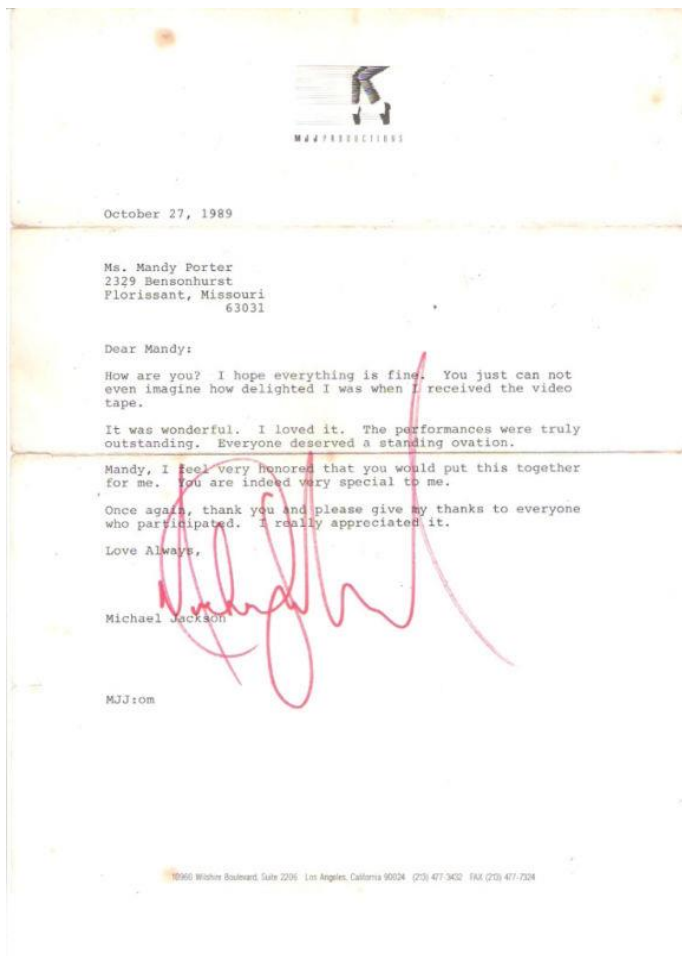
JW: We had a call from a car dealer who said they had a car for Ryan. [Michael did it] just to see the joy in the kid's face.

[During the funeral] the car was sitting outside in the yard. Michael started the car and "Man in the Mirror" was playing. The little things made Michael so happy. You could see in his eyes and he was smiling from ear to ear and said, "I was the last person that Ryan was listening to..." and I said, "Yes". Ryan just listened to it over and over again.

Three days after the funeral Michael called me and asked me how I was doing. I said, "What made you and Ryan so close?" Michael said, "...Nobody ever acts normal round me. Ryan knew how I wanted to be treated because that's how he wanted to be treated. I can't trust anyone because everyone wants something from me". Then he said, "I promised Ryan he could be in my next video, but now that he is gone I can't put him in my video. But could I do a video for him? I was like, "That's unbelievable". And he did a video called Gone too soon... that's the memory that'll stay forever". [18]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Amanda Porter



A letter to Amanda Porter by Michael Jackson

At the age of 11, in 1986 Amanda Porter (today Amanda Swafford) appeared on Good Morning America to talk about a rare genetic eye condition that had made her gradually lose her eyesight. On the program the interviewer asked her which celebrity she would like to meet and she said "Michael Jackson". Jackson happened to watch the show and shortly after the interview he turned up at the hotel where Amanda's family was staying with a lot of gifts to the girl. They became friends and the friendship lasted until the singer's death in 2009.

Amanda's mother Carole Nowicki said: *"Michael continued to show kindness and devotion to Amanda over the years, exchanging gifts, even after they both had children. He will be sorely missed and we are grateful we had the opportunity to meet Michael the person and Michael the artist."* [8] [19]

Adults

Chris Tucker

Jackson was not only generous to kids or only to the parents of kids near him. Actor Chris Tucker reflected on the singer's generosity in a 2015 interview with Jimmy Kimmel: *"Michael was... he was the greatest entertainer ever and the biggest entertainer in the world, but he was the nicest guy in the world, man. He was just nice, man. I would go to Neverland and I would say I like something (and) he would give it to me. I said 'Michael, I like that big screen TV', he was like 'You like it, Chris?', I said 'Yeah, I like it', he said 'You'd love it?', I said 'I would love it'. Next day I go home (and) Michael was sending a TV to my house. I said 'Michael, thank you'. I was like 'Michael is nice and rich'."* [20]

Doug Lewis

Doug Lewis worked on the set of Michael and Janet Jackson's 1995 video "Scream" when he suffered an accident. The story in his own words:

The Michael Jackson Allegations

“As predicted, crew call switched from 7am to 4pm, and we worked throughout each night until 4-6am. In the final hours of the last night of shooting, we had moved to the ‘zen’ set. This was it, last day, last set, last series of shots. The art department had prepped the set with final touches before Michael was brought in to take his place on the zen podium in the center of the set. Michael surveyed the scene and commented on how beautiful the set looked. He was very relaxed and it was obvious he enjoyed sitting in the middle of this temporary temple. When Mark called out for a piece of the ceiling to be trimmed, I grabbed a 12-step (ladder), scrambled to the top and began sawing. In an unfortunate moment the portable saw kicked back and amputated a third of my left ring finger. Without word, I reached in my back pocket for my rag, wrapped my finger with it and stepped down off the ladder and exited the set. I passed Tom on the way out and showed him what happened. Tom escorted me to the edge of the stage and I laid down on the concrete. It wasn’t long before an entire film crew of towering bodies was in a half circle looking down at me. Union guys chewing gum. 3am. Right?

Suddenly the crowd parts and Michael appears and stands there for a moment, leaning over me, looking down. He looks at my left hand held in the air then he looks at me. Then just like that he is on his knees by my right side and he picks up my right hand and holds it in his. He looks me straight in the eye and tells me how sorry he was, he kept repeating how sorry he was, and then he had tears in his eyes and he held my hand until the ambulance came and took me away.

That next week, recovering at home, the gifts began arriving from Michael and Janet, tasteful and cool things like great soaps, a bathrobe, incense, a card. Anyway, that’s my story. Michael Jackson held my hand, too. Michael, if you read this, thanks for caring.” [21]

The Grandmother of Chris Cantore

Chris Cantore, describes an encounter between his grandparents and Michael Jackson on an airplane.

“[T]his is crazy and I actually used to tell this on my radio show annually around Christmas time. It became a tradition and we used to call the segment “Michael Jackson Saved My Grandma” and it’s nuts especially when you look at his history and you look at his trajectory and all the controversy surrounding him, this story really touches the human spirit and really shows underneath all the paparazzi and craziness was a guy who really cares about human beings.

It was a real testament to the situation where essentially my grandparents, it was in December, 1997 and my grandparents were flying in from JFK in New York to LAX to visit my family for Christmas. On the flight my grandmother gets sick and ends up passing out and falling in the aisle – they were sitting Coach. My grandfather is stressing out and Michael Jackson, it turns out, is sitting in first class. No one on the plane knew and he had first class reserved for himself, security entourage and people he travelled with. He hears about what’s going on in coach and Michael Jackson gets out of his seat and runs

The Michael Jackson Allegations

back to help my grandmother and when she comes to he's hovering over her (laughs). [...] Seriously and he's like "Do you need help?" and she comes to and my grandfather's there and essentially, he invites my grandparents into first class. [...] So she can get proper attention and part of Michael's entourage includes medical support and what have you. [...] So while my grandmother is kind of getting her lucidity back if you will, my grandfather ends up having a two hour dialogue with Michael Jackson 35,000 feet in the air. [...] And what's insane about my grandfather, and this is why I love him so much, God rest his soul, is that he looked at Michael as if he couldn't care less if he were Michael Jackson or a plumber and he just engaged him in honest conversation and they talked about family, they talked about Michael's childhood and they talked about Italy which were my grandfather's three favorite things to talk about and they had this amazing dialogue. When they land, Michael says, "I'm not letting you guys figure out your way" because my parents at this point might have been alerted that something happened on the plane – everything's cool. Rather than having my grandparents go off on their own they basically said, "hey, you know what? We're going to take you to your destination". [...] So they get my grandmother a wheelchair and Michael Jackson is pushing my grandmother through the LAX Airport through all these backend crazy little caverns – they're not dealing with the public but word gets out that Michael Jackson's at LAX right when he's pushing my grandmother through and trying to be secretive, not to get any attention. Granted you think they're trying to get publicity doing stuff like this, he's doing his best to divert the paparazzi to help my grandparents so they end up doing three different limo changes just to divert the paparazzi with my grandmother in the wheelchair. [...] They get in the limo, they hit the 405 on the way to the Valley to see my parents, again it's Christmas time and Michael pops in his favorite movie at the time "Men in Black" so we have Michael Jackson and my grandparents watching "Men in Black" in his limo (laughing) on his way to my folks house. They show up to my parents and my mom opens the door and there's my grandfather, my grandmother and, hand to God dude, Michael Jackson carrying their bags. [...] So they come in the house and Michael was totally enamored by my parent's Christmas tree and the family spirit that he felt in the house and he couldn't stop talking about how he felt so much love and warmth in the house and he was enamored by the Christmas tree and just the spirit that was in the house and he was kind of sticking around and kind of looking around and not sure what to do and my mom's theory is he was kind of, just based on his, obviously career, he was waiting around like "hey, you guys want a picture or something?" for sentiment or what not, but my mom was just so blown away by what happened they never even took a picture to document the event BUT, I got a big but here though – what I do have and I was going to post this on my blog later to is Michael Jackson actually signed a menu in first class for my parents when they were still in route on their way to Los Angeles and hold on I had my mom scan it and send it down to me and it says "To Concetta De Lisi and Joseph De Lisi, please feel better, love you always, Michael Jackson." [22]

Homeless people

From the 2014 book *Remember the Time: Protecting Michael Jackson In His Final Days* by two of Jackson's bodyguards, Bill Whitfield and Javon Beard:

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Javon: One night, we were driving home from the Strip, and there was this on-ramp for the freeway that we had to pass to get back to the house. We were stopped at a red light by this ramp, and right off the road there was a homeless man and woman. They were arguing with each other about something. The man was sitting and the woman was standing with a sign; it's the kind of thing you see all the time out here, people with signs that say "Homeless, Please Help." Vegas is a hard town. You get caught up in gambling and all that? It'll ruin you.

Bill: Mr. Jackson saw these people and said, "Why are these people out there?" "Those are homeless people, sir." He was like, "Really? Wow." He told Javon to pull over. We pulled over to the curb and we just watched for a minute. Mr. Jackson saw all the other cars passing by, and he asked, "Why isn't anybody helping them? Why isn't anybody stopping?" Then he said to Javon, "Call the woman over to the car." Javon rolled down his window, waved her over. When she got to the car, Mr. Jackson rolled his window down just a little bit and said, "What's your name?" "Amanda," she said. They talked for a bit. He wanted to know her story. He asked her where she was from, where's her family at. She said she used to be a dancer, a showgirl. Then I heard him reaching around in the backseat for something. I heard the sound of paper. He was pulling out money. He pulled out three one-hundred-dollar bills, gave them to her and said, "Here. Take this." She was floored. She was almost crying, saying, "Thank you, thank you, thank you."

Javon: After he gave her the money, she backed up a few steps and I started to drive off. The guy that had been sitting near her got up, came over to her, and tried to snatch the money away. She pulled back, but he kept trying to grab it from her and they started fighting again. She started yelling, "No! This is mine!" Mr. Jackson saw that and said, "No, no, no! Javon, stop the car. Pull back over." I pulled back over, he leaned back out of the window and called the man over this time, saying, "Don't do that! Here, I've got something for you too." He pulled out another three hundred dollars and gave it to the man. The lady started crying, like she'd been saved.

Bill: He told them to use the money for food. "Get something nourishing," he said. "Don't get any drugs." "No, sir!" they said. "No, sir!" They were both gushing with thank-yous and God-bless-yous when all of a sudden the man stopped and looked in the car window and said, "Are you Michael Jackson?" "No. No, I'm not." I turned to the backseat. "Are you ready to go, sir?" "Yeah, I'm ready," he said. And we pulled off. As we were driving, Mr. Jackson said, "Are there a lot of people like that in Vegas?" "Yeah," I said. "There are parts of Vegas where a lot of homeless people live." "Really? Can we go there?" I hesitated a moment. "You want to go there tonight, sir? Tonight wouldn't be a good time." "No, no," he said. "We can go another day. I just want to see." The bad part of Vegas is on the north side, Main Street and Las Vegas Boulevard, over by Cashman Field. When he mentioned going there, I was hoping he'd forget about it. Sometimes when he made unusual requests, things I knew weren't feasible or just weren't a good idea, I'd wait a bit before following up, to see if he'd drop it. Sometimes he would. If he reminded me

The Michael Jackson Allegations

again, I knew he was very serious. This time, he remembered. A couple days later, he came to me and said, "When are we going to go to that side of town?" "What side of town is that, sir?" "Where the homeless people are." "We can go there today." "Okay, let's go." So we took him to the other side of town, about twenty minutes from the house. We headed north up Main Street, and all of these people were out. You could hear in his voice that he was shocked that all of these people out here were homeless. He couldn't believe it. "It's just amazing," he said. "This country is so rich and these people are poor and living on the street." He asked Javon to pull over, so we pulled over. I was a little antsy. I wasn't cool pulling over in a nice car with all these people around. We sat there on the side of the road for a bit. Then Mr. Jackson said, "I want to give them something." I thought he meant he wanted to get out of the car. I said, "I don't think it'd be a good idea to go out there, sir." He said, "No, no, no. I'll pass it out of the window." He cracked the window and started waving people over. He had a fanny pack he was wearing. He opened it up and the whole thing was stuffed full of cash. They would come to the window and he would pass out a hundred-dollar bill through the crack in the window to each one. One thing I noticed was that he was trying to catch the attention of the women. He wanted to make sure they were the ones who got the money. He was like, "Come here. No, no, no. You. You come here." A lot of men got money too, but I could hear him singling the women out of the crowd, calling them forward. People started lining up outside his window, like it was an ATM.

Javon: He gave away so much he ran out, and he got upset with himself. He was saying he should have brought more. We started to see another side of him, his compassion for others, and it was kind of amazing. There was no media out there, no cameras. There was only a crack in the window, so no one could tell it was him. It was just something that he wanted to do. After that, we went and handed out food to the homeless a number of times. He'd say, "Me and the kids are not going to eat this. Let's take this down and give it away." One time, he wanted the kids to come with us and see it, so we brought them along." [23]

Jackson's own mother, Katherine had similar experiences: *"What I love about Michael, he was such a humble person. I am not just saying it because he's my son, but he was one of the best people. He'd seen somebody standing in the corner beginning and he'd stop the car and just give them all the money in his pocket \$300 or \$400 and sometimes more."* [24]

Families

Jackson often befriended whole families, rather than just one individual of a family. This too was often misrepresented in the media and by the prosecution as "preying on young boys" and "grooming" them and their parents, but in reality this sheltered, isolated and often lonely star was simply looking for a connection with "normal people" and a normal family atmosphere and often it were not even the children of a family that he was the closest to.

The Cascio family were very close to Jackson since the 1980s until the singer's death. In his 2011 book entitled *My Friend Michael: An Ordinary Friendship with an Extraordinary Man*, Frank Cascio defended Jackson against the allegations and attested to the fact that the media misunderstood Jackson and his relationship with families like theirs. The family also appeared on Oprah Winfrey's show in 2010 talking about their relationship with the star. [25]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

William Van Valin, a medical doctor and his family befriended Jackson in the early 2000s. In his 2012 book entitled *Private Conversations in Neverland with Michael Jackson*, he too portrays a lonely star who was simply looking for a normal friendship and a connection with “normal”, everyday people. Out of the whole family it was the father, William, who spent most of the time with Jackson and was the closest to him.

Damion Stein, who was a friend of Michael as a kid in the 1980s, talked about a similar experience in a 2005 documentary: *"He adopted my family. He started becoming more and more attached to my family as a whole, rather than just me individually. [...] We opened up our family to him and he was kind of another member of the family. And he got to experience what a family atmosphere was about and I think that isn't something that he ever had himself."* [26] Damion attests to the fact that Jackson was most attached to his mother, Glenda, and he spoke with her on the phone for hours on end. *"He needed someone to confide in. [...] My dad would be waiting for my mom in bed, for her to come to bed and she would never come. You know, she would be speaking with him in depths on the phone, you know, late hours at a night."* [26] This made the father jealous and he started taping the conversations of his wife and Jackson.

I could go on, but I think you already get the idea regarding Michael Jackson’s generosity and his care for people – all kinds of people.

Sources:

- [1] "grooming" - <http://www.yourdictionary.com/grooming>
- [2] Memories of Michael, Family, friends and colleagues on the King of Pop (The Independent, June 27, 2009) <http://www.independent.co.uk/news/people/news/memories-of-michael-1722259.html>
- [3] Katherine Jackson, Richard Wiseman - My Family, The Jacksons (St Martins Mass Market Paper, 1990)
- [4] Laura Chaplin - Charlot jusqu'au bout des doigts (Le Matin, February 25, 2015) <http://www.lematin.ch/people/charlot-jusqu-fois/story/24716250>
- [5] Michael and Mrs. Ma Family (TrueMichaelJackson.com) <http://www.truemichaeljackson.com/true-stories/michael-and-mrs-ma-family/>
- [6] Q&A CineVegas Podcast with Vincent Paterson, after a Moonwalker screening in 2009 <https://itunes.apple.com/gb/podcast/cinevegas-podcast/id286624982>
- [7] Wade Paulsen - Nicole Richie defends Michael Jackson, while Paris Hilton blows off Letterman (Realitytvworld.com, November 21, 2003) <http://www.realitytvworld.com/news/nicole-richie-defends-michael-jackson-while-paris-hilton-blows-off-letterman-2017.php>
- [8] The Invisible Children – Michael Jackson’s Female Kid Friends <http://rhythmofthetide.com/category/the-allegations/female-kid-friends-the-allegations/>
- [9] Michael Cragg - Sky Ferreira: Teen contender takes her time (The Guardian, August 12, 2010) <https://www.theguardian.com/music/2010/aug/12/sky-ferreira-michael-jackson-britney-spears>
- [10] Oli Wilson, Kirstie Andrews - Sky Ferreira on being friends with Michael Jackson (BBC, August 18, 2010) <http://www.bbc.co.uk/newsbeat/article/11010080/sky-ferreira-on-being-friends-with-michael-jackson>
- [11] Sky Ferreira: I Was Fortunate To Actually Know Michael Jackson (Popdirt.com, June 25, 2009) <http://popdirt.com/sky-ferreira-i-was-fortunate-to-actually-know-michael-jackson/74473/>

The Michael Jackson Allegations

[12] Quincy Jones - Q: The Autobiography of Quincy Jones (Three Rivers Press, 2002)

[13] https://www.malibumag.com/site/article/rashida_jones/P1/

The original article is no longer available, for a secondary source see: <http://rhythmofthetide.com/category/the-allegations/female-kid-friends-the-allegations/>

[14] Interview with Rashida Jones - Playboy, October 2011, for a secondary source see:

<http://rhythmofthetide.com/category/the-allegations/female-kid-friends-the-allegations/>

[15] Interview With Rashida Jones (CNN.com, December 9, 2011)

<http://transcripts.cnn.com/TRANSCRIPTS/1112/09/pmt.01.html>

[16] Dave Dave

<http://www.truemichaeljackson.com/true-stories/dave-dave/>

[17] William Van Valin II – Private Conversations in Neverland with Michael Jackson (CreateSpace Independent Publishing Platform, December 20, 2012)

[18] Interview with Jeanne White

<http://www.truemichaeljackson.com/true-stories/ryan-white/>

[19] A amizade de Michael com o modelo Amanda Swafford

<https://falandodemichaeljackson.wordpress.com/2011/05/06/a-amizade-de-michael-com-o-modelo-amanda-swafford/>

[20] Chris Tucker on Jimmy Kimmel Live (June 23, 2015)

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=678dOm3sOw4>

[21] Venice Arts Club - Michael Jackson Held My Hand, Too (September 6, 2009)

<https://veniceartsclub.wordpress.com/2009/09/06/michael-jackson-held-my-hand-too/>

[22] Michael Jackson Saved My Grandma - Radio Interview Transcript (June 26, 2009)

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=6JdzLz7Ty6E>

[23] Bill Whitfield, Javon Beard, Tanner Colby – Remember the Time: Protecting Michael Jackson In His Final Days (Weinstein Publishing, 2014)

[24] Bang Showbiz - Michael Jackson was generous to the homeless (Contactmusic.com, August 28, 2013)

http://www.contactmusic.com/michael-jackson/news/michael-jackson-was-generous-to-the-homeless_3839294

[25] The Cascio family on the Oprah Winfrey show in 2010

<https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=8E-pmUppNJQ>

[26] Damion Stein interview from the 2005 British documentary "Michael Jackson's Boys"

https://www.youtube.com/watch?v=5q_SlahCqVo

In the fashion of Martin Bashir, this documentary operated using innuendo and suggestive narration in order to raise suspicion about Jackson's relationship with male children, however it is the narration that gives Damion's words a suggestive angle, while Damion never claimed any wrongdoing by Jackson. In actuality, Damion attests to the fact that what Jackson was looking for in these relationships was a family atmosphere and it was Damion's mother who he was most attached to. For the record, the mother, Glenda Stein, stated on Facebook, commenting an article about Jackson in September, 2011, that she has never believed that Jackson was a pedophile: *"I never thought that Michael was a pedophile. He loved kids but not in that sick way. Leave his family alone."* http://www.facebook.com/aol/posts/226747887382305?comment_id=2815772

Did Michael Jackson get off due to “celebrity justice”?

During the 2005 trial of Michael Jackson some of the media anticipated the star’s conviction and the sensational and lucrative stories it would provide to them on the long run, for example about which prison he would be taken to, who would be his cell mates, how would he fare in prison, whether he would be suicidal etc. So when Jackson was acquitted on June 13, 2005, a part of the media was seemingly disappointed about the verdict and some started to blame it on “celebrity justice”. The term refers to the notion that celebrities and/or rich people get off simply due to their fame and wealth, even though they are guilty. While that may be true in some cases, but in this particular case this notion is nothing but a fallacy.

In this document you could read extensively about the [The 2005 Allegations](#) and the resulting trial and you could see that, at the very least, the case had “reasonable doubt” written all over it - and it actually went far beyond that in casting serious doubt over the accuser’s story. Moreover, this case was not like the O.J. Simpson case where the “reasonable doubt” arose due to procedural mistakes by the prosecution (eg. the mishandling of DNA evidence) or due to systemic racism by the police. In the case against Michael Jackson the “reasonable doubt” arose from the many problems with these allegations and the accusers themselves, as we have seen in previous chapters.

Whether racism played a part in prosecutor Thomas Sneddon’s obsession with Jackson is difficult to tell, but the fact is that Jackson’s attorney, Thomas Mesereau made the conscious decision **not** to play the race card, but to keep the focus on the actual case at hand. Mesereau was confident that he had a good case and he did not need any derailment like that. *“The day the jury got the case, I felt very good, I felt our case had gone in very well. And I had told certain people that I don’t want a racial issue here. I don’t want to be identified with a racial issue in this community. I don’t think it’s going to help us.” [1]* He was not even concerned about the fact that there was no African-American on the jury panel. *“And I said to myself ‘Race is not going to be an issue in this case.’ Now Michael and his family were concerned about no African-Americans on the jury. We had one African-American alternate who never made it to the actual panel. I was not concerned. The more I learned about my community, the more I learned about my case, the more I learned about my client, the more I learned about what I sensed about this courthouse, and what had happened in the past in this courthouse, the more I really thought ‘We’re going to get a fair shake.’ [1]*

Mesereau also made the conscious decision not to give interviews and not to feed into the media frenzy during the trial. Meanwhile the prosecution hired a PR company, Tellem, to advise them during the trial. Sneddon also gave an interview to Diane Dimond where he referred to Jackson as *“a guy everybody calls ‘Jacko Wacko’”*. [2] He later apologized for his unprofessional conduct.

Sometimes you hear of cases where law enforcement or a prosecution is so star struck with a celebrity or so impressed by a wealthy or powerful person that they are reluctant to seriously investigate a case against said person. In this case, however, the complete opposite was true. If anything, Michael Jackson’s celebrity and eccentricity seemed to have fueled this prosecution’s zeal and prejudice against him from the very first moment that they had learnt about Jordan Chandler’s allegations in 1993. Instead of any reluctance of seriously

The Michael Jackson Allegations

prosecuting Jackson, they rather prosecuted him with a zeal that at times resulted in questionable conduct on their part, such as the improper interviews they had conducted with children whom they tried to make accuse Jackson (see the chapters [The Prosecution's Hunt For Other Victims](#) and [Jason Francia](#)), regularly using witnesses with serious credibility problems, accusing Jackson of molesting children who themselves denied being molested, refusing to seriously investigate Jackson's extortion allegation against Evan Chandler, and not only turning a blind eye on any problematic aspect of the accusers' stories, but at times even actively assisting them in creating ([Jason Francia](#)) or changing those stories ([The 2005 Allegations](#)).

Sneddon himself was so obsessed with "getting" Jackson that he refused to close the Chandler case even after the Chandlers advised him that they were not interested in pushing criminal charges against Jackson. He even extended the statute of limitations in that case for a couple of more years, hoping that Jordan Chandler would decide to pursue criminal charges against the singer. According to a 2001 article, *"Sneddon tells the New York Daily News the case against Jackson was never closed and it can be re-opened at any time. He says the statute of limitations hasn't run out because Jackson was living out of the country for so much time."* [3] As we know, Jordan Chandler never pursued criminal charges against Jackson and he declined to testify even at the 2005 trial. However, as you can see, Sneddon left no stone unturned. This was not a prosecution that was impressed by Jackson's celebrity and refused to properly prosecute him.

Sometimes "celebrity justice" is meant to refer to the fact that celebrities can afford the best attorneys and best resources. In this case, however, it was not only Jackson who had top lawyers, but the accusers did too. The Chandlers hired some of the country's top lawyers in 1993: Gloria Allred, Larry Feldman, Robert Shapiro (of O.J. Simpson's "dream team" fame). Then in 2003 the Arvizos too went to Larry Feldman, whom their other attorney, William Dickerman described as *"one of the top trial lawyers in California, if not the United States"* [4]. And the prosecutors at the 2005 trial was not only very competent, but they also had all the resources of the State on their side: they had more than 70 sheriffs carry out the house search at Neverland, they had the FBI helping them, they had the financial resources to travel all over the world looking for other potential victims, and they had all the resources to carry out other searches not only at Jackson's own premises, but also at the premises of several of his acquaintances. Nothing could be blamed on attorney incompetence or a lack of resources here.

To sum it up: As you could see earlier in this document when we discussed the 2005 trial case in detail, in this case the Jury cannot be accused of a wrong verdict. You also cannot accuse the prosecution of not properly investigating Jackson and you cannot blame attorney incompetence or a lack of resources either. Therefore any accusation of "celebrity justice" in this case is completely baseless and nothing but an intellectually lazy fallacy to mislead those who do not know the details of these cases.

Sources:

[1] Thomas Mesereau - Harvard Law Seminar on Race and Justice (November 29, 2005)
<https://vindicatemj.wordpress.com/2011/02/13/transcript-of-the-2005-harvard-law-seminar-on-race-and-justice-part-1-thomas-mesereau/>

[2] Diane Dimond's interview with Thomas Sneddon on Court Tv (Court TV, November 20, 2003)

The Michael Jackson Allegations

[3] Broadcast News (BN) February 15, 2001

[4] William Dickerman's testimony at Michael Jackson's 2005 trial (March 30, 2005)
<https://themichaeljacksonallegationsblog.files.wordpress.com/2016/12/court-transcripts.zip>

“How does it feel when you're alone and you're cold inside?”

*“I was wandering in the rain
Mask of life, feelin' insane
Swift and sudden fall from grace
Sunny days seem far away
(...)
Here abandoned in my fame
Armageddon of the brain”
(Michael Jackson – Stranger in Moscow)*

The allegations and the accompanying relentless, decades long character assassination (that in some portions of the media is still going on after Jackson's death) took their toll on Michael Jackson's health and psyché. In 1993, when the Jordan Chandler allegations came out, Jackson was on tour abroad, but due to the stress of the allegations his health deteriorated, he had to cancel shows due to dehydration



Michael Jackson and his attorney Thomas Mesereau on verdict day at his 2005 trial

and several times he collapsed backstage. In the fall of 1993, at the height of the Chandler frenzy, he wrote a song entitled *Stranger in Moscow* while he was touring the Russian capital. The song was released on Jackson's 1995 *HIStory* album. It gives an insight into his state of mind at the time: the sadness, the loneliness, the pain, his collapsing world - “*Armageddon of the brain*”, as he put it in the lyrics. Eventually on November 11, 1993, he had to cancel the rest of the tour because he developed a dependency on painkillers and he had to seek treatment.

During the 2005 trial we have seen Michael Jackson's health deteriorate with each passing day and after his acquittal he had to spend some time in hospital to get himself together physically. Emotionally, mentally perhaps he could never get himself together again before his untimely death in 2009.

Perhaps we can get a little sense of what he went through emotionally because of these allegations from a story told by a couple of his fans, Brigitte Bloemen, Marina Dobler, Stephanie Grosse and Sonja Winterholler, who traveled all the way from Germany to Santa Barbara to support Jackson during the trial. One day while waiting for him at the gates of Neverland, a bus carrying Jackson stopped and they had the opportunity to meet the star one by one inside the bus. Their story reveals an emotionally frail and very much wounded Jackson. I felt appropriate to close this document with this story to remind my readers that

The Michael Jackson Allegations

while Michael Jackson might have been different to “normal” in many ways, he was a human being with feelings who deserves a fair and full representation of these cases instead of a verbal lynch mob and a witch hunt, and instead of the tabloid soundbites, cherry-picked out of context half-truths and lies that are often used against him in attempts at convicting him in the court of public opinion. I hope to have accomplished that with this document.

“Sonja: And there I suddenly stood — right in front of Michael stupidly saying “Hi Michael”. I tried so hard to remember the questions we had prepared and I had written down to ask him if possible, but now in this very moment, everything was gone. The only question that came to my mind and that would also make sense in this situation was “How are you?”— and so I asked him that Michael just stood there and didn’t answer. He didn’t even look at me, but held my left hand with both of his hands very tightly. He then leaned over and kissed me on each cheek, but still he did not say a word. I was a bit confused and didn’t know what to do. So the next thing I asked him was “Are you fine?” He finally looked directly at me and bursted out, “No!” And he continued while squeezing my hand: “I just pretend to be fine, but I’m not - I’m not.” In the same second, he hugged me very tightly and I realized that he was crying. Oh my God, now I began to understand why he hadn’t said anything before. He had tried not to lose his poise and not to cry, but my questions didn’t help...

We stood there for quite a while just hugging each other. Michael sobbed a few times and I felt that he was shaking, although it was quite warm inside the bus. It took me at least half a minute to really understand that in this moment Michael was hugging me, crying and just showing and telling me his true feelings. Until this moment I had thought he really would be that strong and positive about the upcoming trial, like he had shown the public at the first arraignment a few days before. How naive I was! Of course, he was scared and of course he was hurt as much as one can be, facing these terrible allegations, when all he ever wanted to do was to help this kid, as he had helped so many sick children before and after that. Given these thoughts and feeling him shiver, I also had to fight with the tears.”

[...]

Marina: I stopped when I saw Michael waiting at the top of the stairs, looking towards me. Sheepishly I said “Good morning, Michael” to him. At first he just looked at me not moving at all. It seemed he wanted to say something but after a few moments, he suddenly took my hands and pulled me up the two remaining stairs, kissed me on each cheek and embraced me tightly. In that moment all the pent-up tension, all the fear and sorrow for him, all the concern, all the sympathy but mostly all the love for him finally unloaded and tears streamed down my face. “I love you so much, Michael!” were the only words that came out of my mouth. Now Michael could not stay composed either, even though he had tried so hard, and so he broke into tears as well, while saying “I love you so much more”. He embraced me even tighter than before, trying to console me by caressing my head and back.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

We both couldn't stop crying and it seemed to escalate more and more. I felt and experienced in those moments, how totally upset, deeply hurt and broken Michael was by all the terrible things that went on in his life. He was not at all confident, as he had tried to show the world a few days earlier at the court building in Santa Maria. At some point Michael began to tremble from top till toe. It was so obvious that he desperately needed people in his life that he could lean on and trust and who believed in his innocence. For quite a while we simply held each other sobbingly, when he suddenly with a broken voice said, "...you know they hurt me so much with this, they try to destroy me..." His whole body shivered badly as he said those words and I helplessly tried to console him as best as I could by caressing his back, yet found no words of consolation, because I knew the situation he was in was just terrible and to claim anything else would have been a blatant lie. "I know..., I know..." was all I could stammer and again we both had to cry so much, that we could hardly breathe. It felt like Michael was drowning and desperately tried to grasp at straws when he embraced me even tighter, it almost hurt. Yet in this moment of deepest desperation, he now tried to speak again, almost voiceless from all the crying, he croaky whispered in a desperate and beseeching way, "...but we must heal the world and help the children". The way he uttered those words worried me more than anything, because they held a feeling of "Goodbye" in them, as if he tried to indicate that he would not be here with us for very much longer and needed us (fans) to fulfill his mission. Instinctively I answered: "Oh, we will - but we will do it together with you, Michael!", trying to tell him that we all need him so much. By these words he literally broke down again and sobbed so badly that I needed to hold him up, in a way, and keep the balance for us both. Again we cried so much and it took quite a while until Michael suddenly found the strength to pull himself together. I tried to follow his example and both still shaking and our faces wet from each other's tears, we finally said Goodbye to one another, before I shakily went down the stairs again, feeling completely worn out, heartbroken and empty."

[...]

Brigitte: Shyly and slowly I climbed up the stairs towards Michael, still avoiding to look up at him. I did not want to look him straight in the eyes, not to embarrass him and myself, so I just held out my hand towards Michael to say "Hi". But before I could say a word, he grabbed my hand and pulled me towards him and immediately hugged me tightly.

I was kind of hanging there, about two stairs lower than where Michael was standing while he was pulling me closer and closer. There was a small barrier in the bus to define a place behind the driver and prevent people from falling down which also had a handle for people going up the last stairs to hold on. And since I could not climb up all the stairs for Michael had grabbed me before, I happened to have this barrier directly in my stomach which was not very comfortable, especially since Michael was pulling me against it real hard and was not letting go.

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Anyway, so early in the morning, being tired, frozen, nervous and confused, your senses are working quite selectively sometimes — so I managed to forget having this barrier pushed into my stomach after mere seconds. It was only after a while that I realized how warm Michael felt and that he tried to warm me up by rubbing my back with his hand. He must have felt me shaking like crazy. The sound that the rubbing on the jacket made finally “woke me up” and I could feel Michael was also shaking a bit and he was weeping on my shoulder. We both stayed like this for at least one or two minutes without saying anything. Then, I heard his voice whispering in my ear: “Go on the internet...”. As I said before, I was not completely myself then and there, and I just heard something about the internet, and was wondering, what he is talking about. However, after finally concentrating and probably telling my ear to listen, I could hear him go on: “Go on the internet and tell them all, tell all the fans I love them so much and they should come next time to the court! It’s SO important to me!” Having said that, Michael pulled me even harder towards himself. I could barely breathe, but I responded: “I promise they will come - it meant a lot to us as well” (meaning it made us feel better, too, to be finally able to help and support him and to give back to him after he gave so much to the world for years). After that Michael started to cry again. I felt kind of helpless and confused, I was shaking and sobbing, but could not really cry. It felt more like being in shock, I instinctively started rubbing his back as he did before. He hugged and embraced me tighter for a few moments, I could feel him breathing and sobbing - then he finally let go. He stepped back a bit, held his hands pressed together in front of his face and quietly whispered “I love you”. I said “I love you more”, turned around in total shock and almost fell down the stairs I was still standing on. Just before going down the stairs further, however, I saw I still had the three postcards from Munich which we had written to Michael last night in one hand. They were a bit bended since they had been stuck somewhere between the barrier, Michael and me, but I turned around once more, said “oh and this is for you” and gave them to him. He said a quiet “oh, thank you” while still wiping away some tears.”

[...]

That cold January morning changed all of us. It was the most heart-breaking, most hurting experience of our life to feel that someone you love so much is hurting so bad, yet to understand that you are unable to truly help, besides supporting him with all your heart and by simply being there for him. But what impressed us the most and made us truly understand who Michael really is, was that even in those darkest and most hopeless moments of his life, Michael’s heart went out to others, to the ones in need, especially to sick and poor children and to our hurting planet! We understood that this is what Michael really was all about! He was about helping and loving and caring for one another! And no matter how many times people tried to ridicule, belittle and hurt him and even, like in the last years, tried to destroy him, Michael never lost his ability to love and care and his deep desire to help others! He simply loved more!” [1]

The Michael Jackson Allegations

Sources:

[1] Brigitte Bloemen (Author), Marina Dobler (Contributor), Miriam Lohr (Contributor) - A life for L.O.V.E.: Michael Jackson stories you should have heard before (tredition, August 8, 2013)